

I HAVE A MANSION IN THE POST-APOCALYPTIC WORLD

BOOK 03

Morning Star LL

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

I Have a Mansion in the Post-apocalyptic World

(我在末世有套房)

by

Morning Star LL

(晨星LL)

Synopsis

Ruins stretched across the landscape in the apocalypse after the nuclear war.

If you accidentally survived on the wasteland, then you must be ready to face the endless hunger, ceaseless dangers, the mad zombies at night, and the peculiar mutant creatures that are the aftermaths of the constant radiation.

But for Jiang Chen, this place was heaven.

Mansions stood tall, luxurious cars parked on the street, high tech products and gold abandoned everywhere.

What? You were the president of a game development company before the war? You were responsible for the development of the 3D virtual reality online multiplayer game? Well, that's great, why don't you come work for me. The salary is two pieces of bread a day.

iPhone? Ultra thin design? Don't you see that the phone I invented are thinner than condoms?

Aircraft carrier? Fighter jets? Oh, I have those things as well, but they are designed for space combat.

Watch the story of Jiang Chen, who possessed the ability to travel through space and time, as he witness the creation of an

empire stretched across space and time..

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Min @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: Requesting Help

The battle ended.

Based on estimations, there were 972 mutated human casualties, and 57 modified vehicles, 42 anti-air machineguns, 15 72mm cannons destroyed. Also, countless ammunition exploded.

On the Fishbone side, there were 19 casualties with five people dead. No armored units were damaged. Black Blood Mercenaries suffered 9 fatalities and 21 casualties.

All in all, this result could be considered historically significant.

Flames that burnt on the snow had been extinguished. The soldiers were busy moving between places as they dragged the bodies of the mutated humans outside of the base and burnt them with fuel. If they just let them sit, it could draw out mutants hibernating near by. Although they would not lose, it would be troublesome to deal with.

The 8 Tigers drove across Taifu river into the mutated human's base.

Within the center of the base, the leader of Black Blood Mercenaries and Jiang Chen stood shoulder-to-shoulder as they chatted and laughed at the scene.

"What the f*ck, that missile was wicked. The explosion left

nothing behind." Luo Yang had a cigarette in his mouth and was staring at the metal scraps on the ground, still feeling uneasy.

To be fair, the missile was not considered strong. It had no anti-radar layer, nor did it possess an energy shield to guard against anti-air laser weapons. It could only be considered a basic cruise missile where the commander sets the target for the missile, and then the control center calculates its trajectory.

The first step was simple as it only required Jiang Chen's command.

But the difficult part was the second step. Because of Jiang Chen's words, Jiang Lin had to spend an entire night in front of the computer.

"It's okay." The word sounded humble, but Jiang Chen's laughter was cocky.

[This is okay? Are you kidding me.]

Luo Yang glanced at Jiang Chen with a "bright" smile as he ridiculed in his mind.

"But then, there is no need to think about looting anymore." He cracked a smile. "Where did you get the cigarette?"

"Somewhere good," Jiang Chen shrugged as he gave an ambiguous answer. "Maybe you can buy this from the Sixth Street

very soon."

The modern world was indeed a good place. Whether it was food, cigarette, or beer, everything was cheap. Of course, only relative to his net worth.

"I wish I had Mr. Jiang's prosperity." Envy flashed across Luo Yang's eyes as he greeted Jiang Chen.

"Prospering together. Aren't we?" Jiang Chen smiled.

Luo Yang paused for a second before he reacted with a smile.

A fee of ten thousand crystals was added to upgrade his mercenaries' equipment to the next level. With the trade route to Liuding Town, the upgrades would begin this coming spring. Even if the spending power of Liuding Town was not as high as the Sixth Street, it still was the second biggest survivor's force in Wanghai City. There would at least be tens of thousands worth of profits. With 10%, his mercenary group being rewarded thousands of crystals with a single trip.

On this wasteland, no ordinary bandits dared to butt heads with the Black Blood Mercenaries.

The only problem was zombies and mutants. But as long as they avoided the city center, the route to the port was relatively safe.

It was a winning business.

Luo Yang was thinking how much money he could make, but Jiang Chen was thinking something else.

Purchasing the microchips from Liuding Town improved the combat ability of the kinetic skeletons produced at the Fishbone base. At the same time, Liuding Town's technology would also offer great help to Jiang Chen's plan in the modern world.

As long as he puts in an order, Liuding Town's chip factory would accept any kind of business, even the communication chips from one hundred years ago. Although it was a desolate technology for the apocalypse, it would still be ahead of the modern world's technology by ten years. This advancement was enough for Future Technology to conquer the phone market.

As they envisioned their bright future, they both fell into silence.

At this time, the communication chip beside Jiang Chen's ear vibrated.

It was Zhao Chenwu.

"I'm going to take a call," Jiang Chen told Luo Yang as he walked to the side.

He picked up the call.

"What's going on?' Jiang Chen said with a lighthearted tone.

"Did you solve your troubles?" Zhao Chenwu's voice didn't sound as collected as before.

"Yes, is there something wrong?"

"I have a few small problems, can you help me?" Slightly embarrassed, Zhao Chenwu still pleaded.

His embarrassment was due to refusing Jiang Chen's help just moments ago.

A mischevious expression appeared on Jiang Chen's face, but for the partner that had offered him quite some support, Jiang Chen didn't seem to be troubled.

"Is it about the God's Cane in the city center? Speaking of this, I have received information that the thing didn't land on the earth's surface."

"It is confirmed that it is fake." Zhao Chenwu's voice sounded bitter.

"Then?"

"Somone betrayed the Group of Ten council."

Jiang Chen hung up the phone as his expression was rather stern.

Zhao Chenwu briefly explained the situation.

First, a declaration of war was sent to the Sixth Street two years ago, sending the peaceful council into unrest.

The declaration of war has been intercepted by the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, the "treasure" mentioned in the visual had drawn the interest of Cao Jinsong. He had a feeling that the "treasure" mentioned by the Northern Alliance Area could be a superweapon! Based on the simulation of a super computer, he obtained the conclusion that God's Cane landed in the city center of Wanghai.

Because of his greed, he hid the declaration of war and obviously hid his discovery of the sky-based weapon.

He secretly sent exploration forces to the city center in an attempt to find the wreckage of the weapon with a plan to transport it to the secret base outside the city. If he could repair it, not only the Sixth Street, but the entire Pan-pacific area would be under his control.

But in the end, he didn't find the wreckage. Instead, he wasted a decent size of his force.

Just as he was debating if he should announce this declaration of war to allow the Sixth Street to prepare, the spy he planted in the

Northern Alliance area had sent back good news.

Civil war!

The military government that controlled the majority of the survival camps had engaged in a gruesome war with another large force, the Dusk. Although the military government won in the end, they suffered significant losses which postponed their plan to advance to the east,

Although the invader didn't come in the end, their stance of plotting against Wanghai City had alerted him.

Also, the word civil war had given him a new idea.

If the military government could use civil war to obtain absolute control in the Northern Alliance Area, why couldn't his Dark Red Chamber of Commerce do the same?

Once the seed called ambition has been planted, it would spiral out of control.

Chapter 202: The Choice

Dictatorship!

What an attractive thought.

Although they had sworn to coexist in front of the round table, the endless arguments through the years had made him grow wry.

A proposal for the abolition of the ghetto would cause the ten council members to argue for half a month.

It was just over a few thousand "bugs" and they had to argue for half a month.

He has had enough.

Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, the strongest force, logically should control the piece of land. But under the hindrances of other nine council members, he could not have free reign. For example, the Disaster-32 cruise missile. One single missile would turn the military base into dust. For example, the Double-headed Bull Chamber of Commerce's Landbird armor, or...

The people that became part of the Group of Ten council were no simple characters. Even if he possessed five Wanderer tank known as the land cruiser, it would still be difficult to do what he wanted.

Therefore, he had a brilliant plan.

When he threw out the bait that lured him to put his nose into the city center onto the conference table.

Indubitably, he pleasedly saw that everyone's eyes turned red.

Some due to the anger they had towards the Northern Alliance Area. Some and the majority were due to the greed for the treasure.

Sky-based weapon. The wreckage of God's Cane.

As he had expected, the council passed the proposal to build a collective defense, face the external enemy together, and then explore the city center. However, every council member had their discreet moves as they didn't put much effort into building the defense. Instead, they leveraged the council to attack their political enemy. Criticizing other people for their lack of effort in the construction of the defense, while at the same time secretly sending out a large number of forces to explore the city center.

As usual, everyone had their own plans, but all were within rationality.

Then immediately, a piece of news shattered their rationality.

A mission worth one million crystals.

Because of this mission, the facade on everyone's face was ripped off.

It was not only himself that did something behind everyone's back; everyone was plotting for that sky-based weapon.

Regardless of their purpose, they could not let their competitor acquire the weapon.

The nine council members all put their hands on the betting table.

At the same time, the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce unleashed their machete to chop their hands.

At the external area of city center, Dark Red Chamber of Commerce first tried the Zhao Corporation which ignored the flames of civil war.

To protect 80% of the force he sent into the city center, Zhao Chenwu permitted the usage of the Disaster-32 cruise missile in agony.

Because of this, Cao Jinsong achieved his plan and also ignited the nuclear bomb which wiped out 80% of Zhao Chenwu's force. The same force he tried to save with his life.

A Wanderer tank in exchange for a Diaster 32. The remainder four Wanderer tanks along with some infantries reaped the forces of the remaining council members.

At the same time, the flames of war had erupted inside the Sixth Street.

As everyone knew, the force inside the inner circle was created by the private force of the Group of Ten council members in the form of an agreement to provide defense service. Now that the nine council members had sent out the majority of the forces to the city center, the inner circle was extremely lacking.

Of course, not including the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce.

The steel gate had fallen which segregated the inner and outer circle.

The soldiers of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce engaged in heavy fire with the civil force along with other council member's private forces.

With the manor of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce's boss being burnt down as the fuse, the flames of the civil war had officially been ignited.

There were three options in front of Jiang Chen.

First. The more conservative approach. Stop now and reinforce

along the river.

Second. Capitalize on the victory by heading for the Seventh Area.

Third. Accept Zhao Chenwu's request for help and send out forces to help the Sixth Street.

To be honest, the second and third options were both tempting.

The mutated humans suffer a significant loss if they march west. Along with the Defiancers, it was a great opportunity to completely eliminate the mutated human beings in the Seventh area.

But if they respond to Zhao Chenwu's request for help and send out forces to the Sixth Street, it would also bring a considerable amount of gains.

Zhao Chenwu's offer was attractive enough. If he helped the Sixth Street council, the weapon export restriction would no longer apply to him. Therefore, he could purchase power armors from the Sixth Street to equip his force.

A tent was set up in the middle of the base.

Within the base, Jiang Chen gathered Sun Jiao, Chu Nan, and Chen Weiguo for a quick meeting.

"There are a lot of choices in front of us. I want to listen to your opinions," Jiang Chen said straightforwardly.

"If we could gain contact with the Defiancer Alliance in Jia City. Capitalizing on our victory is not a bad choice. If we can't, even without an armored vehicle, there are still around two thousand mutated humans stationed in the Seventh area. The safer choice would be to reinforce along the river," Chen Weiguo gave an unbiased response.

Jiang Chen nodded, he didn't make a comment but instead looked at Sun Jiao.

"What do you think?"

"I support your decision," Sun Jiao smiled and said.

"But I still want to listen to your opinion."

"I personally don't agree with providing assistance."

"Oh? Why?"

"It has happened twice. When we encountered problems, he never sent help to us. Now that he has a problem, maybe we could sell him a few barrels of explosives," Sun Jiao said ruthlessly.

Hearing that, Jiang Chen smiled and didn't comment.

It was indeed Sun Jiao. Such a simple and direct response was indeed her style.

The few barrels of explosives would pay back the high-energy vacuum bomb Zhao Chenwu sold him last time. As for help, he did offer them some, and he did take some risks to do so.

Although it would be thrilling to take an eye for an eye, it was infeasible for the base.

As the leader of force, he should consider collective interest, not childish actions.

"What do you think?" Jiang Chen looked at Chu Nan.

"I agree with sending out a force." Chu Nan smiled.

"Because of power armors?"

To Jiang Chen's surprise, Chu Nan shook his head.

"There is absolutely no need for that."

Chu Nan paused as he looked at Jiang Chen, then continued.

"Backstabbing each other, this is the end of the Group of Ten

Council. It is not a bad idea for a new wise leader to rule the place."

Everyone in the tent held their breath.

Jiang Chen stared at Chu Nan dumbfoundedly, his expression was odd.

Just as he was about to say something, Cheng Weiguo already said what he wanted to say.

"Do you know how many people are in the Sixth Street's civil force? A total of 560 people!"

"How many would be left after this civil war? Especially when no one knows the ability of those soldiers." Chu Nan laughed nonchalantly.

"Not only the force, but influence is also a factor. With the combination of the two, they could deter the small military forces around the Sixth Street, but if it was us..."

"Now that everyone's strength has been spent on the city center. Mercenaries, hunting team for that one million crystals mission, the Council of Ten for that sky-based weapon wreckage, the Sixth Street is at its weakest! There is only one opportunity. We could use the name of providing assistance to enter the inner circle and start a coup. As long as we control the inner circle, the Sixth Street would be under our control." Just he said these words, Chu Nan's eyes were locked onto Jiang Chen's.

"This is a gamble. Can I hear the reason for this proposal?" Jiang Chen pondered for a moment before he spoke out.

"Because I trust you. Only you can bring real order to this wasteland."

Chapter 203: War Never Changes

"F*ck, their firepower is too suppressive!" With his back against the barrier, a civil soldier in a bulletproof vest attempted to shoot out of cover but was quickly subdued back.

"We require cover fire! I repeat we need cover fire!"

He clenched onto the rifle as the soldier hiding behind the concrete wall roared into the communication device with no reply.

A soldier fearlessly ducked out of the cover and aimed at the anti-armor RPG. As the armored vehicle unleashed its reign of power, he pressed the trigger.

With a trail of red flames, the RPG flew like an iron fist. But when it was ten meters away from the armored vehicle, it was blown away by the activated nitrogen shield, and it smashed into the shop nearby.

The subsequent fires shredded the soldier docked out into pieces.

The battle erupted out of nowhere.

The enemy was not only the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, but it was also some of the civil soldiers. They were bought out by the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce. The moment the armored vehicle drove into the inner circle, they responded to the coup.

It was an unfair battle.

Although both sides didn’t use heavy firearms, the private force of the council members was much more powerful than the civil soldiers'. Not only in training but also in equipment. Although the civil soldiers on the side of the council were 400, they were completely subdued by the force of 150 people from the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce.

Especially since 100 something civil soldiers suddenly turned against them and they only had five armored vehicles equipped with heavy machine guns.

On the side of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, even the ordinary light infantry wore carbon nano armor along with the digitalized helmet that provided shooting assistance. Not to mention the special forces wore kinetic skeletons, as well as power armors.

Because of everyone’s selfishness, although they possessed the most advanced fire production line on the wasteland, the council never proposed to upgrade the weapons of the civil force. Because only when the civil force lacked behind in technology, could their own private force be "hired." Their commission was not a small amount. It was paid through taxes and was essentially a gold mine.

But now, they tasted their own medicine.

The only soldiers that could match evenly in terms of equipment were the private soldiers of the other nine council members. But

because of the city center exploration project, most of their power was put into the city center. There, they were scouring the reapings by the armored force of Dark Red Chamber of Commerce; it was still a question how much would remain.

Zhao Chenwu stood on the top floor of the Zhao Corporation building as he speechlessly watched the gun fires below him in the Inner Circle.

The ring of fire began to contract from the edge of the wall inwards; he knew exactly what that meant.

The Dark Red Chamber of Commerce had taken the upper hand. The 400 civil soldiers along with the 50 private soldiers suffered constant losses.

He never imagined that five armored vehicles would push him to the edge.

But that was the reality when both sides didn't possess heavy firearms. Even armored vehicles ruled.

The door was pushed open, Su Lei walked in.

The gorgeous female secretary with a cold expression had already changed into a pitch black combat suit. She carried the Reaper automatic rifle produced by the Zhao Corporation military factory. Normally, her identity was Zhao Chenwu's secretary, mistress as well as the driver. However, at critical times, she would act as the

role of his bodyguard.

"Boss, Dark Red Chamber of Commerce is approaching our building. Please retreat with me to a safe location," Su Lei said in an undertone.

"Retreat? Where can we retreat to? The door has been shut tight." Zhao Chenwu smiled faintly.

He had lost communication with Chen Wei. He must have died already.

At this height, he obviously could not see that mushroom cloud.

Nuclear bombs.

He almost forgot about it.

Speaking of that, it should be the cheapest thing here.

"The underground shelter below Paradise Island hotel," Su Lei said.

Hearing that, Zhao Chenwu shook his head.

"I never planned to use that thing. There is no shelter where you can hide forever. If that old thing won, even if I hide underground

for ten years, the result would be the same."

He has spent too much energy here. Even if it meant death, he didn’t want to let everything go.

"...I will fight for you till the last moment." Su Lei gave up on convincing her boss. She let out a sigh, and a rare smile appeared on her cold face.

Zhao Chenwu was at a loss as he feebly smiled. Saying nothing more, he kept looking downstairs.

The rifle loaded, Su Lei walked downstairs.

"Still not here?" He muttered to himself as he looked at the electronic clock on the table.

Jiang Chen agreed to send help.

It was the last straw.

People of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce was approaching. He could even see through the dark bulletproof glass of the gunshots fired by the armored vehicles. The power armor used their high mobility to surround the building behind cover. The rotating machine gun on the right merciless shredded the soldiers on the ground.

The floor shook violently all the sudden; the bulletproof glass jarred loudly. He already had guessed what has happened, but he still looked at the touchscreen on the table.

He pressed the start button as the image from the hall surfaced.

Outside of the door was soldiers of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce. Wearing kinetic skeleton, the steel made gate had already been blown open by aluminum heat agent. These soldiers carrying rifles quickly rushed into the building and exchanged fire with the building's security team.

There was not much suspense in the battle. Although the security team of the Zhao Corporation received military training, compared to those professional soldiers, they obviously lacked in strength. Especially since they only wore bulletproof vests, like the civil soldiers. It was a frail attempt in the face of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce soldiers' attack.

The first floor was captured quickly.

Zhao Chenwu saw with his own eyes that a soldier with kinetic skeleton pulled out a pistol and executed a struggling security wounded on the ground. Then, he turned the gun to the camera and pulled the trigger with a grimace.

The visual was lost.

The elevator was cut. The Dark Red Chamber of Commerce

fought fiercely with the Zhao Corporation's security within the safety tunnel. Boxes and safes were all thrown into the stairs as a blockade, but it was futile to the outcome of the battle.

Su Lei was a great soldier. She gathered the remaining 20 security guards together as they exchanged fire on the 12th-floor hallway. She used the wall to take cover as she constantly ducked out to fire back.

But from the blood on her shoulder, she probably wouldn't be able to last much longer.

The security guards used anti-blast shields as cover while firing back with a rifle.

The security robot dashed out with a machine gun from the corner; the shots caused casualties to the soldiers that entered the building.

But that was all.

An EMP grenade quickly disabled its weapon system. The particle gun without suspense cut through its metal armor, and it was turned into a pile of metal scraps.

This place was not the military factory, only the office building of Zhao Corporation.

With the balance of power, no one expected a war to break out

here.

Su Lei firmly held the gun as she maintained her shooting position while moving back. There were only a few security guards left.

[Looks like they can’t hold out much longer.]

Zhao Chenwu let out a sigh as he pulled open a cupboard.

There was a revolver inside.

"Is this it?" He mumbled to himself as he slowly loaded the revolver.

It has been a long time since he fought like a soldier on the front line. The last time seemed to the moment he became part of the Council of Ten.

But now, there was not much choice.

The sound of explosion continuously transmitted from below him, but Zhao Chenwu never felt calmer.

[Even if backup arrived, it is probably too late.]

At this time, a blinding white light suddenly lit up the street in

front of the building.

The deafening explosion almost made him forget how to think. The bulletproof glass was covered in dense cracks.

The rising mushroom.

"...F*ck." His mouth twitched, and his eyes shook from the scene. It was the only word that came out of his mouth.

Nuclear bomb!

Someone exploded a nuclear bomb in the inner circle.

It definitely could not be the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce. They already had the upper hand. It must not be the civil force either; they wouldn't have such a thing.

It could only be a council member.

They would rather die together than give up the power in their hands.

Zhao Chenwu blankly stared at the mushroom cloud in front of him, but the action in his hands already ceased.

...

The shockwave flipped the armored vehicles, engulfed the fleeting power armors, and swept through all the soldiers unable to escape. The buildings worth tens of thousands instantly collapsed. The citizens without a fighting chance cried at the ruins. The merchants silently watch their shops turn into dust, forgetting even to run...

The soldiers attacking his building; he didn't want to see any more.

It was a bloodbath.

Looking at the council building in the distance, the flag representing alliance and democracy lowered. A mocking smile appeared at the tip of his lips.

The council building, the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce had risen on the roof.

The roundtable was smashed in half. Cao Jinsong stood in front of the window alone as he stared at the mushroom cloud outside, dumbfounded.

Like a bucket of cold water was poured on his head, the excitement of climbing to the top of power was instantly cooled off.

He had considered that other council members possessing some

unbelievable trap cards, the coup was a gamble, to begin with.

But he never considered that someone could explode a nuclear bomb here.

"Already gone insane?" His voice sounded bitter.

It made sense. On the wasteland without order, thinking about limits was foolish, to begin with.

Exploding a nuclear bomb in one’s own city; even in the country before the war had the same thing occur.

He seemed to have seen these scene before.

But because it was too distant of a time, that part of his memory was already covered by a thin layer of white mist...

War never changes.

Chapter 204: The Chaotic War

Nuclear weapons were always the cheapest thing on the wasteland.

Like the landmines that covered entire fields after the Second World War

Without the need for sophisticated missiles, the tactical nukes that could be fired with artillery was an economical and efficient killing tool.

Although the alliance government after the war had collected the nuclear weapon left on the battlefield, there must be some left out there.

Zhao Chenwu didn’t want to think about who exploded the nuclear bomb.

There was no purpose in who did it.

As he watched from afar, he saw black smoke rise from his competitor Feng De’s building. It then immediately collapsed.

That fat *ss didn't compromise till the last moment as he chose to self-destruct the building and suicide along with the soldiers inside.

Just like that nuclear bomb.

The other council members suffered the same fate. Cao Jinsong seemed to have expected that the entire political power was concentrated in the hands of the few council members. After he broke through the defense line of the civil force, its soldiers immediately attacked the headquarters of the council members.

The nuclear bomb didn’t turn the tide of the battle; it was only a death trigger.

As if they had suspected this would occur, the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce forces were dispersed, the nuclear bomb didn’t even hit one-fourth of their forces.

[Already lost?]

But just then, his phone suddenly rang.

"Hello?"

"Which floor are you on?"

Like a heaven’s melody, the voice he had been hoping to hear for so long rang into his ear.

"21st floor," Feeling ecstatic, Zhao Chenwu said quickly.

"Ahem, I am not asking what floor you are on, I am asking about the soldiers in your building."

Zhao Chenwu paused for a second as he glanced at the visuals on the touchscreen.

Su Lei has already retreated to the 16th floor, the 15th floor was completely occupied by the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce.

"15th."

"Got it."

Just as the voice fade, explosion transmitted below him.

The violent shaking almost sent him to the ground. He blankly stared out the window at the black dot in the sky.

...

The building in the distance had a daunting hole created on the structure as it exposed the steel frames.

"Direct hit, beautiful shot."

Looking at the visual on his table, Jiang Chen gave a thumbs up at the gunner at the hatch door.

The gunner was excited to hear Jiang Chen’s praise as he worked extra hard to load the cartridge before he waited for further instructions.

He has been watching the battle for a while. Jiang Chen saw everything, including that nuclear.

He just didn’t expect someone to explode a nuclear weapon in the inner circle.

To prevent this place from turning into shambles, he felt he must join the fray.

"Retreating? No..." Jiang Chen looked at the fleeing dots on the screen, he muttered and pressed his finger on the screen.

He had been using to the buzz of the electricity as well as the noise of breaking the sound barrier as snow was blown over ten meters high on the street within the screen.

The retreating armored vehicle was smashed into pieces by the 10 kg level bomb without suspense.

It was as easy as playing a computer game.

The green dots on the ground began to surround the inner circle, it was Fishbone’s soldiers.

Jiang Chen left the Black Blood Mercenaries along the Taifu river. He didn’t tell Luo Yang about the battle at the Sixth Street. He only said to him as long as he was stationed here for three days, he would receive 100 more crystals.

No one would reject this kind of deal. Everyone knew that mutated humans could no longer invade the east.

To avoid unexpected things from occurring, the mercenary force ranked one at the Sixth Street was left somewhere further away.

Once the primary force approached the Sixth Street, Sun Jiao immediately declared their stance, with the identity of the alliance of Zhao Corporation to provide backup. The thirty-something civil soldiers cluelessly allowed them to pass without hesitation and then opened the airspace to Chu Nan’s helicopter.

They were loyal to the council, although the organization was in complete disarray since the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce chose to fire at the council. The Dark Red Chamber of Commerce was their enemy.

"Hello? Buddy, you don’t mind if I make a hole in the inner circle wall right?" Jiang Chen opened the communication channel with a grin.

"...I don’t mind."

The Inner Circle wall was firm. It took four 10 kg level bombs to blow a corner apart.

Seeing the wall had collapsed, Sun Jiao immediately led the 200 soldiers to approach that breaking point. The 6 power armors were responsible as the primary attack force, along with the 8 modified pickup trucks with machine guns attached and thirty-something soldiers with kinetic skeletons. Under air support, the scale of the war was leaning towards Jiang Chen.

"Zhao Gang, lead your people to take out their anti-air machine gun, as well as the anti-air missile." Jiang Chen continued to order.

"Yes."

Another 50 something people entered into the Sixth Street.

The wall had been broken. The remaining civil soldiers all entered the Inner Circle for assistance, and the Outer Circle was left completely defenseless. The 50 people quickly took control of the anti-air control center and captured the workers on duty as well as confiscated all communication equipment.

With this, there was nothing that could threaten this Type-51 helicopter.

With the artillery support of this air gunship, the Sun Jiao led ground forces forced their way into the center of the Inner Circle. The people of Dark Red Chamber of Commerce were completely

dumbfounded by the force that suddenly joined the fray. Any points of power gathered together would be shredded into pieces by the 10 kg level shell.

"The major street has been captured." Sun Jiao voice was transmitted to him.

"Continue to push towards the council building," Jiang Chen ordered firmly.

"Understood!"

The targets of attack of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce were the headquarters of all the council members. From the looks of it, at least four council members were killed already.

Only five council members desperately tried to hold their ground.

"How long until your people get here? My side can’t hold any longer. Zhao Chenwu’s voice rang by his ear, along with the noise of a few gunshots mixed in between.

"Very soon... Also, I recommend you open the window, and stay obediently inside your office."

After he finished speaking, Jiang Chen closed the communication channel. At the same time, he ordered Chu Nan to fly the helicopter over and lower its elevation.

"It’s time for a surgery."

"Personally, I recommend for Zhao Chenwu to die. By diminishing the old force, our coup is more likely to succeed." While operating the helicopter, Chu Nan said some formidable points.

"...Perhaps. But there might be other uses for him later." Jiang Chen signaled Zhou Xiaoxia, who sat quietly across from him.

She didn’t say anything as she stood up and walked to the hatch door.

Chu Nan shrugged as he didn’t continue to try and convince his boss. He simply pressed a button below the control rod.

Auto suspension once again opened. The electric pulse cannon was dragged into the cabin.

Zhou Xiaoxia skillfully took off the sniper rifle on her back and aimed at the building.

The zone scanned by the crosshair had only bodies remain.

Search, fire, bolt, next.

A set of swift actions.

Zhao Chenwu leaning behind his office table hugged his wounded secretary and gestured thank you to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen smiled and didn’t say anything. He only held onto the tablet and looked towards the ground.

It was already over.

But this Inner Circle no longer had its formal glory. It has been changed into an entirely different scene.

Chapter 205: Becoming the Owner

Before dusk had arrived, the war was over.

The soldiers that entered the council building found Cao Jinsong's body in the chamber.

His temple was bleeding, and he held a pistol in his hand. When defeat was inevitable, this old man chose to suicide.

Seeing that their boss died, the soldiers all dropped their weapons in hand and surrendered.

The Dark Red Chamber of Commerce's flag was dragged down by the soldiers who climbed onto the top of the building and was thrown into a pile of flame.

"Died? He got off easy." Zhao Chenwu cursed while he limped beside Jiang Chen. His leg got shot. Although the wound has already been treated, he was still constricted by it.

At that time, the two of them walked side by side in the hallway of the council building.

There were only five people left out of the ten. A meeting was called.

There was so much needed to be discussed.

"Thank you so much. This way, without your people, Cao Jinsong, would have already succeeded. I'll do my best to say good things about you on the council." Zhao Chenwu smiled.

"Don't worry about it. As to good things... I think I can gain it by myself like before?"

Zhao Chenwu's feet stopped. His smile froze on his face.

Jiang Chen laughed, pushed open the door to the chamber, and walked inside.

...

Because that roundtable had been smashed, Jiang Chen ordered the soldiers to drag a long table from elsewhere.

The five council members sat on either side. However, Jiang Chen shamelessly sat at the head of the table.

Seeing Jiang Chen's move, Zhao Chenwu seemed to know what he wanted to do. He let out a sigh and didn't say anything.

But the other four council members didn't take it so well. If it were not for the two soldiers holding rifles and wearing kinetic skeletons, they probably would have jumped up and expressed their dissatisfaction.

"For the tragedy that occur here, I express my condolences."

Hearing Jiang Chen's words, the council members all cursed in their minds.

There was not a trace of condolence on his face.

"But life must continue. Since everyone here is really busy, let's get things started."

Jiang Chen shrugged and said with a smile.

"I agree. The cleaning of the radiation materials in the inner circle, as well as rebuilding, must commence soon." A tall council member nodded. His name was Kong Zhe, the owner of Double-headed Bull Chamber of Commerce. Although he just received communication from the front line that his trap card - the Landbird Armor was destroyed by the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce Wanderer tank, still 30 something soldiers managed to survive as they began to retreat towards the Sixth Street.

"I consent."

"I agree."

Zhao Chenwu didn't say anything, but from his expression, he looked desolate.

In this civil war, he suffered the most loss among all council members. Two spider tanks, 20 power armors, Disaster-32 cruise missile, as well as great soldiers. Now the only remaining force for the Zhao Corporation was the five power armors and 5-soldiers sent to the outskirts of the city to build a defense line.

"First, we should hear some good news." Jiang Chen took out a graphene card from his pocket and put it on the table. "This is what we found on that old fox's body, the information recorded, the declaration of war was from three years ago. Also, because of their internal conflict, their plan to invade the east fell through."

All the council members let out a sigh of relief.

After going through the tragic civil war, if the Northern Alliance area attacked, without two to three years to rebuild, they had no odds of winning.

"This is great news. In this case, the defense can be put aside for now." A council member with a beer belly wiped the sweat from his forehead. His name was Fan Chen. He operated the largest construction company at Sixth Street, the metal shell company's owner.

Because of his weak force to begin with, in the civil war, his force suffered the smallest lost, but he had the most direct economic loss.

The west side of the Inner Circle was turned into shambles by the

nuclear bomb. As the biggest real estate owner of the Sixth Street, his direct loss was as high as two million crystals.

But he certainly didn't look too remorseful, because being able to survive was always the best case scenario.

"That's right. Moving the soldiers back from the frontline would also help to stabilize the situation of the Sixth Street. As to what is happening in the Inner Circle, the mercenaries and bandits who depend on the Sixth Street are starting to become unsettled. We must restore the authority of the Council of Ten and control the situation," Kong Zhe said sternly.

"Don't worry about that, my people have already controlled the situation in the Outer Circle. After sending a 10kg level bomb to a small mercenary force attempting to take advantage of the situation, everyone seemed to have calmed down." Jiang Chen shrugged.

The chamber was suddenly silenced. It was so quiet that if a needle dropped onto the ground, it would be clearly heard.

"Speaking of this, could your helicopter be flown away now..." After moments of silence, Kong Zhe difficulty squeezed those words out.

"To stabilize the situation, my helicopter will conduct routine air patrol. Trust me, this is for your own benefit." Jiang Chen smiled.

"Our soldiers will be back. As long as we restart the council, the situation will quickly be stabilized... Oh, let's talk about your compensation. The Sixth Street treasury will pay fifty thousand crystals as compensation for your assistance." Fan Chen's expression looked rather awkward, but he still squeezed a smile and proposed in a small voice.

"Fifty thousand? Are you pitying a hobo?" Jiang Chen couldn't help but laugh.

"Then what does Mr. Jiang think?" Kong Zhe's expression turned cold.

"Nothing, I just want to take away what I deserve." Jiang Chen with a casual expression leaned against the chair, with fingers crossed, "For example, this council building. Since I got it back from Cao Jinsong, shouldn't it belong to me?"

"This is crazy. You can't do that!" A council member stood up and furiously stared at Jiang Chen.

"No one will listen to your order."

"With just two hundred something people, don't you think your appetite is too big?"

Jiang Chen patiently waited for these furious council members to express their frustration, then he coughed lightly.

When everyone looked in his direction, Jiang Chen slowly spoke out.

"But you don't have a choice, isn't that right?"

Everyone was suddenly speechless.

"My people are outside, with two at the door now." Jiang Chen's chin pointed towards the two soldiers at the door. The two soldiers with rifles immediately saluted him and continued to stand on guard.

"But you don't even know how many of your soldiers are alive."

"The anti-air control center of the Sixth Street has been occupied by us. My helicopter can easily make any disagreeing voice shut up."

"I am not negotiating with you; I am only declaring the facts."

"From now on, this is my territory."

"I will use my way to bring stability here."

Chapter 206: Military Government Regime

The meeting quickly concluded.

No, it was not a meeting. For Jiang Chen didn't discuss anything with them, but rather he announced the plans from today onwards.

Starting today, the Sixth Street will be under a curfew with a duration of at least ten days until the situation was stabilized.

The Council of Ten will be expanded to twenty people, separated into upper house and lower house, which will be represented by influential merchants and industry leaders. The upper house would be represented by merchants with registered assets in the top ten, the lower house would be voted in.

Because the civil group lost more than 80% of its force, partially due to internal corruption, they would dissipate immediately after the weapons are collected. The defense of the Sixth Street would be completely taken over by the Fishbone base.

To avoid similar civil wars from occurring again, Jiang Chen announced that a military government would be instated in the Sixth Street and control the law enforcement military authority. It would also have the right to veto any proposal from the council. The council's rights were strictly limited to law proposal and administration.

As to the head of the military government - the role of the

General had naturally fallen on Jiang Chen's shoulders.

The decision to implement monarchy Constitution was also Chu Nan's proposal.

Jiang Chen was surprised to discover that that guy knew quite a lot about politics.

"Although the power of the Group of Ten Council has been cut by more than half in the city center due to the civil war, they should still not be underestimated. Whether it be their reputation in the Sixth Street or the soldiers on the front line. If we could not convince all of them, then we will have to dilute the power in their hands so the small forces in the Outer Circle will stand by our side. We only need to control the military. There is not much difference between direct and indirect control."

The establishment of the lower house was great news for the small merchants, mercenaries, and hunting groups in the outer circle. Although there was a lot of them, because of the difference among them, they were always pushed outside of the center of power.

Jiang Chen's decision obviously won the support of this minority. Although they wouldn't do anything, it without a doubt stabilized the situation. Along with the deterrence of force, the bigger mercenary forces chose to stay put.

As to the five council members, including Zhao Chenwu, they were forced to accept the "glory chip" injection and became

Fishbone's knight.

As to their "cooperation", Jiang Chen highly noted the actions to be taken and promised that he would not misappropriate their assets at the Sixth Street. Also, Jiang Chen divided half of the property of the council members that suffered an unfortunate death as compensation to the remaining members. To some degree, it comforted their displeased mood.

To these ruthless leaders, he had to use this method to control them.

...

On the second floor of the council building, an office had been cleared out and transformed into the office of the military government general.

Sitting in front of the table, Sun Jiao held a tablet as she reported their progress in the last few days to Jiang Chen.

"52 Dark Red Chamber of Commerce soldiers were captured and all injected with slavery chips. They were reincorporated into the force stationed at the Shenxiang town colony. The rebels in the city center saw the coup has failed, and one Wanderer tank surrendered to us, while the other three retreated to the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce base outside of the city.

The surrender of the Wanderer tank was a joyful surprise to

Jiang Chen!

The use of Meissner effect of electromagnetic reaction armor would almost make the vast majority of metal shell kinetic energy weapons fail. Particle Shields also have a degree of resistance to energy weapons. As the main weapon of the type fifty-two particles, it can turn the vast majority of armored units into scrap.

With the addition of the Wanderer tank, the armor force of the Fishbone base had improved by a level.

"Is there any reaction from the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce military base outside of the city?"

"Not yet. They seemed to have some internal turmoil. Followed by Cao Jinsong's death, the slavery chip injected into his nephew Cao Wei's body had automatically failed. On the distribution of power, Cao Wei and Cao Jinsong's son had a disagreement."

"Internal disagreement again..." Jiang Chen muttered to himself.

"Human minds are not something that could be controlled by the chip."

Human minds?

Jiang Chen shook his head as he decided not to think about it anymore. He signaled for Sun Jiao to continue.

"From the battlefield along with the warehouse of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, we looted ten power armors, 87 kinetic skeletons, and 210 carbon nano armors. Some of the equipment only require minor repairs before it can be used." A smile emerged on Sun Jiao's face

"There is still better news to come." A sense of proudness appeared at the tip of Sun Jiao's tongue, she continued, "Acquired assets total a value of 1.5 million crystals, as well as one military factory, two pharmaceutical factories, and an organic material power plant."

Jiang Chen gasped for breath before his face turned ecstatic.

Organic material power plant. One ton of zombie fat would provide one thousand to two thousand watts of electricity. Thirty percent of the Sixth Street's power was generated by this power plant, removing the cost, on average one hundred watts would bring a profit of two crystals. A day's profit was between seven hundred to one thousand crystals.

"How are you going to reward me?" Seeing the excitement on Jiang Chen's face, Sun Jiao flirtatiously blew him a kiss and said coyly.

"Would a kiss be enough?" Jiang Chen smirked.

Sun Jiao gave him a dirty looked as she pouted her mouth, put away the tablet, and complained while briefly stretching.

"Done reporting. So tiring these few days, when are we going to go home?"

"In a few more days. If you are tired, I can give you a massage." Jiang Chen peeked at the softness that was about to pop out of her clothes as he joked.

Sun Jiao's face was covered by a thin layer of red, but she had a smirk on her face.

She walked in front of the table, and in a seductive position, she sat down on it. Then, with one hand leaning against the table, the other hand's finger gently lifted Jiang Chen's chin, she put her face near his.

"I want it now," the girl said flirtatiously.

"Now? Uh, there is no place here."

"There is a table right here. I can lie on top." With a seductive tone, the delicate finger slowly moved onto the table as there was only tenderness in her eyes.

[This devil...]

[In the office?]

Jiang Chen gulped. Just as he was about to succumb to the wild idea and reach his hand uncontrollably for that slightly opened collar-

Knock knock.

The sudden knock came from the door.

Like a cat, Sun Jiao swiftly got off the table and stood still. Jiang Chen also put his hand on the table as if nothing had happened, but his eyebrows twitched.

"Ahem, come in," Jiang Chen said.

The door was pushed open. Cheng Weiguo's loyal face entered Jiang Chen's sight.

Seeing the stern expression on the boss, as well as the displeased look on the "female boss"'s face, he seemed to have realized something as an awkward expression appeared on his face.

"Uh, should I leave now."

Jiang Chen noticed his expression, and he too felt awkward, but he tried his best to remain composed.

"No need. Important matters first."

Hearing that, Cheng Weiguo's face also became serious, and he thought, [That's the boss, he puts the important issue first!]

So he quickly explained, "Liuding town has sent an ambassador who wants to meet you."

Liuding town?

Jiang Chen's eyebrows rose.

Chapter 207: Liuding's Ambassador

June 16, 2171, the South Sea War erupted. The battlefield was not only limited to the South Sea; it was not even limited to the sea itself.

The flames of war spread across the twelve jurisdictions under PAC's control. The Bohai aircraft carrier fleet had a showdown with the Obama aircraft carrier 30 kilometers west of Jizhou Island, with NATO barely snatching a victory.

The retreating Bohai smashed into Wanghai's port because of nuclear strikes and EMP. Due to it losing its combat power early, it became one of the vessels best preserved after the war.

A satirical ending.

Because of funding problems, the World Alliance Organization leading the order after the war didn't repair the Bohai. Instead, it permitted survivors from migrating. Then, they fired the space colonization ship from Kennedy Space Center, Plesetsk Space launch position, Jiuquan Launch Center. The World Alliance Organization was officially dissolved, the subsequent nuclear winter along with a series of critical events occurred. The people being deserted went through the initial suspension before finally choosing to unite together...

This is the history of Liuding town.

If the pieces of history were described in detail, it would be an

epic no less than one million words.

"To put it in simple terms, all kinds of interesting people gathered there. There were "locals" like those who had entered the boat when I was young, NATO soldiers that gave up their nationalities, the suckers that didn't go into fallout shelters, and "pre-war" people from the fallout shelter that opened early.

He cracked a smile as Chu Nan dragged the control rod and casually chatted with Jiang Chen who sat in the passenger seat.

"What's life there like?" Jiang Chen asked, but his gaze was focused on what was outside the window.

"So so. Because I was a pilot, my salary was reasonable. If I save the money for alcohol, I can eat a meal of sardines a week. That thing tasted pretty good with a low level of mutation. Also, on the deserted armory in the aircraft carrier, with only ten crystals, you can find a rather attractive girl to sleep with you."

Hearing that, Chu Nan smiled reminiscently.

The third day on routine patrol.

The nuclear crater, like a horrifying scar, pierced the land within the Inner Circle.

Teams of cleaning personnel in orange protective suits carried a wide box with a thin hose in their hands, walked among the

shambles while spraying radiation cleaner at things.

For local radiation, this radiation cleaner was quite effective. With only a spray, it would neutralize the radioactive element on the surface.

At the same time, it was complicated to manufacture with an expensive price tag. The World Alliance government did manufacture a batch, but for the radiation that covered the entire world, it was rather futile.

If it were not for the tightly packed Inner Circle where land was valuable, Jiang Chen would not have permitted the usage of the expensive radiation cleaner.

Since it was his territory now, he would have to allow the radiation to return to normal before the construction team could restart the rebuilding process.

"I am asking about industrial capability, as well as the military force, you know."

"The military is primarily comprised of an air force, with artillery assisting. As to industrial? Liuding doesn't have any industrial capabilities. It doesn't need any industrial capabilities." Chu Nan laughed.

He paused for a moment before he continued, "The Beer Cap company is Liuding town's factory. They possess tremendous

industrial capabilities and produce all kinds of bombs, shells, and aircraft missiles, as well as heavy machinery. There are some smaller survival camps spread out on the wasteland that transport goods to Liuding town.

"Is the only specialty from Liuding sardines?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"Of course not. A fair amount of mutant fish have rather "mild" changes; the crystal number is also stable. The income from fishing is not only the fish meat but also the sesame sized crystals on the fishbone. Also, there is the chip production industry, without the need for a significant amount of space, the raw materials were also easy to obtain by the side of the sea, but these are not the important points."

Chu Nan mysteriously smiled as he looked at Jiang Chen dubiously.

"The most luxurious casino and brothel on the wasteland are there. There are all kinds of tricks and games you can play, also very magical. A lot of merchants from Su city and Hang city visit because of the name as they hand over their hard earned crystals willingly while having the time of their life."

"Then it's a great place, have you tried it before?"

"No, I am only a cheap pilot," Chu Nan shrugged as he said helplessly.

"Other than this?"

"And artillery agreement."

"Artillery agreement?' Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

"That's right, that's also part of Liuding's business." The patrol was over. Chu Nan controlled the helicopter while pressing a few buttons as they started to make their return.

"Bohai's electromagnetic cannon has a range of 500 kilometers. Therefore it can fire from the outskirts of Long River to Luzhou. Of course, the further the distance, the higher the cost, and the lower the accuracy. But it can easily strike targets in Wanghai.

"Therefore?"

"One 100 kg level bomb costs 2000 crystals. It could be used on any small force, not within the artillery agreement. As to the artillery agreement, there is a fee of 10000 crystals per month."

"What, that is like asking for a protection fee," Jiang Chen cursed.

"It is a protection fee. So the reason they come to the Sixth Street is evident," Chu Nan said nonchalantly.

"Did the Sixth Street pay them before?"

"No, because Disaster-32, that belonged to Zhao Corporation, could send them into the deep sea without the ability to defend at all, and the five Wanderer tank of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce could also cut off their supplies... But now, these things seem to be gone. The only remaining Wanderer tank could be counted as a chip on the table, but it doesn't provide deterrence anymore."

The civil war had cost all the trap cards of the Group of Ten council. It also cost the firm stance of the Sixth Street.

The trap cards were not only there to create a balance of power, but it also deterred the external enemies.

"Do you think I should agree to the artillery agreement?" Jiang Chen nonchalantly laughed.

To be honest, if it was not for the fact that the Fishbone hasn't trained an experienced pilot, Jiang Chen really wanted to move Chu Nan into a managing role. A helicopter pilot was too limiting for his ability. Considering their take over of the Sixth Street alone, regardless of the decision of stabilizing the situation, Chu Nan offered him a lot of help.

"Of course not, although ten thousand crystals were nothing to the Sixth Street, that doesn't mean we need to lower our heads to them."

"Oh? We have other trap cards?"

"Of course." Chu Nan smiled, "Did the boss forget, what did we use to destroy the mutated humans?"

"That big firework?" Jiang Chen burst out laughing, "that thing might not be enough for aircraft carriers."

The technical content of the "ballistic missile" was too low. If it were not for the mutated humans being too careless with the construction of their base, a missile would not take out over half of their force.

Anti-missile technology before the war was extremely advanced. Basic ones included radar lock on and laser anti-missile. The reason Disaster-32 was strong because it could render the most anti-missile system useless.

If that missile were used to smash Liuding town, before it could land, it would be shot down by the anti-air laser cannon.

"Of course it was for hitting the Liuding town aircraft, we only need to aim at Liuding town's alliance." Chu Nan shook his head, "For example the Beer Cap company, they could produce 100 kg level bombs, but it doesn't mean they can equally produce the matching electromagnetic cannon. Under the protection of Liuding town, they never developed a strong military force."

"Without their alliances, Liuding town is only a dead boat."

Hearing that, Jiang Chen laughed out loud as he patted Chu Nan's shoulder with force.

"Not bad. Also, something else, do you have an interest being the governor of the Sixth Street? I am starting to realize that some of your other abilities are much better than controlling a helicopter."

"Are you hiddenly telling me that I suck at piloting?" Chu Nan made a funny expression as he joked.

"Of course not, I am serious."

"Mhmm, you are the boss, I will listen to your order. But to be honest, rather than becoming the governor of the Sixth Street, I want to become Liuding's governor more."

He wasn't joking.

Chapter 208: A Friendly Signal

As to the Chu Nan's last sentence, Jiang Chen gave it a thought but didn't reply.

The Sixth Street located in Jiading officially became part of his territory. Therefore, all the entrances from the northwest direction were under his control. Including the Fishbone base in Qingpu, and Shenxiang town colony in front of the Zhufeng highway. The three areas formed a triangle as the force almost included all the major roads to enter Wanghai city from the west.

It was fair to say, half of Wanghai city was already in his hands.

But, a highly volatile factor still posed a threat to the security of this area.

It was Liuding town.

That electromagnetic cannon was an immense force, its power far surmounted the cannons on his Tigers.

Although they would not easily strain the relationship with the "ruler of the land" Jiang Chen, since they existed, it would still be a threat.

How can one allow a threat to exist?

If he wanted to control the entire Wanghai city area, then he must plan against Liuding town.

But with the status quo, for both parties, cooperation was the better choice.

...

Within the chamber, Jiang Chen met the ambassador from Liuding town.

To his surprise, the ambassador was a lady. The bodyguard behind her was a Caucasian male. From his buff body, he must be a great fighter.

As to the female ambassador, Jiang Chen's first expression was utter shock, but presumably, he expressed his caution towards her.

Under her high nose, a vibe of power surrounded her.

Blonde hair, a western kind of body but an eastern face; she should be mixed.

Tang Miya, that was her name.

"It is a great pleasure to meet you, ambassador from Liuding town, I hope you enjoyed your stay last night." When he saw her enter the door, Jiang Chen had a friendly smile on his face and at

the same extended his right hand.

Because she arrived rather late, Jiang Chen arranged a room for her in the Paradise Island hotel.

"Thank you for hosting me." The vibrant red lips were curled up as Tang Miya extended her hand and shook with Jiang Chen. "Your sex robot in the hotel was great."

Jiang Chen paused for a moment as his expression looked peculiar.

[That sex robot...has a female version?]

To his surprise, this lady ambassador was rather wild in her private life.

"Ahem, as long as you had fun. Please take a seat." Jiang Chen smiled as he avoided the rather inappropriate topic, he nobly pulled out the chair for her and invited her to sit.

Tang Miya nodded with a smile to express her gratitude as she sat on the chair. The bodyguard stood in front of the door.

"What kind of news is Miss Tang Miya bringing to us from Liuding?" As he sat on the chair, Jiang Chen asked the straightforward question.

"Of course friendly news." Tang Miya blinked her eyes before she took out a document, "First, it is about the trade. Liuding town had signed a trade agreement with the Council of Ten at the Sixth Street, now that owner of the Sixth Street has changed, I wanted to ask Mr. Jiang Chen if this agreement is still valid?"

She put the document gently on the table.

Before the meeting, Jiang Chen scanned through the agreement. The premise was to ensure that Liuding town's merchants were treated fairly and equally and also share the same free trading rights with other forces.

"Of course it is valid." Jiang Chen picked up the agreement as he ceremonially scanned it before he gave out a direct response.

A smile surfaced on Tang Miya's face as she put the contract away; she had all ten fingers crossed.

"Also, it's about an agreement with the Fishbone base. Is it appropriate to bring it up now?"

An obvious attempt to test the water.

On the surface, Jiang Chen was the general of the military government, the council still exercised the decree. At least for other people, the Sixth Street was still open, and democratic.

Deciding for the council was overreaching, to begin with. Now

that the private matter of the Fishbone base was brought up in the Sixth Street Council building, it was practically asking: does the Sixth Street belong to you?

The answer was yes.

"It's fine, just say it," Jiang Chen said firmly.

Seeing Jiang Chen's reaction, Tang Miya smiled and took out another agreement.

"Regarding the food by the Fishbone Food Corporation, our party is very interested... If you don't mind my rudeness, you are the owner of that company right?"

"Why do you think that?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"A woman's sixth sense," Tang Miya used a half-joking voice.

"Maybe your sense is accurate, but we are off topic now." Jiang Chen shrugged as he didn't answer the question, but rather, he avoided the topic.

Although Tang Miya was not too satisfied with Jiang Chen's response, she only smiled as she didn't persist on the question.

"This is our trade list; we need meat cans, vegetable cans, beer, and sugar. On the other side, we can provide crystals, small

electronic components like chips and batteries. We trust that the price we offer will please you."

Jiang Chen carefully scanned through the content on the list as he nodded.

The price offered by the woman was a bit higher than Zhao Chenwu. The total trade amount was around half a million per month. The deal could be executed next spring.

"I am pleased with the price you offered, as the chips of your party, our side is also very interested. But the name on the contract is Lucky 32 Casino, not Liuding town, is there something I am not understanding?" Jiang Chen smiled as he signed the agreement with his name.

"Liuding town is only an aircraft carrier, but Lucky 32 Casino is my property." Miss Tang smiled as she put away the contract.

Jiang Chen thought for a second before clarity returned to his face.

"Then, in this case, the identity of Miss Tang in Liuding town, is similar to mine in the Sixth Street?"

"Two kinds of political structures, not comparable." Tang Miya said, "You can interpret that as I am a sailor with some influence."

[Not a complete dictatorship?]

"Although I don't completely understand, I think it would not interfere with our cooperation. Now, do you have any interesting proposals?" Jiang Chen laughed.

To Jiang Chen's surprise, Tang Miya shook her head.

"No."

[No? She didn't bring up the artillery agreement?]

Jiang Chen quickly regathered his thoughts, stood up, and announced the end of the meeting.

After shaking Tang Miya's hand, Jiang Chen personally sent her out the door.

"To be honest, I personally enjoy chatting with a dictator like you," Standing at the door, Tang Miya said out of nowhere.

"Oh?"

"Just this piece of paper, if it was for the Group Of Ten council, they could argue endlessly for two days straight. Compared with rowdy men, I think a decisive man like you is more charming." Tang Miya didn't bother to hide her praise in her words as her gorgeous eyes looked at Jiang Chen.

"Haha, Miss Tang is overcomplimenting me." Jiang Chen humbly smiled, but the curled up mouth clearly exposed his satisfaction.

Tang Miya would obvious not miss this detail as the tip of her mouth also curled up.

No men would have no reaction to a beautiful girl's praise, it was a natural instinct of men.

"I have a personal proposal, I don't know if Mr. Jiang would be interested?"

"Mhmm?"

With her watery eyes turning, Tang Miya got closer to Jiang Chen with a smile, the tip of her nose stopped at the point where it almost touched his face.

With an incredibly flirtatious tone, accompanied by her warm breath, she spoke out.

"Tonight, do you want to come by my room?"

...

Chapter 209: Fact

The next morning.

Jiang Chen and Miss Tang Miya walked out of Paradise Island hotel together.

They chatted and laughed as they walked along. Then, Jiang Chen nobly sent her to the gate of the Sixth Street.

If it were not for the people seeing them coming out of the hotel together, no one would have guessed what happened before.

But if people observed carefully, both of the powerful individuals had minor dark circles under their eyes, it seemed like they didn't sleep well last night.

Of course, what happens at the top of the pyramid, the people below don't need to know.

As to the rumors, it will fade eventually.

"Was it enjoyable last night?" Jiang Chen grinned as he mocked her.

"You are better than the sex robot." The tip of Tang Miya's mouth curved up as she replied in the same mocking tone.

"Haha, I'll take that as a compliment."

Jiang Chen without many boundaries would not refuse seduction, especially if it were in his own territory.

Therefore, last night he gladly accepted Tang Miya's invitation as he hooked up with the queen from Liuding town.

The intimacy happened last night, was no different than the negotiation on the conference table, both parties searching for what they want.

Being able to thrust into the body of a boss level person made Jiang Chen feel the "conquering" sensation. At the same time, also as a person of importance, she enjoyed the sensation of "being conquered" as she hadn't experienced it for a long time.

But that enjoyment will only last until morning. The two both chose to keep quiet on the details of last night.

Just like Jiang Chen had his mistresses.

As the boss of force, the owner behind Lucky 32 Casino Miss Tang Miya, also possessed her own lovers.

"What a pity, it would be better if you are a nobody." Before she was about to leave, Tang Miya gently used her finger to lift up Jiang Chen's chin as her eyes narrowed.

"If I am a nobody, is there any benefits to you?" Jiang Chen squeezed her hand with a smirk as he moved her finger away.

With her hand held, she did not blush at all. Her shamelessness was no less than Jiang Chen's. With a mischevious smile, she said, "Then I could make you one of my lovers."

With her invasive speech, Jiang Chen only smiled noncommittally.

[Funny, although my boundary is a bit gray, I don't have that kind of fetish.]

Ceremonially they said goodbye as Tang Miya along with her bodyguard disappeared among the ruins.

Looking at her figure disappearing into the horizon while remembering her final words, Jiang Chen uncontrollably shivered.

Although he just imagined it, the idea was a bit disgusting for a man.

...

After returning to the Inner Circle, Jiang Chen found Chu Nan who was cleaning the helicopter on the helicopter pad.

"Was it thrilling last night?" Chu Nan laughed mischievously as he closed the hose shut.

"How did you guess?" Jiang Chen shrugged.

"The owner of Lucky 32 Casino, Miss Tang Miya. Her unique hobby is no news in Liuding town." Chu Nan threw the mop on the helicopter's back wing, clapped his hands, and looked at Jiang Chen. "Since she already hooked up with you, then the negotiation must be successful?"

"You could say that. Also, she didn't mention the artillery agreement, your guess seems to be off." Jiang Chen smiled.

With eyebrows slightly raised, Chu Nan held his chin pondering for a moment.

"Is that so? It looks like they chose the more cautious way."

"Cautious?"

"Mhmm. Perhaps because she realized from the interaction between you that your firm stance would mean you would never compromise, therefore Tang Miya didn't bring up the proposal that obviously would be rejected, but rather she brought up the genuine desire to cooperate."

"That's something she can see through?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"Tang Miya is a smart woman. Or else she wouldn't be managing Lucky 32 to perfection."

Chu Nan paused before he continued to speak.

"On the other hand, they might also be cautious about the force behind you."

"Fishbone Food Corporation?" Jiang Chen pondered.

It was only an elaborate lie, but since the food he brought out became evidence to support its existence, it made everyone believe its existence.

Other than the most intimate people, no one knew that it is a fictitious creation, not even his own citizens.

Although he didn't need it anymore.

"If you could pardon my rudeness, boss, is your identity really just a representative?"

"Does it matter?" Jiang Chen smiled noncommittally.

"From the bystander's perspective, your identity is more like the boss of the Fishbone Food Corporation. And Fishbone base, rather than a supply station, is more similar to a military outpost."

Hearing that, Jiang Chen's eyes slightly moved.

"Regardless, since I already settled the fact this military outpost exists, even if people want to touch it, they no longer have the ability to."

"That's right because they are fearful." Chu Nan smiled, "Because they don't know the real power of the company behind you. Did they help to occupy the Sixth Street, what's the purpose and intention of entering Wanghai City. Because of the lack of information, it forces them to use a cautionary attitude."

"Because of this, they should already have considered the mutated people of the Seventh area would somewhat pose a hindrance to our growth. If we accepted the artillery agreement, then we would definitely use electromagnetic cannon against the mutated human. If we easily solved the mutated human problem, it would be against the interest of Liuding town. Rather than the income of ten thousand crystals, they would much rather see mutated human and our struggle for power and hurting each other."

...

Thinking about Chu Nan's words, Jiang Chen returned to the council building.

Regardless, Liuding's attitude was rather friendly, the mutated human at the Seventh area didn't make any moves either.

In this case, his force in the apocalypse had finally entered a relatively peaceful period.

He only needed to choose someone to represent him for the Sixth Street affairs, Fishbone base is his core. After leaving for so long, it was time for him to go back.

Back in the office, he saw the pouting Sun Jiao waiting.

His expression looked rather awkward since last night...

"Was it fun last night?" Sun Jiao smiled with not the friendliest of smiles.

Jiang Chen forced a laugh as he embarrassedly scratched his head, looking away.

Sun Jiao's mouth pouted unhappily.

"There is still a small apple you haven't eaten yet, and you are picking fruit on another side."

The small apple referred to Yao Yao.

"Sorry."

Jiang Chen knew there was no use saying anything as he chose to admit fault, he also walked up to hug Sun Jiao.

Feeling his body heat, a red hue covered Sun Jiao's face.

With her expression showing a momentary confliction, she finally let out a sigh and gave up persisting this topic.

"Let's talk about some important matters. When do we go back? I am worried... about her condition."

That her was obviously referring to Sun Xiaorou.

Because it was too dangerous, she was still locked up inside the basement.

Speaking of her own sister, Sun Jiao also gave Jiang Chen a hard and dirty look.

"Ahem, the day after tomorrow, I'll do my best to finish taking care of everything."

Jiang Chen, knowing he lost the high ground, chose to shamelessly avoid Sun Jiao's eyes of blame as he quickly finished saying everything he needed to before fleeing from the scene.

Chapter 210: Zhao Chenwu's Choice

The cleaning of radiation was almost complete.

As to the suddenly erupted and quickly ended civil war, the survivors living in the Sixth Street reacted calmly to the situation; the passersby also didn't cause any trouble.

The new insurgent, with thunderous momentum, stabilized the chaotic situation.

Other than the ten people at the top who changed seats, for most of the people living in the Outer Circle, life didn't really change.

As to death.

People died every day on the wasteland.

"I always thought I am great at understanding people, but I guess I was wrong this time." Zhao Chenwu let out a sigh as he sat across from Jiang Chen.

"Do you regret anything?" Jiang Chen smiled.

Zhao Chenwu was silent.

Seeing that he didn't respond, Jiang Chen didn't mind, but rather he poured a cup of hot water for himself.

Then, he took out a small plastic bag from his pocket as he ripped it open, then slowly poured the fine brown powder inside the steamy cup.

Looking at the dark brown mixture, Zhao Chenwu's eyes widened as he uncontrollably gulped.

"At our place, this is called coffee."

"Of course I know." Zhao Chenwu's tone sounded urgent.

"Do you still regret it now?" Jiang Chen laughed.

Zhao Chenwu looked at Jiang Chen not understanding his meaning.

Seeing the expression on Zhao Chenwu's face, Jiang Chen laughed, and then took out something else.

The white cube, in Zhao Chenwu's widened eyes, was dropped into the fragrant coffee.

"You have a lot of good things," Zhao Chenwu difficultly squeezed out these words.

"That's right." Jiang Chen shrugged as he said lightheartedly, "Some things I was afraid of bringing out, but now I don't have as

much to worry about."

"Are you really a representative?" Zhao Chenwu said with a bitter smile.

"You are the second person that has asked me this question... But what I want to say is that who I am is not important. The important thing is, as long as you work for me, I can provide you with all of these." Jiang Chen smiled.

"Provide me with all of these?" Zhao Chenwu was dumbfounded as he looked at Jiang Chen in disbelief.

"That's right." Jiang Chen was straightforward, "Food, sugar, coffee, tea, as well as other similar things. I will provide you a batch every month and you'll be responsible for selling them for me. The right to sell food is in your hands. I won't interrupt your business and I will only send some people to provide assistance in accounting."

"I don't understand, these things would be popular anywhere on the wasteland, why would you give it to me to do?" Zhao Chenwu didn't understand.

"Because I trust your ability, I want to see my product appear in every corner of the wasteland."

Hearing that, Zhao Chenwu's expression turned peculiar as he had an odd smile on his face.

"I can't believe that not long ago, we were still partners, now, I am working under you."

"That's up to your interpretation. As long as you maintain your "coolness," then Zhao Corporation still belongs to you. The purpose of a "chain" is to prevent similar things from happening again. Our relationship can still be interpreted as a partnership, and it is a much closer partnership." Jiang Chen smiled.

Zhao Chenwu paused for a moment before he burst out laughing and extended his hand.

"Then best of luck to both of us."

Holding his hand, Jiang Chen smiled.

"Best of luck to both of us."

The food trade specifics were quickly nailed down. The Fishbone was responsible for providing the supplies, Zhao Corporation was responsible for creating trade routes to send the goods to the corners of the wasteland, then bringing back other goods or crystals.

The profit would be divided 30 to 70 with Zhao Corporation taking home 30%. The current trade boundary would be expanded to the nearby Su City and Hang City with trade commencing this spring.

With the electronic agreement, Zhao Chenwu left Jiang Chen's office feeling jubilant.

Fan Chen waiting at the door let out a sigh of relief when he saw the expression on his colleague's face.

Jiang Chen shouldn't be difficult to talk to or Zhao Chenwu wouldn't be this happy.

As he thought, the fat guy knocked on the office door before walking inside.

Sitting across from Jiang Chen, Fan Chen hesitated for a moment before he asked in a low voice.

"What does the general need from me?"

Although Jiang Chen didn't put his hands on their assets and even divided some more interests to them, no one felt relaxed because of it.

The reason was that they were all injected with that chip.

Now that the situation has stabilized, Jiang Chen didn't make moves at their wallet. But what about in the future? Who could promise that he wouldn't slowly take over the crystals and factories in their hands and then secretly get rid of them?

That thing was originally meant for slaves, the people with it cannot defy at all.

These council members at the top never thought that thing would be used on them one day.

"Don't be so nervous, have a cup of coffee first?" Jiang Chen smiled amiably as he made him a cup of coffee.

Looking at the coffee in front of him, Fan Chen's expression was even more vibrant than Zhao Chenwu's, the widened eyes were almost about to pop out.

The hand holding onto the cup trembled as he excitedly put his lips to the cup and took a sip.

The taste that has been long gone.

"I finally understand why that guy Zhao Chenwu was so emotional when he walked out." Fan Chen let out a sigh as he smiled bitterly.

Thinking about the continuous partnership between Zhao Corporation and Fishbone base, even thinking with his butt, the two-parties must have reached some agreement.

"Haha, I believe you will be more emotional by the time you walk

out the door." Jiang Chen laughed.

Fan Chen's face had astonishment written on it as he sat straight up, but then he slumped back, forcing a smile.

"It wouldn't be the food business. Two food sellers competing would offer much less profit than a monopoly."

Jiang Chen smiled as he took a sip of his own coffee.

"Although it is not the food business, the profit margin is not any lower."

Hearing this, Fan Chen looked interested.

"Oh? What business is it?"

"The rebuilding of the Sixth Street Inner Circle, I will contract you everything," Jiang Chen softly released this mega bomb.

Fan Chen's eyes opened wide as he looked at Jiang Chen in disbelief.

"Everything?"

"What, are you not confident?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"That would require a lot of money..." Fan Chen said difficulty.

"Don't worry, there will be funds." Jiang Chen put down the cup as his finger crossed, "The building destroyed in the civil war will be paid for by the assets of the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, totaling one and a half million crystals. Based on the progress of construction, for every 10% completed, 10% of the fund will be paid out."

"Deal!"

Fan Chen accepted without hesitation, the tense expression he had was as if he was afraid Jiang Chen would take back his decision.

Jiang Chen smiled without saying another word as he took out the electronic agreement.

After carefully confirming the terms of the agreement, Fan Chen pressed his finger on it.

"To be honest, I am confused." Putting away the contract, Fan Chen couldn't resist the temptation to ask.

"What are you confused about?" Throwing the contract in his pocket, Jiang Chen sunk into his chair as he said amiably.

After debating for a moment, Fan Chen still spoke out with his head lowered.

"If I were in power, I would confiscate all the other council members' asset."

"The reason why I want you merchants to have a seat at the table is that it is too difficult for me to rule this piece of land, you can just be a good merchant from now on."

"Do you not love wealth?" Fan Chen forced a smile.

Just as he said those words, in his shocking sight, Jiang Chen suddenly burst out laughing.

"The entire Sixth Street is mine, is there a difference whether the crystal is for me?"

History had proved countless times whether the corporation should be governed by an individual or a collective group.

Rather than hoarding crystals, Jiang Chen would rather hand out the small profits.

It was not only a technique to gain people's loyalty.

More importantly, under the motivation for profit, these ambitious merchants would naturally expand and conquer for him.

Chapter 211: The End for now

The five council members were all called upon separately to Jiang Chen's office. When they left, all of them left with a happy expression.

What would have taken two days of arguments around the roundtable, Jiang Chen used a few sentences to solve.

The food trade was controlled by Zhao Corporation. From today on, they'll start to hire workers from the Outer Circle as well as guards. At the same time, they'll order from the mechanical repair factory in the industrial area. The order totaled to twenty modified trucks with crystals as the energy source for the transportation vehicles of the goods. These trucks would be modified at Zhao Chenwu's firearm factory with heavy machineguns attached on top, the exterior being wielded with steel armor and parts.

Jiang Chen remembered a sentence Zhao Chenwu told him when he took him on tour: "Unless it was a proposal passed by the Sixth Street council would my factory start producing these hard to take care of things."

Now that there was no more trouble; the damn roundtable was smashed in half. The council no longer discussed these annoying problems and Jiang Chen's words were the law. When control was in one person's hands, there would be no comical proposals to keep him in check.

Ten T-3 power armor orders with a total price of one hundred

and ten thousand crystals would be completed by next March. Jiang Chen paid 20% upfront to Zhao Chenwu, Zhao Chenwu will use this funding to expand the production line and hire more workers.

At the same time, Jiang Chen notified Zhao Chenwu to emphasize Zhao Corporation's weapon research to focus on new power armor types. They must develop a more mobile, higher load, and more powerful T-4 power armor.

Not only Zhao Corporation, the other four council members all received their own benefits.

Fan Chen's metal shell Chamber of Commerce acquired the project to rebuild the damaged buildings in the Inner Circle as well as repairing the damages to the wall. At the same time, Jiang Chen gave him the project to connect Fishbone to the Sixth Street's electric grid.

Lu Yun's Shoreline company, who previously sold small items before the civil war and traded with Su city and Hang city, had a small portion of the pharmaceutical market. Unfortunately, the nuclear explosion in the Inner Circle almost wiped out half of his stores. Although the rebuild fee would be paid by Dark Red Chamber of Commerce's assets, the products he lost during the nuclear explosion were not included as part of the compensation scheme.

But just at the brink of bankruptcy, Jiang Chen helped him. He organized all the pieces of lands together and assigned him a large plot of land to aid in his business transformation - building the

biggest entertainment city on the wasteland with casinos, hotels, as well as special services.

Hua Weijie's star technology company still maintained its original business focus - to digest and improve the pre-war technology. But Jiang Chen gave him a research direction - Type-51 Transport Helicopter.

The Sixth Street didn't develop their air force, part of the reason being that they never acquired the technology before the war. The other reason being the comical balance of power. "Because I don't have the helicopter, therefore you are not allowed to research. Therefore I will group up with the eight other people to sanction you."

Now that the problem didn't exist anymore, Jiang Chen prepaid Hua Weijie twenty thousand crystals as funding for the upgrade of research equipment and hiring teams to explore pre-war facilities to gather information.

Other than the four council members mentioned above, even Kong Zhe, who first stood up to oppose Jiang Chen in the initial meeting, gained something out of this. Jiang Chen, putting aside their history, made this guy who was living anxiously for the past few days graciously express his gratitude. However, Jiang Chen really didn't care about this appreciation as he used a casual voice to tell him that, as long as he is obedient, there will be things to gain out of it.

Now that the Sixth Street was back on track, it was time to go back to the Fishbone base as that's where his core operations lie.

The helicopter was left there. The star technology company's technologists will use equipment to scan the helicopter and acquire the needed technical data.

Chu Nan, as the pilot, was obviously left behind on the Sixth Street. Considering that the restructure of the council to the upper and lower house would still require coordination, Jiang Chen granted Chu Nan as his representative to perform part of the duties as the general. He also left two hundred soldiers behind to maintain order.

After taking care of these things, Jiang Chen took the remaining soldiers and left the Sixth Street.

"Finally get to go home." On the way, Sun Jiao lazily stretched.

"That's right, finally going home." Jiang Chen smiled as he looked at the underground entrance.

The underground tunnel modified with the cooperation of Zhao Chenwu now belonged completely to Jiang Chen; with elite soldiers wielding kinetic skeletons guarding the entrance.

When they saw Jiang Chen and Sun Jiao approach, the five soldiers on duty saluted and opened the gate to the tunnel.

"Speaking of this, a lot happened in this half a year."

Walking on the dry concrete road, Sun Jiao abruptly started talking.

"That's right."

"Is that the only thing you can say?" Sun Jiao pouted her mouth as she gave a dirty look to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen laughed as he naturally held onto her hand.

Sun Jiao's face turned red but quickly returned to normal.

"You are blushing?"

"No."

"We have done it so many times - Ahh, is your zodiac a cat?" Jiang Chen painfully shook his right hand as he exaggeratedly blew on his hand.

This girl pinched him.

After spending so long together, he almost forgot that she was a "lunatic' with a muscle strength of 44. Although the thin arms did not show any signs of muscle.

Sun Jiao stared at him in embarrassment.

"Why are you saying this here?"

Sun Jiao glanced in the front as there were no signs of the team anymore.

Leading in the front was Cheng Weiguo, as to the two people "intentionally" lagging behind, that guy understandingly took the forty-something soldiers and moved at a faster pace, leaving the quiet space to them.

"Ahem, they are all gone." Jiang Chen with a grin put his arm around her waist.

She didn't resist against Jiang Chen's intimate action as they walked in the not-so-romantic underground tunnel.

Compared to the first time they walked inside, this place has been completely changed.

The wall was covered with luminescent stripes that emitted cold blue lights which lit up the pitch black underground. The river flowing with dirty water had been blocked already with a layer of Polyethylene alloy separator. The outlets were blocked by polyethylene boards which stopped the possibility of bandits or cannibals from entering.

"What is your EP indicators now?"

"Why are you asking about it?"

"I just want to see, do I have the ability to forcefully do you," Jiang Chen asked in a half-joking voice.

Hearing that, Sun Jiao's face turned red again, but it was soon changed into a smirk as she displayed the EP on her arm.

[User Name: Sun Jiao

Muscle strength: 49

Bone strength: 67

Reflex: 50

Brain cell strength: 13]

...

"Gasp-, wait, I remember you were 44, 61, 40?"

Staring at the screen, Jiang Chen said in complete shock.

Chapter 212: That Smile

Muscle strength increased by 5 points, bone strength by 6, and reflex by a shocking 10 points!

[

Muscle strength:49

Bone strength:67

Reflex:50

Brain cell strength:13

...

]

Jiang Chen quietly looked at his own EP; the difference was still quite drastic.

Muscle strength and reflex were okay as he was "only" behind ten something points, but she almost doubled his bone strength.

"I thought I was going to catch up to you.' Jiang Chen forced a smile as he closed the EP in disappointment.

"While you are improving, I am not lagging behind," Sun Jiao flipped her luscious black hair as she said proudly.

"Looks like the difference is only going to get bigger." Jiang Chen sighed.

The EP stat determines, under an ideal setting, a human's maximum ability. For most humans, the maximum stat achievable is 100, while an infant's is 0. The stat thus quantifies the user's current ability.

Under the circumstance that the DNA is not modified, the limit humans can reach is 100. If the modification causes reproductive isolation, then the person wouldn't be referred to human anymore, they would have to be named after another species.

Once the stat passes 50, it is much more difficult to increase it. Although Sun Jiao's "stats points" speed didn't seem to be as fast as Jiang Chen's, which double within a few months, this was due to her initial stats being much higher.

Just like in video games, the difficulty from level 1 to 10 is far easier compared to level 50 to 51.

Seeing Jiang Chen sigh, Sun Jiao though his dignity was hurt as she gentle comforted him.

"There are lots of different definitions for being powerful. Body

condition is only one of them. A lot of people on the wasteland possess a frail body, but with their superb shooting skills, they can still win a fight against people with body conditions multiple times greater. As well as people who have mastered mechanical knowledge, with the help of the assistive device, they're able to acquire strong powers. Also the hackers, they could infiltrate the mechanical people wandering among shambles to force them to fight..."

"Then what am I strong at?" Jiang Chen cockily laughed.

Sun Jiao rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen who was showing off. She then bit her lips as she stared into the distant darkness.

"Do you know now?"

"I just want to listen to my woman compliment me," Jiang Chen shamelessly said these words.

He was always someone that liked to show off.

With a slight smirk, Sun Jiao rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen, and then with a half-serious half-joking tone.

"Your power comes from the fact that you can gain the affection of other people."

[So, the charm stat is maxed out?]

That was a unique way of saying this as Jiang Chen couldn't stop himself from laughing.

"For example, you?"

"Not only me, but Yao Yao, even Lin Lin, as well as everyone in the base."

"Why don't you say leadership."

"Different from leadership. Think closely, is there even a time where you used the slavery chip to force someone to listen to you?"

"People trust that you can bring order, they trust you. Therefore, they follow you to a brighter future, that's why they are willing to listen to you."

"To be able to gather so many people willing to fight for you, it is an amazing ability." Sun Jiao playfully winked.

Hearing that, Jiang Chen paused and then smiled, but he then exaggeratedly let out a sigh.

"What, are you still not pleased with having this power?"

"Very pleased, but I still have some regrets."

"Regrets?"

"I can't tie you to a chair and seek revenge for the first time we met." Jiang Chen with a smirk spoke into her ear.

"Oh? Don't you think it is thrilling to be tied down." She smiled like a little devil as she also spoke into Jiang Chen's ear, and naughtily blew inside.

"Uh, I am not a masochist."

[Although he was never against trying new things...]

Looking at the side of Jiang Chen's face, the tip of Sun Jiao's mouth also rolled up.

"You've changed."

"Ahem, I was not a masochist before," Jiang Chen said speechlessly.

"Not that," Sun Jiao laughed out, she paused, and then with a ridiculing tone, she jokingly said, "You are more mature compared to the first time you were here."

"Which one do you like better?"

"Both... Although during that time you were also delicious... It is more attractive for you to be more mature," Sun Jiao with a finger on her lips said.

[What do you mean by delicious?]

Jiang Chen had a helpless expression on his face.

But speaking of that, within five short months, he did grow a lot.

He was previously just a young man entering into society with no notable achievements in life. If he didn't acquire that magical interdimensional travel ability, he would probably be inside his apartment, rotting away. Or even going back to his hometown and becoming unemployed while still holding a honors university degree.

Not even house, he would probably have to depend on his parents to not starve.

Now looking back from this perspective, he felt melancholic.

Seeing the adorable gesture of Sun Jiao, Jiang Chen also joked back.

"You've also changed."

"Oh? How have I changed?" Sun Jiao put her hands on her waist as she pretended to be authoritative.

"Too many things." Jiang Chen laughed as he started to count his finger. "More civilized, no longer licking fingers after eating cans, knows how to match clothing, learned to be compassionate, and even knows how to knit a scarf."

Sun Jiao's mouth curved up showing her proudness.

"Which change do you like the most?"

"Boobs are slightly bigger."

"Be serious!" Sun Jiao gave Jiang Chen a dirty look as she reached to pinch Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen with a grin easily dodged the attack without any force.

"From being audacious to more understanding, or more feminine."

Hearing that, Sun Jiao's face immediately turned red, her eyes frantically looked around, as her finger twirled her hair around shyly.

"Feminine? What, was I not before?"

Jiang Chen smiled but didn't reply.

Chatting was a great way to pass the time, there were glares of different light in the distance.

The ladder at the end had long been changed into a spacious elevator.

When they approached at the exit, Jiang Chen pressed the button for the elevator.

"Now that you have taken care of things here, will you go back to the other side?" Stepping onto the elevator, Sun Jiao said, not wanting to let him go.

"Mhmm."Jiang Chen nodded and followed her.

As if Sun Jiao had already expected the answer, she didn't ask him to stay, she only spoke with a small voice.

"What is this world to you?"

Jiang Chen paused for a moment as he didn't expect Sun Jiao to ask this question.

But the pause only lasted for a second. Jiang Chen gently smiled as he tousled her hair.

"It was only a gold mine in the beginning... But now, my second home."

With his words, a bright smile emerged on Sun Jiao's face.

That smile was beautiful.

Chapter 213: The Ballistic Tingting

When he walked out of the elevator, Jiang Chen was greeted by the thunderous applause of all the survivors at the Fishbone base.

The snow was thick and cold, but it didn't cool off the people's energy by the slightest.

A girl even gifted Jiang Chen with flowers.

The first groups of survivors that joined the base were all refugees from the Sixth Street. They suffered from hunger, disease, and were looked down upon as they struggled to survive. It was fair to say that they don't have the slightest positive impression of the Group of Ten council. Although they have nothing to do with the Sixth Street anymore, Jiang Chen becoming the new owner of the Sixth Street made them feel proud and avenged.

Jiang Chen waved back at the crowd with a smile before entering the community center along with Sun Jiao.

When they entered the supply management office, Jiang Chen found manager Wang Qin.

"All the compensation to the Black Blood Mercenaries have been paid out, a total of 11000 crystals. Because he was afraid that his base would be affected by the civil war, Luo Yang has already taken his people back to the Sixth Street. As to the trade with Liuding town, he left a representative to delegate with us.

Jiang Chen nodded at Wang Qin's report.

The food business for the Sixth Street as well as other areas were all given to Zhao Chenwu. As to Liuding town, because of the trade agreement with Tang Miya, Jiang Chen hired the Black Blood Mercenaries and Luo Yang would be responsible for escorting the food to the aircraft and then transporting back the crystals and chips.

As to the specifics, Jiang Chen left it to Wang Qin to worry about. He trusted that in this field of expertise, her experience was more than enough.

On the other hand, there were around one hundred survivors that joined the Fishbone base with the majority being survivors from Qingpu, and some were even from Songjiang area, near Qingpu.

For the newly joined survivors, Jiang Chen had a welcoming attitude but was worried by Fishbone's housing limitation. The expansion of the Fishbone base has also slowed due to increased construction of the defense line near Taifu river.

But following the decrease of pressure from the mutated humans, Lu Huasheng brought the construction team back to the base. It won't be long until the housing problem is resolved.

"Did Luo Yang say anything before he left?"

Pondering this for a moment, Wang Qin said in a quiet voice.

"He said you are cunning but deceitful."

Jiang Chen immediately burst out laughing.

"I'll take that as a compliment then."

If he heard the news of the civil war, he would do anything to bring his people back to the Sixth Street.

Although 70 something people was not a lot, they were all experienced. With the 70 something mercenaries, he could have easily gotten more compared to the 11000 crystals.

After arranging the related tasks, Jiang Chen walked out of the office and together with Sun Jiao, who was waiting outside, went to the mansion.

After the interrogation, Sun Xiaorou has been locked in the basement. If it were a stranger, it would be okay, but she was Sun Jiao’s younger sister. Considering his relationship with Sun Jiao, this Sun Xiaorou could be regarded as his sister-in-law.

"What is your plan for my sister?" On the way to the basement, Sun Jiao asked in a quiet voice.

"... To be honest, I don’t know."

Sun Jiao gently bit her lips as she wanted to say something, but nothing ended up coming out.

Jiang Chen peeked at the side of Sun Jiao’s face and didn’t stay anything either.

The two walked to the basement in silence as they pushed open the door.

"The pervert is finally back?"

Lin Lin sat in front of the computer with her eyes focused on the screen while saying it without turning her head.

Before they headed to the frontline, Jiang Chen asked her to investigate why Sun Xiaorou lost her childhood memory, or even why she doesn’t remember Sun Jiao as a person. He then related it to the zeal without reasoning for the religion and suspected she had been brainwashed or experienced hypnosis before.

Jiang Chen ignored Lin Lin badmouthing him as he glanced at the Sun Xiaorou floating in the nutrient chamber.

"Did you figure anything out?"

A proud smile flashed across Lin Lin’s face as she pressed a few

buttons.

"Of course, who do you think I am."

A brain shaped full sensory visual was projected out, Lin Lin stood up from the chair and walked beside the visual.

‘Using special equipment to scan, I found a Nano chip in her hippocampus. Its purpose was to block the nervous system from extracting information from the hippocampus which would act as a seal to her childhood memory."

As Lin Lin said this, she clicked on the full sensory visual as she magnified the chip hidden in her brain.

"Is there a way to remove this chip?" Jiang Chen said gently.

"Of course, but it will be complicated..." Lin Lin let out a sigh.

Seeing that the always cocky digitalized human scientist express her concern, Sun Jiao turned anxious as she grabbed onto Lin Lin’s shoulder, pleading her.

"There are still ways, right? Please, I don’t want my sister to become someone’s puppet. If there is anything I can do to help, tell me and I will do my best –"

She was slightly uncomfortable being stared at by Sun Jiao’s

pleading eyes. Her face turned slightly red as she looked away and interrupted her in a small voice.

"The chip has been in her brain since she was young. In the case that the chip can be removed without damaging her brain, even with the pre-war medical conditions, there would be no guarantee, especially here..."

"So what options do we have?" Jiang Chen asked calmly.

"The easiest way is to find the person who implanted the chip, release the control, and make the chip eternally dormant."

"Could it not be taken down by an EMP?" Jiang Chen couldn't help but ask.

Hearing that, Lin Lin felt exasperated.

"When the size of the device and the sensor is much smaller than the wavelength of the microwave, the microwave frequency cannot be coupled to the device with sufficient energy to cause damage." The electromagnetic pulse on the nano-level electronic components is invalid... How did you learn your physics, aren't you a university student on the other side?"

Jiang Chen's face turned red as he tried to argue back.

"We don't learn those things on that side?"

Sun Jiao stared at her sister in the nutrient chamber as she suddenly spoke out.

"As long as I catch the person that implanted the chip right?"

"Even if he was caught, I don't think he would easily give up control." Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows as he was also troubled.

"Then I will force him to give it." A grimace flashed across Sun Jiao's face as her tightly clenched fists shook with anger.

Looking at the expression on Sun Jiao's face, Jiang Chen let out a sigh.

Seems like a war with the Dusk was inevitable, though there was no possibility of having a peaceful resolution to begin with.

"I will help you." Jiang Chen held onto Sun Jiao's fist as he gently comforted her.

"Mhmm." Sun Jiao's face was covered in a red hue as she buried her head.

Lin Lin pouted her lips.

Her heart began to beat faster out of displeasure from seeing the two display affection while completely ignoring her.

Wait, how could a mechanical heart start beating faster.

Lin Lin was shocked. But just when she realized this, her body's control was already taken over by the "guest" in her body.

"Ahhhh! Quick, help me, I can’t control the power in my body!"

Chapter 214: The Fourth Dimensional Messenger

Lin Lin was bent over with her arms clutching her stomach as her body began to shake violently.

Just from her posture and tone, she looked like an anime character.

"What's going on?" Jiang Chen was alerted, but before he could react, Lin Lin already moved.

Like a jaguar, Lin Lin leapt at Sun Jiao.

With no time to guard herself, Sun Jiao was pushed onto the ground with her back against the floor. Lin Lin sat on top of her waist, her eyes shone with a hollow and ominous red light.

"What do you want to do!" Sun Jiao blocked Lin Lin's arm as she said furiously.

But seeing the redness from her eyes, Sun Jiao suddenly realized.

It was not Lin Lin, but rather the Tingting in her body.

"Mine," A hollow voice said.

"What are you even saying?" Sun Jiao's face was bloated as she locked onto Tingting's hands.

The digitalized human's strength was surprisingly high. With Sun Jiao's power, she couldn't push it away. Seeing Lin Lin's usual timid look, it was hard to imagine that the body possessed this massive amount of power. Tingting for some strange reasons was enraged.

Jiang Chen immediately rushed over when he saw Sun Jiao being pushed down to the floor; his hands hugged Lin Lin in an attempt to drag her away from Sun Jiao.

The scene was chaotic.

At the same time, Yao Yao, who has been sending food to Lin Lin suddenly opened the door as she brought the delicious meal in.

Then she saw the two twisting on the ground "fighting" and the cute loli was immediately shocked as she froze in place not knowing what to do.

"What, what happened?"

Jiang Chen with the corner his eye noticed the small rabbit slippers. He then turned his head just enough to look at Yao Yao and through his heavy breathing, asked for help.

"Yao Yao, help me, bring that tranquilizer over... Oh no, bring

that static device over."

"Okay!" Yao Yao fiercely nodded her head as she put the dishes on the table and then ran to the operating table, frantically searching for the equipment.

"I, I don't know which one it is!" Yao Yao who couldn't find it was about to cry out of anxiousness.

"F*ck, I can't take this anymore!" Sun Jiao's face turned a dark red as she began to swear, "Can I take her apart?"

[Is this considered chaos among the concubines?]

As Jiang Chen, with a mixture of emotions, was trying to comfort Sun Jiao while doing everything he can to control the enraged Lin Lin.

But suddenly, Lin Lin's actions stopped, but the red light in her eyes was even brighter.

Jiang Chen was alerted.

"Dammit, it's the Klein particle beam!"

"Then help me get her away!"

Sun Jiao didn't know what the Klein particle beam was, but Jiang Chen had seen the power of it, it was just that he didn't know if it is effective on humans...

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth as his eyes were covered with a layer of red dots.

Fury!

His strength exploded by 20 points.

"Oooo!"

Lin Lin's face was suddenly flushed red as the pressure around her chest made all her power go away for a moment. Falling backward, she was dragged away by Jiang Chen.

Under the critical situation, Jiang Chen didn't notice what he had grabbed onto. Seeing that Lin Lin finally got off of Sun Jiao's body, he immediately deactivated fury, but before he could gather a breath, a beam of red light scathed by his forehead and shot at the ceiling.

The highly penetrative Klein particle didn't leave any traces on the wall, but it instantly destroyed all the electronics in the room as the light immediately turned dark.

"Ahhh." The basement suddenly turning dark made Yao Yao drop the static device in her hand.

Sun Jiao stood up breathing heavily, she moved her body around, and fiercely started at the Lin Lin paralyzed in Jiang Chen's arms.

Because the circuit was destroyed, the nutrient chamber initiated emergency protocol.

The door slowly opened as the nutrients spilled all over the ground, Sun Xiaorou slowly fell onto the ground.

Seeing that, Jiang Chen silently took out his pistol.

The EP was broken, he could not control the mechanical arm on Sun Xiaorou. If she striked at this time, then he had to shoot her limps.

Sun Jiao also blankly stared at Sun Xiaorou on the ground.

Under her vision, Sun Xiaorou's lips moved, and her mouth gradually opened.

The nutrients emitted a luminescent light. With the help of the light in blurring her vision, she looked at Sun Jiao.

"Sis...Sister?"

...

Jiang Chen took out the graphene memory card from the previous EP as he replaced it with a new one.

The Klein particle seems to have destroyed the chip in Sun Xiaorou's head, which was a happy surprise.

Seeing the sisters hug, Jiang Chen had a genuine smile on his face.

But things were never this simple.

After recollecting her memory, Sun Xiaorou seemed to have entered some kind of dismay, her childhood memory suddenly surfacing shocked her current memory.

As if two people were fighting in her head. One represented her memory in the fallout shelter, while the other was the memory instilled in her at the Dusk.

The exact symptom was that her expression was frightening at times while gentle in others. She hid between the arms of Sun Jiao as her body trembled uncontrollably.

But one thing was clear when she saw Jiang Chen, her expression remained in fear...

[Umm, maybe he went overboard last time?]

Jiang Chen thought awkwardly.

The damage on the mind would have to be left to time to heal...Of course, Jiang Chen didn't refer to the interrogation.

For safety purposes, Jiang Chen closed the functionality of her left mechanical arm.

To leave time for the sisters, Jiang Chen held onto Yao Yao and carried Lin Lin out of the basement.

When Lin Lin drowsily woke up from her unconsciousness, the sun had already set.

The red light in her eyes had vanished, seeing Jiang Chen sitting beside the bed, Lin Lin's face turned red all of the sudden.

"Have you been here the entire time?" Lin Lin asked in a feeble voice.

"Mhmm... Tingting returned to normal?" Jiang Chen didn't notice the unnatural tone as he wrily rubbed his temple.

"She has been controlled. Controlling my body seems to cost a lot of energy, she is now asleep." Lin Lin gulped as she nodded her head.

Jiang Chen let out a sigh as he stood up.

"Rest well."

Leaving those words, Jiang Chen headed for the door.

"Wait." Lin Lin stopped him.

Jiang Chen stopped and turned his head.

"Hmmm?"

"Are you going back to the modern world?"

"Mhmm, probably tomorrow morning."

"I want mango pudding!" Lin Lin said without humiliation as she licked her lips in excitement, "Based on my research of history, the earth in 2015 must have that thing-"

"So troublesome... If I remember next time when I come back." He was just about to reject, but for some reason, Jiang Chen lost the mood to bully her.

[She seemed to be cuter when she smile?]

A remorseful expression was just about to appear. However,

when she heard Jiang Chen's last sentence, a joyful smile appeared on her face as she sat up on the bed.

"You should rest a bit more."

"No, pudding is more important."

She wiped the tip of her mouth, ran to the experiment table in slippers, and took off something strange looking. She ran back and put it in front of Jiang Chen as if she was giving him a treasure.

"I will remind you!"

"What is this?" Jiang Chen looked confused as he played with the nail-sized chip in his hand.

"The fusion of technology!"

"Human words please."

"To put it in simple terms, it is a communication chip. But it is unique... Umm, how should I say this? If you insert it in your EP, you can communicate through the time dimension."

Chapter 215: The Friendship Across Dimensions

Fourth dimension messenger was the name Lin Lin gave to that chip.

All in all, the thing was ridiculous.

Because right now, Jiang Chen was standing in his mansion in the modern world while using his EP to video chat with Lin Lin.

With a polished crystal as the core of the chip, it uses a unique method to activate the Klein particle and sends a wave to a different chip in another timeline. Then it uses a unique method to decipher the code. Because only a unique wave is sent out rather than a tangible material with mass, without the help of the interdimensional bracelet, it could not send messages between the two chips.

"Point the camera outside the window, I want to look at trees!" Lin Lin spoke to Jiang Chen in excitement.

[What there to look at for trees.]

Jiang Chen had no choice but to walk to the balcony as he demonstrated the vegetations planted in his backyard.

"Woooo, I want to go to your side."

"If you can transform from digitalized human to mechanical human, I can certainly take you here."

"Uh, I'll pass on that." Lin Lin squinted her neck.

Abandoning the human flesh and the DNA that defines the existence of humanity, would that still be called human?

"Could you go somewhere more open?"

Jiang Chen was going to reject because it was too troublesome, but seeing the longing face on Lin Lin, he let out a sigh and walked to the top floor.

Because the mansion was a scenic house, the part of the river with the most vegetation could be seen on the top floor. Jiang Chen leaned against the railing as he pointed his EP at the Huangpu river.

The wind at night was chilly.

It was already December. Wanghai city in the modern world has officially entered winter season for over a month, but Jiang Chen with only a jacket didn't feel too cold. The El Nino was at its peak, so the winter in Wanghai will be a warm one.

Lights on the passing by boats floated on the river. Along the

river bank was a city of lights as the endless amount of traffic decorated the city skyline, painting a scene of prosperity.

Seeing the drunken expression on Lin Lin's face, Jiang Chen felt teary for some reason.

For the people living in the apocalypse, this scene was providence.

"Woo! I have decided!" A firm expression appeared on Lin Lin's face.

"Oh?"

"I will research a method that will allow you to carry living thing across the time dimension!"

Jiang Chen smiled as he replied.

"Then work hard. If you can really do it, it would not be a problem if you want pudding from all over the world."

If he could really travel with humans, he could then fulfill the promise to Sun Jiao.

In the abandoned experimental school, he had promised Sun Jiao he would one day take her to the school he attended and take her to see how people lived before the war, how they interacted.

Lin Lin on the EP screen slurped her own saliva without caring about her image. Her eyes had already turned to pudding as they flashed brightly.

"Who is she?"

Noticing Jiang Chen coming back, Ayesha came to the roof.

She gently walked beside him as she curiously looked at the gorgeous girl on the screen.

So beautiful.

Silver hair, pale skin, the look of a porcelain doll.

"She is digitalized human Lin Lin." Jiang Chen put his hand around Ayesha's waist as he introduced.

"Woah, you have another woman on the other side!" Lin Lin jumped up as if she had discovered a new world as she looked at Jiang Chen without good intention.

But Jiang Chen was not bothered at all because it was not a secret, only Lin Lin didn't know.

"Hello, can I know your name?" Ayesha gently smiled at her.

She could guess that the girl on the screen was Jiang Chen's woman from the "future world" but she didn't mind. If she could, she wanted to establish a good relationship with her and live harmoniously together.

"Wooo!" Ayesha's gentle smile seemed to have "stunned" Lin Lin, as to the tantrum she had been preparing in her mouth was stuck in her throat. She was too embarrassed to say it out.

It was the first time someone smiled at her this gently, could it be that people were all this gentle before?

"My, my name is Lin Lin."

"My name is Ayesha," Ayesha put her finger out as lightly touched the screen, "nice to meet you."

"Me, me too!" Lin Lin's face turned red as she scratched her head.

"Could I be good friends with you?"

"Mhmm..."

Lin Lin nodded shyly as her finger played with the tip of her clothes, it was a rare expression for her.

Seeing the two people becoming friends, Jiang Chen also smiled.

It was a unique feeling, a friendship beyond time?

Because of the technical limitations, the chip could not maintain communication for an extended period of time.

After telling Lin Lin to let Sun Jiao know about the chip so that she could let him know if anything important happened at the base, Jiang Chen hung up the video call.

"Is she your woman?" Ayesha blinked her blue eyes and asked Jiang Chen.

"How is that possible," Jiang Chen answered without thinking.

"But I sensed that she really likes you."

Listening to Ayesha words, Jiang Chen paused as his expression turned peculiar.

"Perhaps it is because of Stockholm syndrome." He seemed to be treating her better and better lately as he would always bully her for fun before.

Ayesha only smiled at Jiang Chen's response as she didn't continue the topic.

The instinct of a woman is never wrong.

Even across dimensions.

"I haven't been back for so long, do you miss me?" Jiang Chen all the sudden lowered his head to get closer to Ayesha's ear as he said with a smirk.

Ayesha's beautiful face was burning.

"Let's eat dinner first," She timidly buried her head and said in a faint voice.

"Can we not eat it together?"

"Eat it together?"

Ayesha's face quickly turned into a red apple as her blue pupils began to look frantic.

Without the need to think, it must be some weird game.

...

After dinner, Ayesha went to shower.

After sticking the plates into the dishwasher, Jiang Chen went to the office and checked his email.

Just like he expected, Robert sent the next step to him.

The email was from three days ago.

<The Irish buddy's acting is excellent. I almost want to give him a raise although I don't know if he has the opportunity to spend it. Ahem, now to the serious topic. We can enter the second phase of the plan, I already arranged everything on this side, when will you depart?>

Jiang Chen thought for a moment as he began typing on the keyboard.

<In December.>

After pressing the sent button, Jiang Chen leaned against the chair and closed his eyes for a moment.

While thinking, he took out his phone and called Zheng Hongjie, the manager of the food processing plant under his name.

"Hello? Boss, what can I do for you?"

Hearing his voice, he must be quite well off recently.

"Nothing, I just want to see if you acquired the license for export and import?"

"That is done. The new production line is also set, but because we haven't found a place to sell, it is not in production yet," Zheng Hongjie said in awkwardness.

The food processing industry hasn't been doing so well as of late. The pork price remained elevated as all the plants decreased their production to pass through the industry's harsh winter. But at this time, the boss somehow wanted to increase production. Although he didn't say anything, in Zheng Honejie's view, it was a terrible decision.

But his concern was extraneous because the stuff he produced was not meant for this world.

Jiang Chen had already registered a shell company in the Pannu Islands. In essence, the order from his "left hand" would arrive at his "right hand." The shell company would massively produce the canned foods provided by the Xinlong Food Processing plant, store it in the warehouse, and wait for Jiang Chen to transport it to the apocalypse.

The purchased amount was increasing. To be cautious, Jiang Chen decided to complete the food transport in the small country.

It would be his backyard in no time.

"The new production line will start producing tomorrow."

"But..." For the consideration of being responsible for the plant, Zheng Hongjie still wanted to convince his boss, but Jiang Chen continued to speak.

"No buts. You will receive an order worth five million tomorrow, keep up the good work. I have already made the deal." Jiang Chen laughed, hung up the phone, and sent a text to the representative at the offshore company.

Zheng Hongjie dumbfoundedly puts down the phone, scratched his nose and laughed.

"Did something good happen?" Kong Jie looked at the expression on her husband's face as she felt happy for him.

"Haha," Zheng Hongjie flung away the phone and gave a deep kiss to his wife, "We have a place to sell now!"

Kong Jie rolled her eyes as she poked his chest with her finger.

"Look how excited you are, it is not your plant."

"What do you know." Zheng Hongjie glanced at his wife as he said displeasingly, "I have built the plant myself. Regardless if the shareholder is me or not, it is my own child!"

Looking at her excited husband, Kong Jie had a genuine smile on her face.

Not long ago, the family was facing the crisis of being crushed by debt. He didn't have a trace of a smile left on his face as if the world had fallen.

But luckily, the family has returned to the right track.

For that person has changed their lives.

"Now that you are working for someone, you should be careful, don't make any mistakes. He is our family's savior." She urged the happy husband as she fixed his collar.

"Of course, you know why I work." Zheng Hongjie said with his head raised.

Jiajia tilted her head as she half knowing half not knowingly looked at her mom and dad.

She still didn't really understand the conversation between adults.

No mean people have been to her house anymore. Dad was happier, mom smiled more, and they even took her to the amusement park yesterday.

It seemed like after the big brother came, everything in the family became better.

Chapter 216: Recent News

Unlike the tense situation in the apocalypse, the development in the modern world had been smooth and steady. For newly emerging technology companies like Future Technology, the government had been supportive as they have given the green light to Jiang Chen in most areas of development.

Of course, the reason why the local government took a such a stance was obviously due to the hundred million in tax amount Future Technology paid each month.

Who wouldn't mind putting a money printer in their home? It was a political achievement. And Future Technology had only been formed how long ago? If it continues to grow, there will be a possibility that an internet giant, like Penguin, would form during their tenure.

On the other hand, because of the continuous growth of Future 1.0's user base, the domestic users had broken the 200 million mark, and the multi-language international users had broken the 400 million mark.

The rise of Future 1.0 drew in the attention of business elites from all industries who had an acute sense for the smell of cash, and all kinds of proposals for partnership came forth like snowflakes. Because of this, Xia Shiyu had been busy all over the place since the president of the company would always disappear...

Even people outside of the industry knew that in the internet age,

traffic is king. This could be seen through ridesharing, take out, or other businesses using the O2O(1) model. Companies were willing to invest heavily in marketing just to draw in traffic.

But there was no need for Future 1.0 to spend that much since it was at the forefront of the artificial intelligence and performance enhancement industries. There were no competitors right now that could compete with Future Technology, so there was only one choice.

Because of their monopoly in performance enhancement, after operating for free for two months, Future Technology "shamelessly" changed the service to a paid subscription model. New users would receive two months of free trial, but on the third month, if they wanted to continue enjoying the service, they must spend 10 RMB to upgrade to VIP1.

To put it in simple terms, if you wanted to enjoy the speed of a 2000 smartphone with a 1000 smartphone, then you better pay the 10 RMB subscription fee.

Would people pay for performance enhancement? The answer was, "Certainly".

Think of all the games and apps that are originally unable to run on your phone. Due to the performance enhancement service of the Future 1.0, your phone would no longer become a scorching brick when you play games, and neither would you have to worry about your battery life when you watch a movie. Would you be able to go back to that kind of phone experience?

A fee of 10 RMB per month was much cheaper than getting a new phone.

Of course, when the subscription service was introduced, the forums were filled with negative opinions. The users that hadn't paid for VIP voiced out that it was fraud—they didn't know there would be a fee when they downloaded. Some people even stated that if it changed to a paid service, they will delete Little White.

But that was only a small amount of people trying to shift the publics' opinion. Although there were a lot of users expressing their dissatisfaction, those came from a few IPs only. Even if they use their butts to think(2), it was obvious that they must be an internet army hired to shift the public's opinion.

A lot of paid users who upgraded to VIP1 stood on Future Technology's side:

"Is 10 RMB a lot? It's not even the price of a meal."

"Service is not an obligation, why complain so much? Delete it if you want to, don't drag down the average user's intelligence."

The users who haven't paid held an indifferent opinion. As long as the service was worth the price, they didn't mind spending the money. If they could afford a phone, why would they care about 10 RMB?

Would the people who were causing a fuss really delete Future 1.0?

The VIP1 domestic users who upgraded that month surpassed the 200 million mark, and the insanely high percentage of paid users destroyed the QQ membership service.

The market had given its answer.

As for the international market, it went relatively smooth. Since they were already used to paying for apps, and because no cracked version existed, most of the users accepted the fee of 2 USD a month.

Just one membership service in the app brought billions of revenue to Future Technology.

The insane ability to rake in money stunned Wall Street, leaving the venture capitalists who were unable to get a cut of this piece of pie in despair... all this despite Jiang Chen never mentioning that he would take in venture capitalists.

It was an honor. Jiang Chen became the first man to be in the headlines for Wall Street Journal twice in just half a year — a man from China, nonetheless.

On the other hand, although the performance of <New Era> paled in comparison to the stunning performance of Future 1.0, it was still able to achieve jaw-dropping results.

First of all, the <New Era> player base had reached over 50 million, and the concurrent users almost broke the 10 million mark.

The auction house, cosmetics, warehouse expansion, and a series of other revenue generation method quickly turned intellectual property into cash. The super game design translated into user retention. Now on any subway, or in any university classroom, the fine animation of <New Era> could be seen.

The game editor provided by Yao Yao was immensely powerful. Almost anything that could be imagined could be implemented into the game. The <New Era> project team had increased to a group of 40 people, with 20 responsible for creating new content and the rest focused on character design, costumes, plot, and missions.

Whether it was about game content or playability, it was all flooded with positive praises and, after a period of marketing, the international version also came online.

Based on Xia Shiyu's report, the international users had exceeded the eighty million mark, and it was steadily increasing.

Although the $200 million profit was a bit lackluster when compared to Future 1.0, it still exceeded that of its competitors by far.

It was, after all, $200 million in profit, not revenue.

Even though a lot of mobile games could break the $100 million mark in revenue, because of the expenses for research and development, in addition to the bad debts and many other factors, it was considered profitable if thirty percent of the revenue turned into actual profit.

A mobile game with $200 million profit was a miracle.

Due to the popularity of the game, a lot of famous clans entered <New Era>, and smaller game clans also sprouted like bamboo shoots after the rain. The popularity of the game also led to the growth and development of other related industries.

For example, live streaming professional matches...

A lot of third-party platforms had come to Future Technology in the hopes of forming a partnership with them on the game <New Era>. In regard to this, Future Technology opened its doors and welcomed all potential partners.

...

"Sohu wants to form a partnership based on Future 1.0 and <New Era>, with a joint venture for a new kind of streaming platform for <New Era>."

"What do you think about this proposal?" Jiang Chen said sluggishly as he lied on the sofa.

"Hard to recover the investment in the short term, but it would expand <New Era>'s influence and increase user retention—"

"Thank you so much!"

As if she had already expected Jiang Chen to say that, Xia Shiyu, who was sitting in the office, facepalmed.

"... Okay, also, Dalmer Corporation's representative had arrived in Wanghai as they wish to discuss a partnership. Because of the identity of their representative, based on etiquette, you would have to personally meet him."

"Dalmer Corporation?" Jiang Chen paused as he never heard this name before.

Xia Shiyu on the other side of the phone also paused.

"The Maybach S600 you are driving is from Dalmer corporation."

[Now that's embarrassing!]

Jiang Chen scratched his face to cover his embarrassment,. He really didn't know much about cars.

"Ahem, who is coming?" He decided to change the topic.

"Carmen Rothschild."

1. O2O: "Online to offline". Any e-commerce service that provides services online to aid the user with a better offline shopping experience. The "services" could be in the form of 'discounts', 'information', 'coupons', etc. For example, the website Groupon is an O2O site: it provides discounts online for offline things, such as "Up to 52% off Nail Services".

2. "Even if you use your butt to think" is an expression stating how obvious something is.

Chapter 217: Artificial Intelligence + Cars?

"Nice to meet you, Mr. Carmen Rothschild." Seeing Carmen entering the conference room, Jiang Chen stood up and greeted him.

"Thank you for your warm welcome. It is also nice to meet you, Mr. Jiang Chen, the mysterious Oriental man." With the same friendly smile, Carmen shook Jiang Chen's hand.

Carmen Rothschild had a high nose, deep eye sockets, and light green pupils. Not only did he look thin, but he was also sharp. From the gracefulness of his gesture, it certainly matched his background.

"Haha, do I look mysterious?" Jiang Chen joked.

"Of course, you possess an endless amount of possibilities, and in our eyes, it could be considered mysterious." Carmen had a deceptive smile on his face.

Hearing that, Jiang Chen paused slightly to think before he smiled and invited Carmen to sit down.

In regard to the Rothschild family, Jiang Chen had heard quite a bit about them; however, this information usually came from unclear sources, with truths mixed with speculations. It was hard to discern what was the truth and what was a lie.

Based on the information disclosed, the Rothschild Banking Group had a revenue of less than $10 billion per year with the profit of less than $3 billion; its asset was estimated to be below $30 billion, which is a few digits off of the US and major European banks.

Could it be that the family was truly on the decline, like how it appeared on to be on the surface, or could it be that the speculations were true—that the Rothschild family intentionally left the eyes of the public? No one would truly know. For example, even Jiang Chen didn't know that Dalmer corporation was a part of the Rothschild's asset.

Of course, Jiang Chen had no interest in researching the history of the family, and he just did a brief search on Carmen here for business before inviting him over for a conference.

The two sat across from each other on the conference table, and there were two cups of tea on the table alongside two identical documents.

"Our corporation is extremely interested in your company's achievement in the artificial intelligence field. I trust that Mr. Jiang has already read over this proposal. Do you have any good suggestions?" Without any small talk, right after they sat down, Carmen jumped straight to the topic.

Artificial intelligence will experience a period of growth for the next fifty years; this trend was evident from the wasteland. Although its starting point from the Cold War did diverge from what originally occurred in the wasteland, the developmental

trajectory of civilization wouldn't.

To cut a piece of this pie for themselves(1), Dalmer corporation followed the trend and found the leading company in the artificial intelligence field to discuss the possibility of using artificial intelligence in the automotive industry.

"Of course. But before we start, can I ask a question?" Jiang Chen asked with a smile.

"Please." Carmen smiled back.

"Why would your company decide to choose us? You know, our leading edge is in the phone software industry. For the automotive industry, without exaggeration, I can say we know nothing," Jiang Chen spoke candidly.

Even with Jiang Chen's confession, Carmen didn't give up as he shook his head and continued:

"It doesn't matter. The radar sensing equipment, as well as the primary control computer, had already been designed by us to allow for artificially intelligent driving, or self-driving, and we now only need the software part.

"We originally had a partner, but during our partnership, the software development experienced some issues, causing the software and hardware to not be perfectly compatible with one another. The computer may freeze while the car is driving. You

know very well what the consequences would be if that were to happen on a highway; therefore, we terminated the contract."

Then, Carmen looked at Jiang Chen intensely as he said, "Our offer is high. The requirements are just as high."

"Can I ask what is the offer then?" Jiang Chen took a sip of the tea.

"1 billion USD," Carmen pointed out one finger as he slowly said.

Hearing Carmen's offer, Jiang Chen was secretly shocked.

[Woah, no wonder they are a family that had existed for centuries. 1 billion USD as the opening for the negotiations, selling software is much more profitable than selling gold.]

While he was thinking, he chose to selectively forget the fact that he was already the president of a ten billion dollar company, and the one billion USD would only be equivalent to Future Technology's one month of profit.

But who wouldn't mind more money?

However, Jiang Chen's silence was, in Carmen's eyes, interpreted as being unsatisfied with the offer, so he smiled and asserted, "Of course, there is room for negotiation. If Mr. Jiang is not too happy with the offer, you can tell me."

If they could pioneer into the field of "artificial intelligence and cars" before their competitors, Volkswagen and BMW, it would indeed offer them the initiative. And for only 1 billion USD. In 2014 Dalmer's pretax income alone was 10.8 billion Euros, so they certainly had the liquid asset.

Jiang Chen thought for a moment before he slowly opened his mouth.

"1 billion USD is okay, but I have a condition."

Carmen's eyebrows raised slightly, but a smile quickly returned to his face.

"Oh? Please go ahead."

"I want to add in Future 1.0's logo on the start up screen."

"Add in Future 1.0's logo? Is that all? I do have to remind you that we don't have plans to add the social media platform to the vehicle," Carmen spoke in a humorous tone.

"That's fine, it's only adding a logo and displaying it for one second." Jiang Chen didn't mind the joke.

Carmen had to think for a moment before he nodded his head, then he extended his hand.

"So I think we reached an agreement, right?"

"Of course." Jiang Chen shook his hand. "Pleasure to work with you."

Because it was a minor change, Carmen also brought in a professional lawyer with him and the contract was fixed on the spot.

After the signing, Carmen waved his hand at the secretary behind him as he took a briefcase from her.

"After signing the confidentiality agreement, our party will provide the requirements of the software and the chip sample to your party. Your party only needs to create a software that is compatible with the chip. Although the timeline is fairly rigid, I trust your party's ability to bring out astounding results before May."

The software must be completed by that time to ensure that it would hit the market with the new vehicles; otherwise, the approval process would be delayed and the release of the new vehicle would, unfortunately, be disastrous.

However... May? That was severely underestimating Yao Yao's ability.

"Of course, another question: is there any reward for completing

it before the deadline?" Jiang Chen inquired half-jokingly.

Surprised, Carmen didn't even think Jiang Chen could complete it before the deadline. The process for developing a professional software wasn't short—it would be a feat to complete it within five months.

"If Mr. Jiang can complete it earlier, I can give you a small gift," Carmen laughed.

"Could you give me a spoiler of the gift?" Jiang Chen said casually.

"I heard Mr. Jiang's vehicle is our company's Maybach S600. Is Mr. Jiang satisfied with our brand?" Carmen smiled mysteriously.

"Of course, whether it's comfort or reliability, it is satisfying."

"If Mr. Jiang can complete the software before May, I can gift you a limited edition sports car—the Maybach EX, which is still being designed—with sales limited to just five units globally."

1. Original translation says something similar to, "To get a grasp on the pulse of the era".

Chapter 218: The Importance of Brand

The Maybach EX. With a limited quantity of five units globally, the expected price is 4.2 million Euros or 28.66 million RMB.

Although this amount was nothing compared to the two's assets, as a gift, it was undoubtedly a friendly gesture.

Especially with it being a limited edition, it might be difficult to buy one even with money.

After sending Carmen out of the company, Jiang Chen looked at his phone.

It was only three in the afternoon, too early to go back. So, he decided to sit for a bit longer in the office.

Since they acquired Lingyu Technology, the Lingyu building went under construction. Under the acquiescence of the second largest shareholder, 361, was transferred to Future Technology and officially renamed the Future Technology building.

Now that he had his own office building, it certainly felt different.

Leaning against the chair, Jiang Chen sat in the president's office on the top floor as he sluggishly looked down at the street view outside.

It was a magical feeling.

Just half a year ago, he was only an ordinary person at the lowest level of society and working for a tiny salary. But now, he has obtained the right to be overlooking everything.

On the other hand, just looking at the scene below, he could not fathom that the future on another timeline would become barren land.

...

Different from the image of a traditional president that always has a heated face, ready to execute the affairs of the company, he was young and energetic. His office was clean, referring to the lack of documents visible.

His eyes lazily stared outside of the window, at the never-ending traffic and the busy looking crowd.

Who knows what is there to look at. Other than being crowded, he couldn't think of a better word to describe everything on the streets below.

Above was Xia Shiyu's perspective.

She was standing in Jiang Chen's office.

Jiang Chen was quietly looking out the window, and she somehow began to stare at the side of his face. She observed him for a while and forget about the time.

They had been working together for a fair amount of time now, but she always felt that she didn't know him well enough. But he, he seemed to know everything about her.

"Ahem, is there something you need?" It was Jiang Chen that first broke the peacefulness.

With Jiang Chen's observation, the moment she came in he noticed her. What he didn't expect was for her to not say anything, but rather blankly stare at him.

Speaking of this, he didn't have a proper conservation with her after the last gathering.

"Ah, yes. Ahem," Realizing the franticness in her voice, Xia Shiyu coughed gently to adjust her mood as she changed into her professional self and spoke again, "It's about the agreement with Dalmer Corporation."

"Mhmm."

Jiang Chen turned around as he slid the chair back to the office table and sat up straight. "Go ahead."

"Putting Future 1.0 on vehicles, President, do you plan on

entering the automotive industry?" Xia Shiyu pushed up her glasses out of habit.

"Not yet, but I don't eliminate this future possibility." Jiang Chen shook his head. "Also, Dalmer Corporation wants a customized software, not the implementation of Future 1.0. The software would still be sent to the overseas market to be developed. I will take care of it."

Based on Jiang Chen's plan, Future Technology would obviously not give up on the attractive automotive industry. As a key selling point, artificial intelligence would definitely be a part of it.

But then, why would he accept Dalmer Corporation's request to design the autonomous driving system's software? It was not giving them a cake to bite but was due to another level of consideration.

It is well known that for vehicles, quality is one aspect, but more importantly, brand is extremely crucial which requires years to build up.

With a simple example, East Wind's vehicle quality is pretty high, but could they sell it at Mercedes or BMW's price?

To a certain extent, the car driven by the owner reflected the status of the person. Cars were no longer only a method of transportation, but also a reflection of status. Or in derogatory terms, to see who has the bigger d*ck. With a Lambo, it would be much easier to pick up girls than a Volkswagon.

The reason why he proposed including Future 1.0's logo on the car's startup screen was not for advertisement purposes. For Dalmer's new car is positioned as a high-end luxury vehicle, therefore sales would be low. Which indicates this form of advertisement would be ineffective.

Jiang Chen saw the brand. If Future 1.0's brand can be hooked to a high-end market, with the luxury vehicle introduced by Dalmer Corporation, it would allow them to prep the market before they independently enter the autonomous vehicle market.

Imagine this, as long as you start the luxury vehicle with the system included, you would see Future 1.0's flashy and futuristic looking logo. Naturally, the Future logo would be known in the luxury market as well as the automotive industry.

As to the automotive manufacturer who had taken the "initial opportunity"...

If Jiang Chen introduced a new energy vehicle with better performance, it would be a question of if those manufacturers would continue to exist or not. Similar to the fact that you don't see steam vehicles anymore.

Dalmer Corporation would eventually become the stepping stone of Future Automotive.

Of course, these are stories for a later time, the next strategic focus for Future Technology was not cars, but phones.

Xia Shiyu nodded after the explanation.

"Then you'll have to be responsible for taking care of this. On the other hand, Linhua Corporation has sent you an invitation to join the Wanghai Economics Forum on the 3rd."

Xia Shiyu took out a gilded golden invite from her brief and placed it on the table.

Linhua Corporation, a renowned real estate giant in Wanghai city. Other than real estate development, they were also a part of entertainment and retail which put them as one of the leading companies in Wanghai.

"Wanghai Economics Forum?" Jiang Chen picked up the invite as he raised his eyebrows in confusion, he has never heard of the name before.

"Mhmm, it is rumored that the participants are the elites of each industry. Assets over one hundred million is only one of the requirements. Ability to participate is also based on influence in the industry." Xia Shiyu nodded.

Rich people's gathering?

Jiang Chen's expression was dubious.

"Is there any benefits to going to this gathering?"

Hearing Jiang Chen asking the question so directly, Xia Shiyu felt exasperated.

"Of course there are benefits. Since it is the gathering of the upper class in Wanghai, you'll be able to meet and befriend some of the people at the same level with similar interest as you. These connections alone would be a form of asset."

Jiang Chen scratched his chin and considered.

"Mhmm, I'll go then. Speaking of this, does this type of gathering require a female companion?"

Xia Shiyu paused for a second before she replied.

"Of course, it is permitted to bring a female companion to the gathering."

"Perfect, then come with me," Jiang Chen said without thinking.

But what he didn't anticipate was, the moment the words came out of his mouth, Xia Shiyu's cold face suddenly turned burning red.

Chapter 219: The Conspriacy killed in its Cradle

"Huh? N...No, only really important people can attend..." Xia Shiyu's expression was obviously shaken as her tone changed into a rare franticness.

"Then that's even better." Jiang Chen smiled.

Hearing that, Xia Shiyu buried her head as her silky, black bangs slightly hid her eyes.

"I, I am someone important to you?"

"Of course," Jiang Chen answered without hesitation.

As the CEO, Xia Shiyu played a pivotal role in Future Technology's current accomplishments. From the operating of the company to handling crises, Jiang Chen had no experience at all as he left everything to Xia Shiyu.

The technology from the future is indeed powerful, but without the operations of a professional, it would only be a powerful technology.

To Jiang Chen, Xia Shiyu was as crucial as his hands.

But for the word "important", the two apparently had two

different kinds of interpretation.

When he heard Jiang Chen's "of course," Xia Shiyu's face turned redder.

"But...But we haven't even dated, we don't know if we are right for each other, it would be too rushed if we go straight to the last step-"

With arms across her chest, Xia Shiyu looked away. Her finger anxiously played with her own hair, even her pale neck was covered by the red hue.

"Wait, I do not understand..." Jiang Chen immediately interrupted Xia Shiyu with a bitter smile.

Xia Shiyu looked at him and put her arms down.

"Mhmm?"

"Uh, the requirement for the female companion, could you explain it to me..."

Of course, the two had a discrepancy in understanding.

It was okay to bring a female companion, but it must be a wife or at least a fiance. Even a girlfriend wasn't enough. Although there was no written rule, it became the norm.

If a girlfriend or even a mistress could be brought to the gathering, then things could become chaotic. Most of the people participating in the gathering have more than one mistress, with some changing models or actresses every few days. If anyone can be brought into the circle, it would devalue the forum.

In the end, it was a gathering meant for the elites, to find partners beneficial to their career, it was not a fun kind of party.

Therefore, it was inappropriate to invite Xia Shiyu.

"Uh, sorry, I haven't thought about that level," Jiang Chen apologized, feeling embarrassed.

"It's okay."

Xia Shiyu let out a breath of relief.

Perhaps it was his illusion, but he sensed that she was slightly disappointed.

"Umm, now that everything is done, I'm going to go back to my office." Xia Shiyu slightly bowed and turned around to leave.

Looking at her leave, Jiang Chen opened his mouth but he didn't end up saying anything.

When Xia Shiyu came of the office, she headed straight for her own. But when she walked through the hallway, the red hue on her face was seen by her colleagues.

"Eh, CEO Xia just walked out of the president's office." Seeing Su Mengqi's pouting expression, her good friend Li Fengying poked her arm and joked.

After passing through the probation period, she was moved into the sales department with her good friend. The two were walking to their desk with documents in hand.

"I see," Su Mengqi replied without any energy.

"Her face is also very red."

"Woo."

"Why are you so boring, aren't you curious about what they did?" Li Fengying with a dubious expression whispered into Su Mengqi's ear.

"I am going to tell CEO Xia and have your salary deducted." Su Mengqi stuck out her finger and "fiercely" poke her good friend's neck as she whispered.

The two fooled around for a moment more as they walked towards their desk.

But Su Mengqi's smile was bitter.

If the competition was CEO Xia, she had no odds of winning at all.

...

"Did you get the information?"

"Yes."

Inside the presidential suite in Sheraton hotel, Carmen Rothschild sat on a chair, a black man was standing in front of him. From the muscular appearance, he looked like a soldier, at least one from not too long ago.

Johnson served in the Fran foreign military before. After he has been discharged, he had acquired French nationality and worked in a security company. Now, he worked for the Rothschild family. He was the bodyguard for Carmen's Han trip, and also his assistance.

"Jiang Chen, born in 1992, from Hucheng. Studied at Wanghai University with a major in mechanical engineering. He became a salesperson in a clothing store after graduation... Damn, a resume made out of a mold," Looking at the stack of paper, Carmen cursed.

Ten pages. It was all the information they could collect on Jiang Chen.

"Since everyone in this country is cut out of the same mold," Johnson cracked a smile as he mocked.

"No, you didn't understand my meaning." Carmen flipped through the document once more before putting it aside. "Because it is too ordinary, the validity of the information is suspicious. For example, if you throw a graduate from MIT, what would be his first reaction?"

"Pee his pants?"

"Exactly." Carmen snapped his finger and pointed at the document. "And this person, not only did he not pee his pants, he saved an American from the IS. This American is also an interesting individual. He smuggled firearms in Veit before, transported crude oil in Iran, and was finally under surveillance by the FBI. That's why he is a lot more obedient. But he has been moving around again, he seems to be working for Jiang Chen."

Johnson's contempt soon faded as he put on a serious expression.

"True. From this point, this Han called Jiang Chen is not a simple character."

"In your opinion, how much training would it take to get to his level?" Carmen smiled.

"Mentality or shooting?"

"Of course mentality."

Thinking for a moment, Johnson gave a fair answer based on his own experience. "It would take three months in training, three days on the battlefield."

Carmen nodded, he took over a bottle of wine and elegantly poured himself a cup.

"I think there may be inaccuracies in our information. At least this resume is likely fake. The only thing I am curious about now is what does the organization behind him do. They played us in Ukraine, but only ended up taking a few old soldiers away to become trainers, and then built a military base in Nigeria. Interesting."

"Then what's your intention boss?" Johnson asked.

"Maintain status quo and keep in contact. Also, I am interested in where the USB would be sent to?" Carmen with elegance took a sip of the wine as he looked like he was fully in control of the situation.

If everything goes as planned, that briefcase would be sent overseas, with the mysterious technology team taking over.

He left a GPS tracker on the USB which would send the location to his computer.

As long as they know the location of the mysterious organization, they would no longer be mysterious.

When he heard his boss's words, Johnson took a moment to digest the information before he also started to chuckle.

Carmen proposed a toast to Johnson. Then with a cheerful expression, he pressed a few buttons on the laptop.

The map appeared in front of him.

Bang!

The delicate wine glass smashed into pieces after falling on the ground.

Without caring about the wine stain splashed onto his pants, Carmen immediately stood up. With both hands pressed against the table, he stared at the screen.

On his face, his confident expression had vanished.

"How is this possible!"

"What happened?" Johnson walked up hastily, but when he saw the screen, his expression also froze.

<Signal lost>

"We got caught. Looks like we still underestimated him." With a bitter smile, Carmen sat back on the chair in defeat as he rubbed his temple.

Chapter 220: It's all Weibo's fault

Caught? Did Jiang Chen really catch him?

The answer was an obvious no. Jiang Chen was too lazy to carry it as he threw the briefcase into the storage dimension. As for GPS signals that could pass through the dimension, that's only a feat that Lin Lin could achieve.

Now that his storage dimension had expanded to 20 cubic meters, there was no need to consider the lack of space inside. Five cubic meters was used to store weapons, such as the PK2000 assault rifle and the kinetic skeleton.

Xia Shiyu had already left. Looking at the empty office, Jiang Chen had nothing else to do.

Work? If he randomly pokes his nose into the company's business, he may not even be helpful with anything—rather, he would be causing more trouble. Since he had already delegated his responsibilities, he must continue the tradition.

If he didn't work, then he was playing games. As the president, merely sitting in the office is an effective method for increasing the morale of the employees.

Mhmm, that's the case.

As Jiang Chen thought, he sunk into the chair and took out his

phone.

Speaking of which, as the developer himself, he hadn't even played his own game.

But thinking that it was too troublesome to register for a new account, he recollected that Future Technology had a partnership with Sohu in streaming. Jiang Chen smiled, searched, and opened Sohu TV.

The new platform was still under development stage, but the Sohu TV now opened a column specific for <New Era>.

Although it was a mobile game, because of the open world, great freedom, superb graphics, and rich contents, a lot of people play it as a computer-based masterpiece.

Seeing its popularity being ranked as number one, Jiang Chen was secretly shocked breathless as he randomly opened a channel.

The screen was big, but the streamer's face covered one-fourth of the screen.

Looking at the exposed whiteness while hearing the flirtatious voice, Jiang Chen put on his headphones.

The female streamer was playing a thief. She was in the middle of a mission, but her control certain sucked. To kill a turtle-like boss, she died five times.

But that was not the crucial point. Every time she died, she would moan in a seductive voice.

"Is this streamer playing a game or moaning in bed..."

Jiang Chen ridiculed while facepalming as he continued the "market research" until the end.

Like this, Jiang Chen sent Friday in.

...

Jiang Chen chatted with the employees about to go off as he walked to the elevator empty-handed.

Just as the elevator door was about to close, Jiang Chen, afraid of trouble, sped up and dashed into the elevator.

Coincidentally, Xia Shiyu was also in the elevator.

Seeing that Xia Shiyu was looking at him strangely, Jiang Chen realized that his action lacked confidence. He smiled shamelessly and said "Hi" to her first.

"How's work today?"

"It's okay, I have been used to being busy. I am taking the rest of the documents home." Xia Shiyu pushed up her glasses.

"Don't work too hard, your health is the most important." Jiang Chen spoke with care.

Xia Shiyu nodded, but from her expression, she didn't seem to plan to listen to Jiang Chen.

"You are working so hard, which is making me, as the president, guilty."

"Then why don't you help me out a bit?" Seeing Jiang Chen being emotional, she couldn't help but mock him.

"Ahem, I'll let the professionals take care of it. If I am doing it, I will only cause a mess. But I can treat you to dinner," Jiang Chen joked.

It was only a joke. Based on Jiang Chen's previous impression of Xia Shiyu, this girl would probably coldly reject it.

But to his surprise, Xia Shiyu took a moment to think about it, then nodded her head.

"Okay, when?"

"Mhmm?" Jiang Chen thought he heard wrong.

"Didn't you say you are going to treat me?" Xia Shiyu raised her eyebrows while tilting her head.

"Uhh, I thought you would reject..."

"Do you want me to reject?" Xia Shiyu asked, downcasted, as she looked at the elevator door.

Jiang Chen was stunned.

The voice sounded like murmuring.

In her eyes, Jiang Chen saw a hint of confusion, and there was also an indescribable feeling.

He suddenly remembered that night.

She was drunk that night when he carried her home.

Under the influence of alcohol, they were very close...

"Who do you like?" The confession-like words swirled around his ear.

If it were not for the phone ringing suddenly, Jiang Chen knew that, with his personality and with Xia Shiyu being forward, he

would not be able to control himself that night.

A crazy but intimate idea overtook his head.

If something did happen between the two that night, how would it feel like now?

"Of course not." Jiang Chen smiled, and with a gentle voice, he asked, "How about tonight?"

"Okay." Xia Shiyu nodded.

When the elevator reached the button, the two walked out of the elevator and into the parking lot.

"Where is your car?" Jiang Chen asked as he took out the key.

"I didn't buy a car yet. I drove company's car last time at the gathering, I usually take the train to work."

Xia Shiyu's response surprised Jiang Chen.

"You are an executive at a billion-dollar company. The bank would not offer a loan to you?" Jiang Chen was puzzled as he opened the door courteously for her like a gentleman.

"I hate loans." Xia Shiyu's mood was down.

Jiang Chen paused for a moment as he then recalled that she originally experienced hardship due to a loan.

"Sorry, I made you remember unpleasant memories."

"It's okay... That time, thank you." Xia Shiyu got in the car and lowered her head.

"Don't worry, everyone has their ups and downs." Jiang Chen sat in the car, strapped on the seat belt, and started the car.

"... I am talking about that time when I was drunk." Her face turned red as she said embarrassingly, "If I said something weird, I hope you didn't mind."

Because they both remembered the intimacy that happened in the living room, the two fell into silence together.

The ride was smooth.

Once the car hit the highway, Xia Shiyu didn't say anything. Jiang Chen didn't know what to talk about either, and the atmosphere in the car was awkward.

Suddenly, Xia Shiyu broke the silence.

"I have read Weibo recently."

"Mhmm?"

"Do you have a girlfriend?" It was an abrupt question.

"No, why do you ask?"

"I saw that you are only following one person... Her name is Liu Yao?" Xia Shiyu asked, looking down.

The words sounded like jealousy to Jiang Chen.

Speaking of this, Liu Yao seemed to have mentioned it before. Because she was the only person he followed, people spread rumors about them, and that girl became popular for a while because of this.

Because of Ayesha's "interruption" last time, Jiang Chen forgot all about it. Liu Yao, without receiving permission from Jiang Chen, would not proactively clarify the situation, but instead, used a tactic common among celebrities—answer ambiguously.

The girlfriend of the nation's husband!

Liu Yao wouldn't have thought that her fans would increase exponentially because she registered a Weibo account for Jiang Chen.

"I happen to see her movie, so I just clicked follow." For some reason, Jiang Chen subconscious lied.

His Weibo account was registered by Liu Yao.

Xia Shiyu opened her mouth as she seemed to have wanted to say something, but nothing came out.

[He isn't anyone to me. Why do I care so much?] Xia Shiyu thought out of spite as she looked out of the car window.

Although she had a boyfriend who hasn't even held her hands, when it comes to relationships, she was still as naive as a child.

Realizing that the person she liked had an ambiguous relationship with a female, she didn't try to pull him back to her, but rather, she became cold to express her jealousy and pushed him away.

Even more so now, since the two of them were not officially together.

At this time, Jiang Chen's phone rang.

[Is it Ayesha? I'll have to tell her I am not coming home for dinner...]

He didn't mind. With one hand on the wheel, Jiang Chen

connected to the Bluetooth and, with his eyes focused on the road, he accepted the call.

"Hello?"

"Do you have time right now?" A pure voice with a hint of seduction echoed by his ear. It was obviously not Ayesha.

Jiang Chen paused for a moment, he then looked at the phone screen in his right hand:

<Liu Yao>

Also looking at the phone screen was Xia Shiyu, sitting on the passenger side.

Chapter 221: The Acheron on the Car

"Haven't seen you in a long time, don't you miss me?"

Jiang Chen could very well imagine her watery eyes looking at him filled with fervor.

"Uh, very much." Jiang Chen took a peek at Xia Shiyu.

Xia Shiyu had already taken off her eyes from his phone, but her action looked unnatural no matter how you looked at it.

"So cold." Liu Yao instantly sensed that Jiang Chen was distracted and stuck her tongue out.

"I'm driving... How have you been?" While holding onto the wheel, Jiang Chen changed the topic.

"I've been filming and have been busy since this morning, so I ate lunch and dinner at the same time. I'm exhausted." Although she was complaining, Jiang Chen could hear genuine happiness from her voice.

She really loved acting.

If she just liked money, with the allowance Jiang Chen was giving her, she could just do absolutely nothing and enjoy life.

He could faintly hear the other casts in the background, so she must have called despite her extremely busy schedule.

"Have you not eaten yet?"

"I am not eating. Woo, the food here tastes so bad, so I want you to treat me to a meal," Liu Yao said shyly.

"We can talk about it once you're no longer busy."

"Okay. Also, when are we going to go on a vacation? I'm looking forward to it," Liu Yao responded enthusiastically.

"We'll go this month, but would you be able to leave at this time?" Hearing the delighted voice, Jiang Chen couldn't stop smiling.

"Haha, don't you remember that you're one of the investors? The director would have to listen to you. Postponing my shooting and filming it later would simply be up to you," she said in an adorable voice.

Jiang Chen pondered on it and realized that it was indeed the case.

The producer did not necessarily choose Liu Yao because of her ability, and it might as well be said that it was due to Jiang Chen's ability. But Jiang Chen didn't mind. Having too much money, he immediately invested 100 million RMB to become the biggest

investor in <Ma Dongmei's Trouble> film.

Other than those blockbuster film directors, the investor was the bane of existence for any film directors. If they accidentally got off on the wrong foot, the investors could just withdraw their investment, and the directors would end up crying over their script. Where would you find an investor who would be willing to invest 100 million without putting up any demand?

Ad such, Liu Yao had landed the role of a supporting actress.

At the same time, all mobile boot interface was replaced by Future 1.0's opening animation.

"That's true." Once realization dawned on him, Jiang Chen chuckled.

"What are you doing now?"

"Taking someone to dinner."

"Someone beautiful?" Liu Yao pouted.

"Yes," Jiang Chen answered honestly.

"As pretty as me?" Liu Yao elegantly ate her meal, her eyes becoming cunning.

"Both of you are unique," Jiang Chen’s answer was ambiguous.

"Woo, I don’t feel satisfied with that answer. What kind of girl is she?"

[She's beside me, how am I supposed to answer that?]

Jiang Chen took a peek at Xia Shiyu while he responded cleverly and creatively.

"Similar...to the section head in your last movie."

"Oh! Her, the ice beauty that’s warm on the inside? I can do it too," Liu Yao paused and put her phone closer to her mouth, covered it with her hand, and lowered her voice, her voice becoming cold and strict. "Jiang Chen, why didn’t you finish your math homework? What? You didn’t write it? That’s not okay, come to my office, I will watch you finish it. Your unfinished homework. Give. It, All. To. Your. Teacher."

Jiang Chen could very well fantasize how the vibrant crimson lips enunciated the last syllables.

[Fu*k, this little devil.]

Jiang Chen had almost stepped on the gas by accident.

"Fu*k."

"Coming! Ah, break time is over, I'm going to hang up. Mwah."

As soon as she hung up the phone, Jiang Chen let out a breath and removed the Bluetooth headset.

"...were you really just concerned about Liu Yao?" Xia Shiyu asked dubiously.

"Well, I just happened to get her phone number."

[Why do I have to lie...] Jiang Chen berated himself in his mind.

Xia Shiyu didn’t seem to want to continue with this topic any longer as she didn’t ask more question. Instead, she turned her head away, averting her gaze.

Jiang Chen felt relieved and held onto the steering while focusing on the road ahead of him.

The atmosphere felt odd.

[Is she...being jealous?]

A weird expression flitted across his face.

...

Because Jiang Chen didn’t know where the good food was, he took Xia Shiyu to Shimao.

"Welcome! Table for two?"

Jiang Chen and Xia Shiyu walked into a western restaurant called Xiuyu Garden as the server greeted them with a smile.

"Mhmm, please pick a quiet spot for us," Jiang Chen said.

"Okay, sir. This way," The server said courteously.

Because it was a business day, the place only had a few customers . Normally, they would have to wait for a long time.

The ambiance of the restaurant was pleasant, and it was also quiet. Most of the people dining there were couples. Seeing this scene, Xia Shiyu turned red and her legs went numb.

[Since we're eating here, wouldn’t it look like we're a couple?]

With that thought, Xia Shiyu discreetly took a peek at Jiang Chen but failed to see the nervousness she expected on his face.

[Maybe he didn’t even feel like it's a date?]

Xia Shiyu felt slightly frustrated despite not knowing why.

Unaware of what Xia Shiyu was thinking, Jiang Chen was really oblivious to the mood. He just felt the ambiance was nice and quiet. Men were destined to be a simple creature in a sense that they wouldn’t think as much as women.

After the server ushered them to their seats, Jiang Chen picked up the menu and passed it to Xia Shiyu like a gentleman.

"What do you want to eat?"

Because she was distracted by something else, looking at the dazzling variety of selections, Xia Shiyu couldn’t think of something to eat.

Seeing the expression on the customer's face, the server smiled as she started to recite their menu.

"Is it your first time in our restaurant?"

"Mhmm..."

"Our cheese risotto is delicious, and our steak has also been praised by many. Of course, I personally recommend this set of couple meal, very fitting for a couple of two. We also offer a special desert— Heart-to-heart."

Xia Shiyu’s face immediately reddened.

Especially when she saw the Heart-to-heart ice cream on the menu, the two straws formed a heart shape and intertwined together.

Her brain short-circuited in an instant.

"C-couple? N-no, you are mistaken."

"Ahem, we are only friends, not a couple." Seeing the frantic Xia Shiyu, Jiang Chen also explained to the waitress.

Although both people denied it, the waitress acutely sensed that the female’s expression was more of an embarrassed one, and the male didn’t look awkward at all. Therefore, their relationship must be between friends and couple.

With a smile, the server bowed to apologize for pushing the two together unintentionally.

"I apologize. I just thought you two really look like a couple. If I misunderstood, I hope you don’t mind."

[A, a couple look?]

Xia Shiyu was utterly in panic, Jiang Chen almost touched his nose with a red face.

But then, a harsh voice interrupted the moment.

"Waitress, is it not ready yet? Could you hurry up?"

Upon hearing the voice, Xia Shiyu’s expression froze immediately.

Jiang Chen could clearly sense that the usual expressionless face turned even colder.

Chapter 222: A Dog

"Please wait, sir, this table-"

"Don’t you see that we need to order? Why would a poor bastard even come into a Western restaurant? He's slow even when ordering," the person cursed.

"I apologize, sir, I’ll be right there." The waitress gave Jiang Chen an apologetic looked as she stuck out her tongue and ran to the other table.

"Is your zodiac a turtle... Honey, what do you want to eat?" The man sitting close by arrogantly criticized the waitress while his expression changed into an "affectionate" one as he eagerly attended to the woman sitting across from him.

Jiang Chen looked at the back of this man in shock, and his expression was rather odd.

Poor bastard? Me?

Then, Jiang Chen looked at Xia Shiyu.

Her expression was rather unnatural, her eyes glued to the lemon water on the table. She seemed scary.

Was he someone she knew?

Jiang Chen, who originally wanted to go and "make some friends", quickly got the idea out of his head as he looked on contemptuously at the man.

The man's face looked ashen white, his hair styled with gel looking somewhat "trendy," and the nicely fitted white suit was, indeed, worth something. All in all, other than being a bit feminine, he certainly looked attractive.

However, it was the arrogant gestures that made it impossible to tolerate him.

As for that woman...

Her face was delicate, her hair black and curly, and her body donning a red cotton dress with a pair of brown boots sluggishly crossing over each other. From just her appearance alone, it was hard to judge what her net worth was; however, with the vibe she gave off, Jiang Chen could sense that she was born into wealth.

Looking at her narrowed gorgeous eyes, one can tell that she seemed to be enjoying this flattering feeling.

"Salad is okay?" an indolent voice asked.

"Okay, do you want some desserts? For example, this Heart to Heart-"

"No, it’s disgusting." Her red lips were curled up.

The man’s expression stiffened, but then a heartwarming smile appeared on his face.

"Ok, I’ll have the fried rice as well as a bottle of wine."

"Okay, sir." The waitress endured the arrogant attitude while writing the order before taking the menu away.

It was not the first time she had encountered customers with a bad temper—arguing would only hurt her salary.

"So slow," the man added a sentence, then watched the woman "tenderly".

"Xinyan, you are so beautiful," the man said in a corny voice.

The woman’s expression became delighted as her eyes narrowed pleasingly.

"My shoes are dirty."

"Mhmm?" The man thought he heard wrong.

"Shoes."

The woman lifted her boots up.

A glimpse of awkwardness flashed across the man’s face, but then he gritted his teeth. With one knee on the ground, he lifted her boot up with one hand while the other used a napkin to carefully clean the dust off the top of the boot.

Everyone around them turned their attention towards the duo—the female customers’ eyes lit up as they discussed with their boyfriend while the male customers all appeared contemptuous.

But the man didn’t mind these gazes as he "caringly" wiped her shoes.

"This is crazy."

Jiang Chen shook his head. Seeing his dog-like posture, Jiang Chen finally understood. The man was definitely an escort. He was definitely an escort without dignity...

Jiang Chen lost his interest.

He really didn’t want to bother with someone like this.

But just as he was about to retract his gaze, to his surprise, the woman was looking at him.

The narrowed eyes completely neglected the man who was

attentive to her, but rather, she looked at Jiang Chen with quite a curiosity, as if she was waiting for him to do something.

As for the woman’s stare, Jiang Chen only smiled. He didn’t say much and looked away.

Seeing that Jiang Chen didn't have any reaction, the woman yawned and looked away in displeasure.

The waitress walked over again as she expressed her apology to Jiang Chen and Xia Shiyu. Jiang Chen didn't embarass her as he ordered with Xia Shiyu.

When the waitress left, Jiang Chen took a sip of the lemon water and he asked softly,"Do you know him?"

"... I do."

From the tone, it seemed like the relationship was not a great one. Was he her enemy?

Seeing that Xia Shiyu was not in the best mood, Jiang Chen didn’t pursue the topic any further and, instead, he chatted with her about other things as the smile began to come back.

"Are you not curious about my relationship with him?" Xia Shiyu asked abruptly.

"Although I am curious, you seem to hate this topic, so I didn’t ask," Jiang Chen replied with a shrug.

After a brief two-second pause, Xia Shiyu looked at Jiang Chen and spoke rather apathetically:

"He is my ex-boyfriend."

But, Jiang Chen didn’t show any reaction. Xia Shiyu felt a bit frustrated although she didn’t understand why. Just what kind of reaction from Jiang Chen would make her feel satisfied?

"But we didn’t even hold hands," she added subconsciously.

When Jiang Chen heard this, he suddenly started chuckling.

She raised her furrowed eyebrows and asked in a low voice,"What are you laughing at?"

"I just think you are cute," Jiang Chen joked.

Xia Shiyu immediate blushed, and the coldness on her face now seems forced.

"So random," Xia Shiyu murmured to herself as she lowered her head, her cherry-like lips biting the straw on the ice cream and her bangs hiding her shaken eyes.

While eating, Jiang Chen felt the need to use the washroom, so he excused himself to the washroom.

There, he also washed his face, but when he came out, he met the "queen-like" woman.

"Jiang Chen, is that right?" the woman asked with a grin.

"Do you know me?" He put his hands under the hand dryer as he looked rather surprised.

"The renowned president of Future Technology, with a net worth of ten billion at the age of 22, and the fantasy of countless of girls. With such prominence, how would I not know you?" the woman stated.

"Ahem, you are over complimenting me." At least the waitress, as well as the people he walked by, didn’t recognize him.

Perhaps it had to do with his low profile appearances. Since he spent time in the apocalypse, even if media were waiting outside of his community, they still may not see him...

For the people who occasionally read the news, they may know Jiang Chen’s name, but as for his appearance, they often have no idea.

"What is your name, Miss?" Jiang asked nobly.

The red lips turned into a beautiful curvature, her eyes under the curly hair had mischievousness hidden inside.

"Wang Xinyan."

Chapter 223: Three Slaps

"Is it Wang Xinyan? Maybe you should restrain your boyfriend a little? At least make him not stand out as much." Jiang Chen smiled standing in front of her.

"Boyfriend?" She suddenly started giggling but quickly returned to her elegant self. With a look of rumination, she looked at Jiang Chen. "Mr. Jiang is very humorous. That’s not a boyfriend, it’s more of a puppy."

Stunned, Jiang Chen didn’t think she would be so direct. He then ridiculed.

"Even if it is a puppy, it's better to keep in control of him. Since sometimes, the puppy’s behavior indirectly reflects the taste of the owner."

For a man to attend to her this much, her identity must not be so simple.

Although he was not afraid of anything, with the attitude of less trouble is better, Jiang Chen cautiously chose to leave her some ground.

He only vaguely made fun of her to express his own displeasure.

As if she has already expected Jiang Chen to say this, Wang Xinyan paused but didn’t look angry. Instead, she seemed

somewhat interested.

"Oh? If Mr. Jiang doesn’t like me having a puppy, I can let him go."

"What does it have to do with me?"

"Is that so?"

She smiled mysteriously as she left an ambiguous answer. Wang Xinyan then passed him and entered the washroom.

Jiang Chen watched her silhouette disappear, confused. But then he shook his head and walked away.

When he returned to the restaurant, Jiang Chen discovered that his spot seemed to have been taken.

That man in the white suit was sitting in his seat.

Seeing this, he frowned. Though his expression was soon replaced by a stunning smile as he walked over.

"I can’t believe I am meeting you here, how have you been?"

The comical expression on his face appeared as if he has accomplished something already.

"I don’t know you, go away," Xia Shiyu said coldly.

"You are still icy." The man shook his head.

"Are you not afraid the woman you are trying to suck up will see all of this? While she is going to the washroom, you are hitting on another woman. Just like your usual tendency, Xu Youcheng. Xia Shiyu’s iciness soon changed into contempt.

"Hitting on you? You really think you are worth hitting on? I'm saying hi to an old friend."

"I don’t remember having a friend like you."

"The usual coldness. Looks like you have found a new boyfriend? So, did he touch your hand yet?" Xu Youcheng examined the coldness on her face.

Xia Shiyu inhaled deeply, suppressed the anger in her heart, and said calmly.

"I don’t have a boyfriend. Not before, not now."

"Oh? Then how did you pay back the loan? I remember you lost your job, could it be..." Xu Youcheng slyly glanced at her chest. "Did you finally put down your proudness and got a sugar daddy? Damn ..."

"Do you think I'm like you?" Xia Shiyu emotionlessly interrupted his rude words. Raising her chin, she mouthed, "a sucker without dignity."

Xu Youcheng’s face was flushed with anger as he stood up.

"You-"

But before he could say anything else, a hand was on his shoulder.

Xu Youcheng paused, turned around, and was confronted with a smiling face.

"I agree with the perspective of this lady. Also, who allowed you to sit in my seat." Jiang Chen smiled at him.

Seeing Jiang Chen, Xia Shiyu let out a breath as she felt calmer.

"Funny, did you open this restaurant? What if I did sit here?" Anger soon overwhelmed Xu Youcheng as he argued back.

Right after he finished his words, his mouth was slanted to the side.

Slap!

Jiang Chen without saying anything slapped him with his backhand while still holding onto his shoulder with the other.

"I don’t own the restaurant, and your butt is on your body so wherever you sit is your freedom. But now that I don’t like you, my hand is on my arm and how I beat you is also my freedom," Jiang Chen said with narrowed eyes.

Seeing Jiang Chen’s action, Xia Shiyu was utterly stunned.

She didn’t expect, Jiang Chen with such a gentle attitude would strike so fiercely.

[Is it for me...]

When she thought about it, a red hue began to cover her face.

The slap took the air out of Xu Youcheng as he began to tremble. A strength equal to three times that of an ordinary person, even if Jiang Chen purposely controlled his power, it wasn't someone who only spent a few days in the gym could compare to.

"F*ck you, you f*cking hit me?"

Blood rushed to his head, as Xu Youcheng became hot-headed. He grabbed the knife on the table and stabbed toward Jiang Chen.

"Be careful!" Xia Shiyu screamed as her face lost its color.

But Jiang Chen only laughed contemptuously, he didn’t even bother to dodge as he waited for him to dash over.

Funny, if this level of attack could hurt him, he could suicide by banging his head on the tofu. (1)

The knife reached two inches in front of Jiang Chen. However, Jiang Chen didn’t move as he easily clenched onto Xu Youcheng's wrist.

Xu Youcheng felt as if his hand was clamped by an iron claw. His face became bloated, and the vision in front of face changed before he dropped on the ground.

The knife pierced the wooden floor two inches away from him.

Xia Shiyu’s eyes widened, mouth opened, and her cold expression was changed entirely into shock.

She never thought Jiang Chen had this type of ability.

No...

The night when she was blocked at the flower shop by the thugs.

Jiang Chen strolled in front of Xu Youcheng while seeing him whimpering on the ground, contorting his body together to hide.

The customers on the side gulped as they wanted to intervene, but Jiang Chen only glanced at them before the idea vanished in their heads.

Someone secretly called 911, but Jiang Chen didn’t mind.

While squatting on the ground, he dragged his gelled hair and smiled at him.

Then, Jiang Chen slapped him.

Slap!

"This one is for Xia Shiyu. Do you know that because you left your debt to her, she was almost forced into a private club by a bunch of thugs? She was your girlfriend, are you even human?’

Hearing Jiang Chen’s words, the crowd all looked at the sharp looking Xu Youcheng with despise. No one felt compassion for him for getting beaten up. He deserved it!

If he didn’t happen to encounter that night.

When Jiang Chen thought about it again, he felt an inexplicable rage.

Slap!

"This one is because I don’t like you, you can think of the reason yourself!"

After two slaps, blood began to drip out of Xu Youcheng’s nose and mouth. Seeing that there might be a problem if he continued, Jiang Chen took a deep breath and stopped. Jiang Chen threw Xu Youcheng's head on the ground and stood up

It was not the apocalypse, after all, he should be careful.

In dizziness, it took him awhile to regain his clarity.

On the ground, Xu Youcheng stared at Jiang Chen maliciously.

"Just wait, I will make sure you can’t stay in Wanghai anymore."

"I am waiting."

"Do you know who I am?"

"Someone selling his butt?" Jiang Chen took a napkin to wipe his hand and mocked

"I am Linhua Group’s-"

But just then, a female voice diffused from not too far away mercilessly destroying his last hope.

"You are not anymore."

(1) When the action is less likely to hurt him than a piece of tofu.

Chapter 224: I don't like men

The voice not only contained a hint of sluggishness, but also of contempt.

"Xin... Xinyan?"

Xu Youcheng, lying on the ground, looked absentmindely at the woman not far away as he stammered with disbelief.

"Linhua Group will not offend the head of Future Technology just because of you. What do you think? Mr. Jiang Chen?"

With graceful steps, she walked beside Jiang Chen as she smiled at him.

When Xu Youcheng heard the words "Future Technology" and "Jiang Chen," the color of his face immediately changed. He initially thought that the man dining with Xia Shiyu was just a small business owner with some money in his pockets, but he didn’t know it was the legendary Jiang Chen.

Now that he looked closer, that man did look familiar.

The original blanked expression turned completely into fear.

The Linhua Group? This fact caught Jiang Chen by surprise. Speaking of which, he did receive Linhua Group’s invitation to

attend that Wanghai economic forum. However, Jiang Chen didn’t answer Wang Xinyan’s question and, instead, he responded with a question of his own:

"Although I don’t want to ridicule other people’s hobby, I really don’t understand. What’s so good about this despicable man who sold his girlfriend?"

"Even despicable people have their uses. For example, I could give him the status and power he had always dreamt of, just to see what kind of fool he will turn himself into." Wang Xinyan squinted her eyes, her visage gruesome.

"... This is crazy."

Looking sympathetically at Xu Youcheng on the ground, Jiang Chen stepped over him and headed towards Xia Shiyu.

The server and security personnel of Shimao began to surround the scene, but seeing that Jiang Chen’s identity wasn't so simple, no one dared to do anything to him, and they only helped the bruised Xu Youcheng up. They only controlled the situation while waiting for the police to arrive.

"Xin, Xinyan, I-"

"You can go fu*k off now, I am getting bored of your looks anyways," Wang Xinyan yawned.

Xu Youcheng broke loose from the security, dropping in front of Wang Xinyan’s boots as he begged without dignity, "I, I really do like you! Please, give me another chance!"

"Did you really think you could get me to date you?" Wang Xinyan scoffed, "Sorry, I don’t like men."

Xu Youcheng was utterly dumbfounded.

[Don’t like men?]

[Then what about the effort I spent these past few days?]

As if he had lost all energy in his body, his bruised face twisted and Xu Youcheng looked as though he lost his soul, and both of his hands slumped on the ground.

Back then, after leaving Xia Shiyu, Xu Youcheng drove the car that was purchased with Xia Shiyu’s identity to run away with the person he cheated her for. But then, the story after wasn’t as smooth as he expected. When he lost his "income," he quickly used up all his money. Since he didn't have any ability and only depended on her, he couldn’t find even a proper job. After an argument, he and the girlfriend who he had just met for less a month broke up.

After a series of event, he became a server at a bar. Through one occasion, he was introduced to the escort industry; however, this profession was not a long-term solution. The rich ladies with too

much money and nowhere to unleash their energy would not give him a promise. He tried to do "one last gig" to find a permanent ATM, finally locking his sights on to the daughter of the president of Linhua Group—Wang Xinyan.

Fortunately, Wang Xinyan didn’t brush him like away like a fly but, instead, gave him the opportunity to flatter her.

However, he didn’t think that from the beginning to the very end, he was just a joke used for amusement, unable to touch her hand and just there to wipe her shoes...

Wang Xinyan’s contemptuous smile looked down at the wounded Xu Youcheng, and the smile soon turned into a delighted one.

....

[This feeling is fantastic .]

"Sorry, the one time I invited you to dinner, the mood was ruined by a fly. I’ll make it up to you next time?" Jiang Chen sat in front of Xia Shiyu as he said apologetically.

Xia Shiyu’s face blushed, and she whispered, "No, it’s my problem."

Just then, the chubby boss with glasses walked over. Looking at the knife marks on the ground, along with the crowd, he had a troubled smile on his face.

"It is better to resolve things through peace, why use violence? Both look like people of importance, why fight?"

Jiang Chen obviously saw the boss's intention in his eyes, so he took out a credit card from his pocket and threw it in the boss's lap.

"One million, renovation of the restaurant, on me."

The boss was first shocked, but then his face became ecstatic.

A voice spoke up, "There is no need for Mr. Jiang to spend money, Xiuyu Garden’s loss will be covered by Shimao. Manager Chen, return the card to Mr. Jiang?"

"Mi...Miss?" A cold sweat rolled off of Chen Anmin’s forehead. He just realized that the woman standing in front of the store was President Wang’s daughter, Wang Xinyan.

Shimao was a property of Linhua Group. A small business owner like him definitely did not have the courage to say no to the president’s daughter.

Chen Anmin forced a laugh as he put the card on the table.

Jiang Chen looked at Wang Xinyan speechlessly, and she was blinking at him mischievously.

Her eyes seemed to be saying, "You owe me one."

This favor was indeed cheap... Jiang Chen mocked at the thought in his mind.

One million was really nothing to him.

...

Because someone called the police at the beginning of the conflict, the police quickly arrived at the store.

Xu Youcheng, who lost his "ATM", in despair, blamed all the "unfortunate events" on Jiang Chen. Facing the police, he "not understandingly" insisted that Jiang Chen beat him to this point as he demanded the police to punish Jiang Chen. He also said he will sue Jiang Chen.

Wang Xinyan could not help but facepalm herself due to his intelligence level, and she then grabbed out her phone in annoyance and called her cousin, after which she gave Jiang Chen an apologetic look.

But Jiang Chen didn’t mind as he had a mischievous smile.

In this case, the wisest thing Xu Youcheng could have done would be to say that he bumped on the ground himself and settles with

Jiang Chen privately. Perhaps he would have even received a large sum.

But now...

Funny, would Jiang Chen be afraid of him suing?

The video showed that it was, indeed, Jiang Chen who struck first. But it was not a problem, especially when Wang Zhiyong personally ran over to the police department.

Because of Xu Youcheng's insistent stubbornness, following the procedure, Jiang Chen had to go to the police department to give testimonies, and then accept a negotiation of settlement.

That's right, negotiation of settlement.

After communicating with their superior, the police selectively ignored the bruise on Xu Youcheng's face, and instead, they determined the event to be a civil dispute. They then began to explain to Xu Youcheng his act of aggression through the eyes of the law, saying he provoked Jiang Chen; therefore, who started the fight first would not matter. Furthermore, he had used a knife, which would void any claims of self-defense due to its excessive nature.

After a long spiel, Jiang Chen—who was bored already—left, and the defeated Xu Youcheng was still sitting on the chair, listening to the educating officers as he experienced the unjustness of society.

Accompanying Jiang Chen out of the police department, Wang Zhiyong conscientiously sat in the driver's seat of Maybach as he asked with a bitter smile, "How did you get involved with that little devil?"

[Little devil?]

"Do you know Wang Xinyan?" Jiang Chen’s expression was also odd.

"My cousin." After starting the car, Wang Zhiyong said, "Speaking of this, where is your girlfriend?"

"Ahem, that is not my girlfriend, only female friend... I asked her to go back first."

Wang Zhiyong chuckled as he looked dubiously at Jiang Chen while he drove on the road.

"I know."

"Don’t be so sick minded." Jiang Chen was facepalming.

"Also, I need to tell you something," Wang Zhiyong suddenly used a more serious tone as he said to Jiang Chen, "This is the advice from a friend, be careful of that woman, Wang Xinyan, and don’t get too close to her."

"Oh? Is there a problem with her?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

"Problem? She is a psycho," Wang Zhiyong cursed out.

Chapter 225: Confusion

Psycho?

Jiang Chen's expression was peculiar.

By Wang Zhiyong's tone, he didn't seem to have a good relationship with his cousin.

But this was not the key point. The key point was, Wang Xinyan is Wang Zhiyong's cousin?

Therefore, one of the top companies in Wanghai city, the president of Linhua Group Wang Linhua, is the brother of the General Secretary of Wanghai city, Wang Haide? That was a big discovery.

But when Jiang Chen thought this through, he was at ease.

For business in the real estate industry, all had to have some form of connection with the government. Buying land, acquiring projects, passing quality assurance, the government is involved in every step of the way. Without any background, regardless of how profitable the real estate industry is, it would be hard to make money.

But Jiang Chen didn't think that Linhua Group's connections were this strong.

"Psycho?" Jiang Chen used a casual tone to ask.

"That’s right." With a cigarette in his mouth, Wang Zhiyong scorned. "A little bit when she was young, then it turned serious when she got older. Who knew what happened to her, but personality-wise she has changed to this."

"Naughty?’ Jiang Chen laughed.

Because Wang Zhiyong was her cousin, Jiang Chen used a light tone when describing her.

"Naughty?" Wang Zhiyong glanced at Jiang Chen. "You underestimate her. She just purely enjoys the misery of people."

Jiang Chen was shocked, but then a nonchalant smile appeared on his face.

Whatever, they just happen to encounter each other.

"Also," Wang Zhiyong abruptly spoke out, "Did you receive the invitation?"

"Invitation?"

"Wanghai Economic Forum."

"Mhmm, Linhua Group did send me an invitation, is there a problem?" Jiang Chen felt lost.

Wang Zhiyong hesitated for a moment as if he wanted to say something, but then he shook his head.

"It’s fine, it’s nothing. Don’t worry about it."

Jiang Chen eyebrows furrowed slightly as he sensed something odd. But seeing that Wang Zhiyong didn’t want to say anything more, he didn’t ask further.

In the time remaining, they just joked around as they didn't mention business anymore.

He listened to Wang Zhiyong talk about the fun things that happened in the military. Finally, the car drove into a community and parked in front of a house.

"Have dinner with us?" Wang Zhiyong invited Jiang Chen while chuckling.

"It’s okay, I already ate," Jiang Chen opened the driver door as he thanked him for his invitation.

After departing from Wang Zhiyong’s place, Jiang Chen started the car again and drove to his mansion located in Songjiang.

When he returned at home, it was already pitch black outside. He looked at the time as it was already nine in the evening.

He parked the car inside the garage and rubbed Ayesha’s head, who waiting at the door with a smile. Jiang Chen then went to take a shower.

After the shower, he changed into a comfy robe. He drank some hot milk and rested for a while, before going to the kitchen and throwing two boxes of mango pudding into the storage dimension. Finally, he walked to the bedroom.

In front of the bedroom door, he saw Ayesha in a black night dress. Her curled brown hair was covered by droplets of water and tied into a ponytail with white lace.

From the white steam on her head, she just took a shower and dressed herself up.

"Can we sleep together?" Ayesha’s face was flushed, her tender eyes filled with love.

"Sorry, probably can’t tonight. I need to go back to the other side," Jiang Chen said apologetically.

He must go back to the apocalypse tonight to give the sample chip and USB to Yaoyao and then ask Sun Jiao about the movements of Seventh Area to determine the next steps for the base. Sun Jiao would not let him go back this late...

Although slightly disappointed, Ayesha still nodded her head empathetically.

Seeing the slight pout, Jiang Chen smiled lovingly. He rubbed her wet hair and put his forehead against hers.

"Tomorrow morning, I will wake you up."

Ayesha's face became hot as she nodded shyly.

"Mhmm."

Jiang Chen kissed her pale and soft forehead, before walking out of the bedroom and closing the door.

He inhaled, closed his eyes, and started the interdimensional travel.

...

When he opened his eyes again, the beautifully decorated wall was replaced by a wall with visible cracks.

He breathed out the air from the modern world and immediately headed out of the room.

Before finding Yaoyao, Jiang Chen decided to go to Lin Lin’s lab to bring her the mango pudding she wanted.

"Eh? You are back already." Surprised by Jiang Chen’s presence, Lin Lin put the test tube in her hand on the test rack.

"I will head back immediately." Jiang Chen took out the two mango puddings and put it on her table. "Your puddings."

Seeing the mango pudding, Lin Lin’s eyes immediately turned into pudding as she snatched the box and hugged it joyfully.

Seeing her joyful look, Jiang Chen couldn’t help but smile.

"Don’t overeat at night, take care of your stomach."

"Don’t worry! I am a digitalized human!" Lin Lin clenched her fist as she said proudly.

"Then do what you want. Freeze the rest in the fridge, it tastes better cold," Jiang Chen turned around as he finished speaking.

"Wait."

Lin Lin suddenly jumped down to the ground, ran to the door, and dragged onto Jiang Chen’s shirt.

"Hmm?" Jiang Chen turned around looking at Lin Lin.

"Hmm, thank you..." It was rare for this girl expressed her gratitude. She also didn’t say her usual foolish words like "The offering you have is making me pleased."

Looking at the coy Lin Lin, Jiang Chen was unsure of how to react.

"Don’t worry about it."

"Are you here just to give me the mango pudding?" With a blushing face, Lin Lin said shyly.

Her expression seemed to be anticipating a specific answer.

With eyebrows raised, a smirk irrepressibly appeared on his face.

"Of course not, I am back to give a USB to Yaoyao."

"QQ!"

Lin Lin’s eyebrows twisted in disappointment. She put up her fist and fiercely punched Jiang Chen in the chest, then she stomped on her slippers and ran back to the room, slamming her door in a fit.

With the wooden door shut, Jiang Chen still tried to muffle his

laughter.

Finally a chance to bully Lin Lin once again. It was surprisingly fun.

Jiang Chen then shook his head and walked upstairs.

Chapter 226: I only need two hours

Jiang Chen stood outside of Yaoyao's room, and he gently knocked on the door.

Knock knock.

"Yaoyao, are you there?" Jiang Chen spoke softly.

It was a bit past ten already, he was not sure if Yaoyao had slept already.

"Ah, Brother Jiang Chen? Coming!" The loli's surprise and joyful voice transmitted from the other side of the door, then immediately followed the sound of cotton slippers on the ground.

The door was pulled open. Yaoyao's head peaked out as she looked at Jiang Chen in excitement.

"Are you back already?"

"Mhmm, although I have to go back tomorrow." Seeing her adorable face, Jiang Chen couldn't help but rub her hair.

With her head raised, her narrowed eyes enjoyed the caress of the firm hand on her head as adorable sounds came out of her throat.

"Are you going to sleep soon?"

"Mhmm! But since Brother Jiang Chen is here, I can sleep later." She timidly played with her nightgown as she said with a blushed face.

"It won't take too long. I only have a favor to ask Yaoyao, is that okay?" Jiang Chen smiled.

Seeing that Jiang Chen had a favor to ask, Yaoyao's adorable eyes lit up.

She immediately nodded and raised her head, and patted her chest to assure him. "Mhmm! I got it!"

"Then I'll have to count on you. Regarding the specifics, can I come in? I need to use the computer."

Jiang Chen entered the room.

The room was filled with a fragrance similar to lilies. Thinking that it might be the natural odor of Yaoyao, Jiang Chen's face turned red. But Yaoyao didn't notice the unnatural look on Jiang Chen's face as she ran to her table in excitement, sat on the chair, and turned on the computer.

She kicked off her slippers as her legs dangled joyfully.

The unguarded position was somewhat dangerous.

Jiang Chen gulped as he muttered to himself "I am not a loli lover". Then he walked beside Yaoyao, put the briefcase down, and took out a USB and a chip from inside.

"The requirements of the program are inside the USB. Basically, it is to design an artificial intelligence software that is compatible with the autonomous driving control chip. You don't have to make the program very powerful as long as the chip can operate, can you do that?"

"Of course, Yaoyao's computer skills are great." Yaoyao inserted the USB into the computer, hummed a song, and her fingers began to type rapidly on the control board.

Lines of code Jiang Chen didn't understand flashed in front of his eyes. The outdated data inside the USB was easily converted to a language that the computer in the apocalypse could understand.

"Hmmm, it is not too difficult." Yaoyao carefully read through the requirements line by line, and nodded her head.

"How long would you need?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Around two hours," With a finger on her chin, Yaoyao said after she had given it some thought.

But the response of only needing two hours shocked Jiang Chen.

"Ahem, how, how long?"

"Umm? Two hours is enough. Since sister Sun Jiao already copied the entire database in the city library, this type of outdated technology would usually be stored as a form of an archive in the digital library. As long as the software with the highest compatibility is selected, some modifications can be done before it is good to go." Yaoyao tilted her head as she confusedly looked at the stunned Jiang Chen.

"... This is insane." Not knowing how to express his astonishment in his mind, the shocked Jiang Chen only managed to say this one statement.

A project that Dalmer Corporation expected to take five months to complete, Yaoyao said she could finish it in two hours. If they knew about this, what kind of interesting expression would appear on their faces?

Hearing Jiang Chen say this, Yaoyao nodded. Then she inserted the chip into the multifunction slot and began to work.

"Are you going to start now? Aren't you going to sleep?" Seeing that Yaoyao began to work, Jiang Chen asked.

"Woo? It's only ten, so it is not too late. Since brother will go back tomorrow, I, I want to finish it soon and help brother out." Yaoyao's face began to burn as she timidly lowered her head.

The pure sentence along with Yaoyao's adorable look made Jiang Chen feel his heart warm. Overwhelmed with emotions, he hugged Yaoyao's frail figure from the back.

"Wa." The slightly frantic shout echoed beside his ear.

"Thank you, you are helping me a lot... Yaoyao is working very hard." Sensing the warmness, Jiang Chen sincerely thanked her.

Other than the popular <New Era> game, the applications inside the base, whether it was production or management were all creations of Yaoyao. But the timid loli never said anything. She only diligently worked and contributed to his success.

Feeling the warm hug, as well as the praise she had been waiting for, Yaoyao's face was red and her tender mouth curled up in joy.

"Hehe... No need to thank me. Yaoyao is brother's, so, it is my duty to help you."

"Do you want any rewards? I haven't been rewarding you properly," Jiang Chen said guiltily.

"Any kind of reward?" Yaoyao buried her head shyly, she blankly stared at her feet dangling as she murmured.

"Mhmm!"

When she received the confirmation, the red hue moved from her face to the tip of her ears.

With lips bitten, she exhaled several times before she finally worked up the courage.

"Last birthday... At night, could you hug me while I sleep?" Yaoyao wanted to say the thing that they didn't get to finish last time, but because of her shyness, she changed her words mid-sentence.

"Uh?"

As if she had sensed Jiang Chen's hesitation, Yaoyao carefully added, "You said anything is okay... Don't worry, Yaoyao has been taking a shower every night, I smell good. Yaoyao is also light and gentle when sleeping, I can be a soft pillow..."

Her anxious explanation made it seem as if Jiang Chen was going to take back his promise.

Looking at Yaoyao's hopeful expression, Jiang Chen gulped. He could not say no to such a cute expression. Therefore he nodded.

A joyful smiled emerged on Yaoyao's face.

The smile was mixed with happiness, as well as a hint of shyness.

"Thank you, I'm so happy... Mhmm! Yaoyao will begin to work. Brother, you can go sleep, Yaoyao will be done soon."

"Do you not need me to accompany you?" Jiang Chen rubbed her head.

"No, No need. That will be really boring..." Yaoyao said slightly embarrassed.

Jiang Chen didn't insist.

He walked to the bed, looked at the pink sheets as he awkwardly scratched his head.

But when he thought about Yaoyao's hopeful expression, Jiang Chen gulped and with trembling fingers slowly lifted up the sheet and lied down.

He nose was tingled by the faint aroma.

Although he couldn't quite tell what the smell was, it smelt good.

Under the sheets, Jiang Chen could smell her pureness. It was an intoxicating feeling.

But this feeling didn't manage to last long.

Because it was too comfortable, Jiang Chen's began to lose his consciousness, he yawned before quickly falling asleep.

After typing up the last line of code, Yaoyao stretched her body. Then she timidly looked at the direction of the bed.

Thinking that her love was sleeping in her bed, an indescribable joy and timid feeling rose in her heart.

Yaoyao gulped as she put on her bunny slippers carefully and walked to the door to turn off the light. Then she sneaked to the side of the bed.

Her heart was beating fast as if it was going to jump out of her chest.

"Woo, fell asleep?" Seeing that Jiang Chen had already drifted to sleep, Yaoyao pouted her mouth in slight disappointment.

But for some reason, she felt relieved and more at ease.

It was a complex feeling.

Already hitting puberty, she desired the mysterious but forbidden kind of feeling. At the same time, she felt unsettled by the idea.

[Could it be that I am still not ready?]

Yaoyao didn't understand her feeling.

With a hand on her chin, under the pristine moonlight, Yaoyao pouted her mouth as she carefully observed Jiang Chen's face.

Listening to his rhythmic breathing, a sweet smile appeared on her face.

"Wooo, of course, let's maintain our current state. Since brother already felt asleep..." She hummed to herself in a quiet voice before she sneaked into bed.

She pecked Jiang Chen's lips as a soft smile emerged on Yaoyao's face.

With this tiny bit of happiness, Yaoyao moved closer to his warm chest, adjusting herself to be in a comfortable position before closing her eyes.

Her breathing began to turn rhythmic and gentle.

Yaoyao's crescent-shaped mouth revealed her happiness.

Chapter 227: The Mist

The next morning, a streak of faint morning light poured into the room through the window.

Jiang Chen yawned unhurriedly as he opened his sleepy eyes and gaze through the window.

Such a rare scene, the outside was actually sunny. The insulated window blocked all the coldness outside, so it was warm like the spring inside the room. If it wasn't for the snow, watching the bright sun, he almost felt like he slept all the way through the start of spring.

A faint, warm breath fluttered on his chest, Jiang Chen looked down and found Yaoyao all curled up on top of his chest.

Like a small rabbit, she slept peacefully. Her breathing rose and fell rhythmically. Her eyelashes quivered along with her breath as she cast off the angel-like vibe in the bright sunlight. Even in her sleep, her lips formed in a sweet smile.

Gently sweeping her bangs to the side, Jiang Chen kissed her on top of her smooth forehead, and then he sneaked out of bed.

He picked up the already completed USB and chip from the table, and then he quietly left the room and closed the door.

It was only six o’clock in the morning, but based on Jiang Chen’s

understanding of Sun Jiao, she should already be up and about.

He was supposed to find her last night, but Yaoyao’s expectant eyes made him stay the night.

While heading towards the third floor of the mansion, Jiang Chen heard the gunshots coming from the training room from a distance.

"You're up so early as usual." Pushing the door open, Jiang Chen spotted Sun Jiao in combat gears shooting at targets.

"Mhmm? You're back?" Turning around, Sun Jiao wore a surprised smile.

Throwing the pistol in the case, Sun Jiao excitedly jumped in front of Jiang Chen.

"Have you finished everything on the other side?"

"Not yet but I'm worried about this side, so I came back to check things out."

"You're worrying now that we have the communication chip? If there's anything urgent, I will inform you."

Lin Lin shared the video that she and Jiang Chen had recorded with Sun Jiao and Yaoyao. Yaoyao’s reaction was somewhat blasé

since she did live in a more prosperous pre-war life for 12 years. Seeing the "ancient era," other than envy, she also felt melancholic.

But Sun Jiao, who hadn't seen a civilized society before, almost had her face plastered on the screen.

For her, the other side was the embodiment of a fairy tale

"It would be too late if something really happens. Has the Seventh area taken any action yet?"

Sun Jiao’s posture turned rigid upon hearing Jiang Chen’s question.

"The mutated humans have yet to make a move. The defense on the east of Zhufeng highway has been established, with the 10 Tigers and 200 soldiers being stationed there."

Nodding, Jiang Chen pondered on it for a moment before continuing, "What about the Defender in Jia City?"

Hearing that, a troubled smile flitted across Sun Jiao’s face.

"Not even a reaction. Not a single news at all."

Jiang Chen had exchanged a communication channel with Lin Chaoen at the Bullet Shell tavern at the Sixth Street last time. The

first few times, Jiang Chen could still reach the general of the Defender Alliance in Jia City, but as soon as winter came, they seemed to have disappeared all the sudden. All communication with the Fishbone Based had come to a halt.

Did they get wiped out? Or was it another type of accident?

Frowning, Jiang Chen had a vague feeling that something was off but could not pinpoint what exactly it was.

Sun Xiaorou was captured, but there was no reaction from Dusk at all.

The mutated human’s front posts were destroyed twice, but their reaction was also somewhat abnormal.

Could it be since their plans were foiled, they were at a loss on what to do?

But rather than optimistically thinking that the threats had been eliminated, Jiang Chen was more inclined to believe in another possibility—that they were planning a massive conspiracy. The silence now was to endure through this period of time.

"Speaking of which, did Sun Xiaorou's condition get...better?" Jiang Chen asked, somewhat awkwardly.

"She's better now." Sun Jiao’s expression looked despondent at the mention of her sister.

She would spend most of her time everyday with her sister and attempt to wake up the personality in Sun Xiaorou’s body, and make the devout believer of an occult slumber for eternity.

However, it was extremely difficult.

In the face of psychological issues, she really had no way of dealing with it.

"It'll get better." Seeing the despair on Sun Jiao’s face, Jiang Chen embraced and comforted her.

"Mhmm."

Sun Jiao nodded and leaned her head on Jiang Chen’s shoulder.

Just like this, silence perpetuated for a while and was broken when Sun Jiao suddenly asked, "How are you doing on the other side?"

"Me?" Jiang Chen paused for a moment.

"Mhmm, I haven’t asked you about the other side, so can you talk to me about it?" Whenever the other world was mentioned, Sun Jiao’s eyes lit up with anticipation.

"There's nothing special about...it's probably the exact opposite

of this place. A mouse is only the size of a fist, and a cockroach is just as big as your thumb. There are no mutants, the street is littered with all kinds of people, and there is an endless number of stores that are filled with fun and delicious things...It’s hard to explain with just words, so I will just have to take you there when there's an opportunity." Jiang Chen scratched his face.

"Woo, I'm envious of you for being born in heaven." Sun Jiao pouted.

"It's not as good as you think. Compared to here, yes, but it's not exactly a heaven. There are people who are extremely rich, and some people are so poor they don’t have a place that belongs to themselves, and they would have to depend on other’s goodwill to be able to rent a place."

Fortunately, Jiang Chen became the former from the latter.

"Rent?" Sun Jiao raised her eyebrows.

She could not wrap her head around what Jiang Chen had just told her. The things that the wasteland didn’t lack were concrete and steel buildings, so she couldn’t imagine why it would be so valuable.

If she got tired, she could find any building and could just place a trip mine on the stairs to sleep.

"Before the war, a house is considered a luxury. Just like the

mansion where we currently reside at, if it was before the war, it would cost millions... You can think of it as millions of crystals."

"Woah, so expensive." Sun Jiao was astonished.

"So don’t think that the other side is perfect, lest you'll end up being disappointed." Jiang Chen tousled Sun Jiao’s silky hair.

Just then, Sun Jiao suddenly asked, "Which side do you like better?"

Looking at the serious expression on Sun Jiao’s face, Jiang Chen took a moment to think.

He then gave an answer that even shocked himself.

"Probably...this side, or at least for now."

In the modern world, he was just a billionaire. Even as the president of a multibillion-dollar company, he was just a wealthy person.

With the growth of Future Technology, he gradually become embroiled in the vested interest of other people.

Precisely because of the secrets he had to protect, Jiang Chen's development had to be carefully measured, and he had to control the speed of his improvement. Despite possessing copious amounts

of astonishing innovations, he could not easily bring it out in the open.

Innovation like virtual reality MMORPG, Dong Yukong had already developed it. The headset version virtual reality gear could be produced in the Sixth Street, however, bringing it out in the modern world would be no different to committing suicide.

In the apocalypse, however, he was the commander of a force. After becoming the general of the Sixth Street, there was no organization in the entire Wanghai City that could force him to hide his growth.

Perhaps the development in the modern world should be hastened?

Chapter 228: The Dinner of the Elites

After bidding Sun Jiao goodbye, Jiang Chen returned to the modern world.

It was around eight in the morning, thinking of the promise he made with Ayesha last night, Jiang Chen's face broke into a smile.

After preparing breakfast and putting it into the microwave, Jiang Chen took a shower before he entered Ayesha's room, smirking all the while.

When the two came out of the room, it was already ten o'clock.

"I shouldn't have prepared breakfast had I known it'd be lunchtime soon," Jiang Chen uttered in disappointment as he removed the bread and poached egg from the microwave.

"It's okay. Just put it in the fridge, and we'll eat it tomorrow," face still blushing furiously, Ayesha muttered and took the plate out of Jiang Chen's hand.

After putting the plate in the refrigerator, Ayesha started preparing lunch while wearing an apron.

Looking at Ayesha's profile, Jiang Chen was enamored by the scene.

The loose brown curls reflected a golden streak in the sun. Beneath it was a gentle and serene face, and with the elegant apron, she resembled a newly married wife.

"Mhmm?" Ayesha seemed to have sensed Jiang Chen's gaze because she slightly tilted her head and looked up.

"Uh, nothing, just thinking how beautiful you are." Jiang Chen scratched his cheek.

Face blushing, Ayesha lowered her head shyly and started cutting the meat.

Lunch was roasted beef and borsch with steamed rice, a combination of western and oriental cuisine.

When the two finished their lunch, it was already twelve o'clock. After cleaning up the dishes, Ayesha, as part of her usual routine, she headed to the gym to complete today's virtual reality training content. Jiang Chen rested a bit more on the sofa, and then went out of the door and drove to the metropolis.

Tonight he was going to attend the Wanghai Business Forum. Jiang Chen, who had not always been confident in his own style, wisely decided to leave the task to the professionals to deal with. Although what's inside was more important, it was also necessary for the look to reflect that.

Jiang Chen allowed the cold but gentle hands to fiddle with his

face and hair for a while before coming out of the high-end style studio feeling refreshed. Although his hair was still short hair, he felt sleeker.

Then he headed to the mall to buy a few sets of formal suits. Although he didn't know which attire would be most appropriate for the event tonight, the best choice would be to buy the most expensive one!

After throwing the tens of thousands worth of formal suits on the counter, Jiang Chen, in front of the cashier whose eyes had already turned into glittering stars, swiped his card without blinking.

It was already three o'clock when he was done with everything.

Seeing that there was still some time to spare, Jiang Chen went to a Starbucks and ordered a cup coffee before he started fiddling with his phone.

When it was about five o'clock, Jiang Chen drove to the venue where the party would be held, Linhua Hotel.

...

One could see the elegance of the beautifully designed building just by looking at its appearance. Marble and red brick were the main materials used, which gave a touch modern simplicity combined with the elegance of classic beauty.

Linhua Hotel—an embellished sign with huge neon letters.

The parking lot was almost like a luxury car dealership. He actually saw no less than two or three of Lamborghini, Rolls-Royce, etc. So that his car Maybach S600 being parked there looked inconspicuous.

When he parked the car, following the direction of the valet, he was ushered to the front of the hotel. After flashing his invitation, he then entered the hotel along with those well-dressed elites.

Although it was a fancy banquet, in the end, it was still hosted by locals. Jiang Chen didn't get to see some famous people and could not recognize most attendees.

But he didn't look down on the party because of it. While they may not appear in the media, it did not mean they could not do so. Sometimes the more low-key the people were, the more powerful they truly were.

When he entered the hotel, he distinctly noticed a lot of people staring at him.

In this regard, Jiang Chen did not appear to be the least bit anxious, After all, it was not the first time he would be participating in a gathering this level. When he was in Sanya, he attended a birthday dinner hosted by the hospitable prince of Arabia for his princess. Although the birthday party was more private and informal than the business forum, the process was, in fact, roughly similar.

After the host delivered all kinds of ceremonial speech, the business elites naturally formed themselves into a small clique and exchanged ideas with those they were interested in.

Because he was not good at this kind of things, Jiang Chen deliberately picked a secluded spot in the corner of the hall and started enjoying the delicious food.

While he did consider using this opportunity to get acquainted with some business associates, but he was somewhat unable to get started after arriving here. Most of the active participants here were not a first-timer in this kind of event. As such, a number of people in the circle were familiar with each other. It was undoubtedly difficult for some newcomers like Jiang Chen to mingle with this clique.

But he had clearly underestimated his presence in the technology sector because who would actually cast a delicious morsel of cake aside?

The profitability of Future Technology did make people green with envy, but for those who could take part in the event of this caliber, how many were actually short-sighted? Ignoring Jiang Chen because of jealousy, only a philistine would do that.

He hadn't sat for long before a middle-aged man sat beside him with a smile.

"Mr. Jiang is young and promising but doesn't show off in public.

It's really rare at this age. Ah, I can't help but grow admiration for you even I were to be in 70s."

"Nah," despite feeling proud inside, Jiang Chen still humbly acknowledged the compliment, and then asked, "and you are?"

Though the person looked familiar, Jiang Chen was still unable to remember where he had seen him.

"I'm Zhou Hongwei." Zhou Hongwei smiled.

Isn't that the president of 361 Corporation, Zhou Hongwei? It made Jiang Chen somewhat shocked.

"So it's Mr. Zhou, I apologize for not realizing it sooner." Not even recognizing his own strategic partner was a bit embarrassing.

With the advent of a social media platform, Future Technology and other communication technologies like Penguin naturally stood on the opposite side. In particular, the impact of Future 1.0 on Wechat, which caused a drastic decrease in their users, had naturally earned Penguin's displeasure. Because of this, Future Technology was removed from all channels by Penguin, but it did little to Future Technology as they had already occupied the user group.

The competitor's adversary would naturally band together. Most especially after the Linyu Technology's incident, towards 361 Corporation's gesture of goodwill to Jiang Chen, Future

Technology would naturally take the same initiative as the 361 Corporation. Both parties used Chenfeng Entertainment as a joint venture platform to form a tight relationship in the mobile gaming sector, focusing on low and mid-end games with short development cycles. 361 Corporation being the main developer while Future Technology was responsible for the channel. It can be said that this was the honeymoon period of cooperation between the two sides.

"It's okay, I'm already over 40 years old with an average-looking face, so even if I went on CTV, no one would remember me." Zhou Hongwei quipped good-naturedly, which cleverly resolved the awkwardness, then he began chatting with Jiang Chen.

When two Internet giants sat together, it would naturally attract a lot of people in the "same circle" to join their conversation. Without him knowing, Jiang Chen was equally surprised to realize that the quiet spot he had chosen for himself had somehow become the center of the forum.

In fact, Jiang Chen had somehow underestimated intricacies this business forum. If he had given it more thoughts, there were just few hundred companies with over 10 billion market value in the entire China. Now this Wanghai Business Forum, though the requirement was high, it was not as extreme as he initially thought.

It could be even be said that in this entire venue, he and Zhou Hongwei could be considered to stand at the top of the pyramid. On the other hand, Zhou Hongwei only possessed 14% share in 361 Corporation, but Jiang Chen had an unbelievable 99% share in

Future Technology. From this perspective, while both companies had a market value of 10 billion, Jiang Chen's "worth" had overwhelmed Zhou Hongwei.

Other than the internet giants, the rest were mid-sized companies with good profitability and future prospects. While they probably have billions in assets, there was still a noticeable gap compared to Jiang Chen's assets.

As such, there were quite a number of people who used all sort of methods in an attempt to establish a connection with him. Especially considering he was still a bachelor, the big bosses with daughters, regardless whether their daughter had a boyfriend or not, began to talk marriage with Jiang Chen.

"Haha, Mr. Jiang is 22 this year, my princess is 21. Would Jiang Chen be interested in meeting her?"

"No wonder Mr. Jiang Chen is capable of gracing the headline twice on Wall Street Journal, Mr. Jiang is indeed a talented person and gives face to his own country!"

"Is Mr. Jiang interested in a partnership? Our company had recently developed an O2O takeout software, considering Future 1.0 traffic, we can definitely..."

Networking, fawning, and partnership.

To be honest, his vanity was satisfied while looking at a group of

rich people formed a circle around him as the center. Jiang Chen naturally responded to everyone's friendliness and listened to their business proposals.

As for those seeking to arrange marriage, Jiang Chen chose to politely ignore them.

In this relaxed atmosphere, halfway through the party, a familiar voice floated through Jiang Chen's ears just as he was about to start eating.

"Hello Mr. Jiang, we meet again."

Chapter 229: Peep

To host this gathering, Linhua Group had certainly made an all-out effort. Not only was the food impeccable, the guests had also been given meticulous attention.

When the party was halfway through, a sound of music began to play in the venue. In the center of the circular hall, the Chinese music circle goddess, Zhang Hui, was singing, the melodious and soft music revibrating in the hall. Clapping sound erupted as the music faded.

To be able to invite a celebrity of this caliber to be part of this gathering showed the influence of Wang Linhua.

Seeing that the atmosphere of the party has come to a peak, the host of the gathering took out the microphone. He first expressed his gratitude to Zhang Hui for her performance and to all the guests for coming to the event before announcing the next part of the celebration.

The servers pushing the food carts entered the hall as they began to serve exquisite meals. Musical performance started playing from the center of the hall. The guests, exhausted from chatting, started enjoying their dinner.

"Hello Mr. Jiang, we meet again." Wang Xinyan approached Jiang Chen with a glass of wine in her hand.

Still clad in a vibrant red, but instead of a cotton dress, this time

was an elegant cocktail dress.

"It's a pleasure meeting you again, Miss Wang." Jiang Chen raised his glass and smiled.

"Is it? But why do I sense that you feel the opposite?" With a graceful stride, Wang Xinyan proposed a toast to Jiang Chen and then took a sip of her wine.

"That's just your imagination." While saying this, Jiang Chen muttered another sentence to himself.

[But your imagination is too accurate.]

"Woman's instinct is very accurate." Towards Jiang Chen's denial, Wang Xinyan just smiled mysteriously and did not give a direct response.

"Ahem, let's cut to the chase. Come on, what do you need from me?" Jiang Chen coughed lightly as he put down the wine.

"Can't I even look for you without having an ulterior motive?" Wang Xinyan gracefully sat across him.

"Of course, but you're obviously not."

Seeing the guarded look on Jiang Chen's face, Wang Xinyan let out a sigh.

"A man who doesn't understand a woman. Then, excuse me for being blunt... My father wants to see you."

[Wang Linhua? Why would a real estate developer want to see me?]

Frowning, Jiang Chen couldn't think of any potential business ventures between Linhua Group and Future Technology.

"Right now?"

"Of course, after the event ends." Her red lips curved upwards slyly.

[When the party's over?]

Jiang Chen still couldn't figure out the intention of Wang Linhua.

Seeing Jiang Chen's slightly frowning expression, Wang Xinyan giggled."Why are you so cautious? Don't you think it'd be probably be something good?"

"Because I noticed you used the word 'probably," Jiang Chen said dully.

"That depends on you and how you interpret it." Wang Xinyan

left a smile and a meaningful sentence behind, and then gracefully got up and exited in grand fashion.

[Depends on my interpretation?]

A profound smile broke on Jiang Chen's face.

Thereupon, the door to the hall became unsettled.

"Is that Carmen Rothschild? My god, when did Linhua Group become this influential?"

"Did Carmen specifically come here for this, or is he on a business trip for Rothschild family? Maybe Linhua was informed about it, and that's why he sent an invitation? But for the Rothschild family to attend this gathering, Linhua Group is surely powerful."

"Haha, if they want to get a slice of the cake of the 1.3 billion people market, then they will need to establish a good relationship with the top dog."

"That makes sense. I wonder which lucky person will have the opportunity to have dealings with these Europeans tyrants.."

The ongoing speculations had made Jiang Chen's expression turn slightly strange.

The lucky person they were referring to was him.

Once the news about the deal had been publicized, what kind of interesting expression would be on their faces?

Speaking of this, the control chip and artificial intelligence system had already been completed.

As long as Jiang Chen willed it, the chip could just be transported from the storage dimension to his pocket.

But to avoid drawing too much attention to himself, Jiang Chen cautiously decided to temporarily put it aside as he was planning to introduce it in April.

Picking up his chopstick, he began to enjoy the food on the table. But then, much to his surprise, Carmen began to look around and headed his way.

Seeing this scene, everyone's eyes widened.

"So it's Future Technology? When did the Rothschild family get involved in the high-tech industry?"

"Wait, I heard that Carmen is here representing the Dialmer Corporation. Could it be that Future Technology will be venturing into automotive industry?"

Artifical intelligence on top of automotive?

This was one piece of a hot news. What was the media doing, and how come there was no information at all?

Disregarding the reaction of the crowd, Carmen sat across from Jiang Chen where Wang Xinyan had previously sitten.

"Chinese food, I like it a lot," Carmen nobly said with a smile, but he picked up a knife and fork.

"Nice to see you again, old buddy," said Jiang Chen and exchanged greetings with him.

Whether if it was because of the language barrier or something else entirely, listening to Jiang Chen's words, Carmen's expression became somewhat awkward.

"I apologize, my friend. I didn't deliberately provoke you—" Based on his understanding, the disappearance of GPS signal was because Jiang Chen had discovered it already. In view of their current relationship, Carmen chose to apologize sincerely.

"It's okay, I'm a very easy person." Jiang Chen smiled.

Carmen had blanked out for a moment before a grateful smile appeared on his face.

[Being able to let go of the past is amazing. This kind of mental

fortitude is truly admirable...] Carmen exclaimed in his head.

Although it was not a big deal to be inept in using chopsticks and compared to 1 billion USD... How does one eat Chinese food with a knife and fork? Jiang Chen's expression looked strange as he stared at the knife and fork in Carmen's hand.

The conversation between the two could be described as disjointed, but because of coincidence, it somehow connected together. Carmen thought that Jiang Chen had discovered the problem with the USB, but in reality, Jiang Chen didn't notice the mishap at all.

One had to say that this disconnect in the information, which caused this misunderstanding, was really funny

Jiang Chen's taciturn behavior was seen as generosity in Carmen's eyes, so his words could not help but have guilt woven into them. While chatting with him, Jiang Chen became perplexed by his odd tone.

Was this a difference in language expression?

In short, the flow of conversation between the two was very harmonious.

But this harmony, in the eyes of a certain person, was far from being pleasant.

"So Rothschild is interested in Future Technology as well?" With wine in hand, the corner of his eyes peeked at the two as Wang Linhua muttered to himself.

The wine swirling in the glass reflected the aged face immersed in deep thought.

Chapter 230: Greed

The gathering ended. After saying goodbye to Carmen Rothschild, Jiang Chen went to the back of the hall and met Wang Linhua waiting there.

The elder man's body looked healthy, and he had a head full of black hair. While wrinkles were visible on his face, it only added to his authoritative look. From this point alone, Wang Dehai should be his older brother and quite a few years older.

When he saw Jiang Chen come in, he had an amiable smile on his face as he warmly welcomed Jiang Chen to take a seat.

"Haha, I have been listening to my brother's praises of you, now that I see you, it certainly is true." Wang Linhua nodded his head.

"Uncle Wang is overcomplimenting me," Jiang Chen said humbly.

"Since you call me uncle, could I call you little Jiang?"

"Of course, it's my honor."

When he heard Jiang Chen's words, Wang Linhua smiled as he took a drink of tea to soothe his throat.

"The reason why I asked you to stay today is that I wanted to chat

with you. I hope little Jiang doesn't mind."

"Not a problem." Jiang Chen smiled, but he was analyzing his intention.

"Did you see my daughter yet?" Wang Linhua asked nonchalantly.

[Wang Xinyan?]

As to why Wang Linhua all the sudden mentioned this, Jiang Chen was rather lost.

"Yes," Jiang Chen nodded as he answered cautiously.

"What do you think about her?"

"Unique." Jiang Chen carefully chose his word.

"I heard you don't have a girlfriend yet, you young people should spend more time together. As the elder, I don't need to say more."

Hearing this, Jiang Chen's expression became odd.

[What is this? Arranged marriage? Encouraging me to chase after you daughter?]

"Why did uncle Wang mention this all of the sudden?" Without replying directly, Jiang Chen smiled.

"Nothing really, only casually mentioning it, don't worry too much." Wang Linhua laughed as he waved his hands.

Jiang Chen didn't continue this conversation as he also laughed along with him. He didn't understand what kind of show this old guy was putting on for him, so he decided to be careful with his words.

As to the hint, there was no way he would agree to it.

Seeing that Jiang Chen didn't continue the conversation, Wang Linhua only smiled. He reached for the teapot and filled his cup with more tea.

"Westlake Longjing, my friend gave it to me as a gift."

Jiang Chen raised his cup to take a sip, although he didn't know the intricacy of tea, he still pretended to know as he nodded.

"Great tea."

"Haha, not bad right? It is limited quantity. Better than the ones available on the market." Wang Linhua laughed, as he also took a sip of the tea.

However, simply through observing his action, he was more natural than Jiang Chen.

"Speaking of this, during one of my outings with the old friend who gifted me the tea, he spoke about an interesting problem. Could little Jiang solve my elderly man's confusion?" Wang Linhua said with a gentle voice as he smiled at Jiang Chen.

"My knowledge is limited, but I will do my best," Jiang Chen answered cautiously.

"I hope little Jiang don't mind, my old friend works in intelligence service. I am only curious because based on what he said, he couldn't find anything on the technology team behind Future Technology. That team, does it really exist?"

A piercing and sharp look shot out of Wang Linhua's eyes.

That fox-like sight, locked tightly onto Jiang Chen's pupils as if he wanted to look through Jiang Chen.

But Jiang Chen was not a rookie anymore, he was at least a general of the Sixth Street. Although it was in another world, it didn't interfere with his new-found calmness as a leader.

"Of course, it's just that you guys haven't been able to find them yet," Jiang Chen replied to Wang Linhua's suspiciousness with calmness.

"Oh? Really?"

"Of course. We only developed a partnership with them. Based on the agreement, they provide technology to us, and we focus on the operations. We also promise them confidentiality to all information about them." It was the second time Jiang Chen said something like this.

The first was to the media.

As to Jiang Chen's response, Wang Linhua was obviously unsatisfied, but he didn't show anything on his face, he only smiled, as he continued.

"We are leaning towards another possibility."

"Such as?"

"That team is fictitious, everything is your work."

"A very imaginative assumption. Disregarding the fact that I have studied mechanical engineering, what's my reason to do this?" Jiang Chen shrugged.

"There are many reasons. For example, avoiding the trouble, or blurring the development cost." Wang Linhua smiled mysteriously.

"You think I am avoiding tax? Let's disregard if the problem exists or not in the first place. I don't think Linhua Group is a tax agency right? Even if your brother is powerful, it doesn't mean I have to accept your interrogation. When did Linhua Group start doing the work of the government agency?"

Although Wang Linhua had clearly heard the displeasure in Jiang Chen's tone, for some odd reason, he didn't stop the topic there.

"Of course not, I am only listing out a possibility. But those two points are key. The key is, this could be your motive because you don't trust the government."

"Don't trust the government? This is a serious accusation, I cannot accept this. And don't you think this kind of assumption is irresponsible? Where is your evidence?" Jiang Chen said calmly.

Rather than lack of trust, Jiang Chen would rather refer to it as being cautious for his life. Since his right hand held the portal to another world!

"Don't be nervous, I am only stating a possibility. Granted, our government system does have some flaws and unjust, but all in all, it is still a good system. For the people with talent, we always provide support."

"Therefore?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"Did little Jiang ever consider an equity infusion by state," Wang

Linhua said with a smile.

Jiang Chen let out a sigh in his mind, [It is finally here.]

A monthly revenue over a billion, 99% of absolute share control, this juicy piece of meat finally made people feel unsettled?

"Future Technology's operating condition is doing well, the cash flow is steady, there is no consideration of equity infusion."

It was the point that made all venture capitalists grind their teeth. The lack of problem with cash flow meant that there was no possibility for them to cut a piece of pie from Future 1.0. Disregarding venture capitalists, Future Technology doesn't even need a bank loan. With its monthly profit alone, it could meet its growth needs. The company's incredible money generating ability did indeed make people's eyes glisten with greed.

This would include private capitals, foreign capitals, and of course, state capitals.

And Linhua Group is a renowned state enterprise. Wang Linhua's question was dubious in its nature.

"It doesn't have to be operating poorly to infuse state capital. With liquid asset, you could develop freely and expand your operation." Wang Linhua took a sip of tea in an in control attitude.

That gesture hinted at a layer of meaning worth thinking over.

"If you don't mind me using a derogatory term, if you take too big of a stride, you might pull your nuts."

"Therefore, little Jiang is going to refuse?" Wang Linhua narrowed his eyes, but the smile on his face didn't fade away.

As to convincing, he had a mysterious sense of confidence. Jiang Chen didn't know what his trump card is, but he would not give any ground on this point.

"It has to do with the future of the company, I must be cautious with my decision." Jiang Chen didn't back down.

"Do you think infusing state capital would hinder the growth of Future Technology?" Wang Linhua laughed, he waved his hands, "Let's talk about policy, but you should have been paying attention already."

After taking a pause, Wang Linhua continued.

"Based on the state's newly discussed strategy, for the second type of corporation, the keystone corporation is an important industry, as well as its supporting industry, the high-tech industry. For these industries, the state wants an ownership control of 51%. Of course, this is only a recommended percentage, the actual percentage may differ."

"I heard that it is not an enforced policy, only a method of

supporting the company. There is no law that states I must accept an equity infusion by state," Jiang Chen answered emotionlessly.

For Jiang Chen's answer, Wang Linhua shook his head with a smile.

"Do you think, the government would let this type of high-end technology sit in the hands of an individual? With strong capital, the piece of gold would create more value."

"Or it would be worth nothing." Jiang Chen shrugged.

"Oh?" Wang Linhua pretended to act curious.

"The infusion of external capital would mean that the company might display the specifics of the operation to the new shareholder. My partner obviously has no intention to reveal itself to any country. Therefore they may terminate my partnership to seek other partners. Don't you think by that point, the move becomes pointless?" Jiang Chen said nonchalantly.

"That's okay." Wang Linhua smiled at Jiang Chen "Perhaps they would give up on Future Technology, but no reason to give up a 1.3 billion people market. If they truly exist, we'll treat their new partner better."

At this point, Jiang Chen truly understood everything.

The old guy was gambling, the type of gambling where he would

not lose.

Whether the foreign technology team is real or fake, it would only take a test to find out. If they actually existed, they would change to a different name, there was no need to worry about them leaving.

As to if Future Technology would be abandoned or not, Wang Linhua didn't care at all.

Unfortunately, Wang Zhiyong not speaking his mind that day reflected Wang Dehai's attitude.

At least he permitted the situation. Since Wang Linhua belonged to the Wang family, if Future Technology became Wang family's asset, Wang family acquired another cash cow.

"So you are arranging this marriage for state capital?'

"No, only arranging the marriage for the Wang family." Wang Linhua smiled.

Of course.

"Oh?" Jiang Chen sneered.

"I'll marry my daughter to you, then you will be the son in law of the Wang family. The dowry is five billion, the bride price...

obviously is 50% of the Future Technology share."

It was a great plan, disregarding the logic of "standing at the high grounds for the country, and forcefully selling and buying." Is the dowry supposed to be an asset after marriage? Based on the ten billion market cap two months ago, to acquire the Future Technology with monthly revenues of a billion, are they shameless? Or shameless?

"What is this? Political marriage?" Jiang Chen mocked.

"You could interpret it that way."

"Therefore, Linhua Group can represent the government?" Jiang Chen ridiculed.

"Although we can't represent, the Wang family has a certain amount of power. Also, Linhua Group is a state-owned enterprise. Therefore it means the same thing as state capital infusing into Future Technology," Wang Linhua said with a smile.

What a shameless things to say.

"Could I interpret it that your action reflects the attitude of the Wang family?"

Pondering on Jiang Chen's question, Wang Linhua took another sip of the tea.

"You could interpret it that way. Since, rather than giving this juicy meat away to other people, it is better to put it in my own stomach."

[It is a straightforward analogy, you view my Future Technology as a piece of juicy meat already?]

Seeing Wang Linhua's confident expression, the tip of Jiang Chen's mouth curved up as he said emotionlessly.

"If you think you are so great, are you not afraid I will become a foreign company?"

Chapter 231: Vote with my feet

Jiang Chen's words made Wang Linhua pause for a moment, his cunning eyes narrowed into a line. His eyes reflected those of a hunter observing its prey's sharp claw.

Jiang Chen responded to the invasive sight by smiling fearlessly, he took a sip out of the teacup.

His calmness made Wang Linhua uncertain.

If Jiang Chen proactively gave out the shares, it would be the best case scenario. Five billion along with becoming the son-in-law of the Wang family in exchange for 50% of Future Technology's share, in Wang Linhua's eyes, was not too harsh.

Wang Linhua could not think through the reason for Jiang Chen's reaction. Without exaggerating, Future Technology was a piece of juicy meat. Not only the Wang family has spotted the meat, Zhou and Liu families, who had no less of a political influence, were also unsettled.

But because the juicy meat lies in Wanghai, and Wanhai was Wang family's territory, that's why they urged themselves. But followed by the increase in profitability of Future Technology, they could no longer sit around.

Just like what he has said, rather than other people eating it, it was better to put it in his own stomach.

"Foreign corporation?" Wang Linhua laughed, "Do you think foreign capital is as cute as it looks. As an elder, I have to caution you, their manner is even worse. Especially since the primary business of Future Technology is still in the country. A bite by us, we can give you some compensation. A bite by foreign capitals, you may have to eat the leftovers with them."

Although he was saying this confidently, Jiang Chen could still hear the hint of the fear in his voice.

China connecting to the world meant that it is no longer excluded from the world that's led by American capital as they carefully maintained the image of their international state capital. Using the policy to forcefully buy and sell could occur between state and private capital, but it could never occur between state capital and foreign capital.

These major shareholders are able to hide from the public's eyes as they only exist in the financial information of each corporation. But in actuality, the QQ we use every day, the largest internet company in China with a market cap of 250 billion - Tencent, the major shareholder is not Ma Huateng, but South Africa MIH.

As to the famous Alibaba, their major shareholder was not Jack Ma, but Softbank.

Regardless of the status of foreign affairs, foreign capitals are all thriving domestically without suffering any unfair treatment. For example, if the Rothschild family became a shareholder of Future

Technology, even without becoming the top shareholder, Wang Linhua would definitely be afraid to make any moves.

It was the reason why Wang Linhua felt nervous when he saw Carmen and Jiang Chen being so close.

It was okay laying hands on private capital, it was like a father beating his son as it was the family business. But if a guest came, what kind of etiquette would be used to pull things from the guest's pocket? Although it was a situation that could not be helped, it was the sad truth.

If Future Technology did get pushed away by him, not only would Wang Dehai not be too happy, Wang Linhua himself would get nothing out of it. The power within the structure is good against your own people, but not so effective against other people.

"I am only explaining a possibility," Jiang Chen said expressionlessly.

"Are you threatening me?" Wang Linhua voice began to turn cold.

"No, I am only responding to your threat."

"Threat?" Wang Linhua laughed, "Linhua Group's equity infusion would be absolutely beneficial for Future Technology, you are too ignorant of the situation."

Just like Wang Linhua said, it was not bad for state capital to infuse into Future Technology. A lot of companies at the brink of bankruptcy do everything they can to infuse state capital.

With state capital, although it meant some profit would be lost, the company would receive preferential treatment in all kinds of areas. Such as loans. No possibility of a loan not being approved. The bank would nod their head even at the risk of bad debt. Another example, policies. As long as they have the correct political stance, they would not receive repressions from the political side.

But there was no way Jiang Chen could do this.

Once state capital is infused, that means that he must reveal the specifics of the company's operations to the new "major shareholder." For example, the team that developed Future 1.0, the point of contact, as well as the cost breakdown of software development. How could this be revealed to other people?

Jiang Chen doesn't have enough knowledge on political regulations to give his right hand to the government.

"It's not because of ignorance, it's just you are too greedy. With only five billion, you want 50% share of Future Technology with billions of monthly profit, why don't you go rob instead?" Jiang Chen sneered as he stared straight into Wang Linhua's eyes.

"Rob? Without the Wang family looking after you, do you think Future Technology could grow smoothly to this point?" Wang

Linhua paused as he looked at Jiang Chen with more than one layer of meaning.

"Rothschild family is wealthy, I know you formed a partnership with them. But they are outsiders after all, even with money, their influence in China is limited. If you think they can help you out, then you will be disappointed. If you think selling your share would avoid trouble, I recommend you get rid of the idea. Future Technology can escape from trouble, but you definitely won't be able to."

The threatening intent was serious.

Jiang Chen eyes' narrowed.

"I don't know if you have considered this question before, but Future Technology is an internet company with only a few servers. I can start the company anywhere. In the country, or outside of the country."

"Then you mean?" Wang Linhua's eyes narrowed.

"I retain my option to vote with my feet."

With those words, the atmosphere in the room froze.

After a while, Wang Linhua leaned against his chair, and slowly opened his mouth to break the silence.

"Young, impulsive, unwilling to compromise, I can understand. But, I recommend you to think carefully before you make a decision. Linhua Group's control of Future Technology is not only the Wang family's decision, but the people at the top also nodded their heads. Vote with your feet? You have to be able to leave."

Jiang Chen laughed without saying anything.

[Funny, if I want to leave, who could stop me?]

Seeing that Jiang Chen didn't answer, Wang Linhua thought he was considering, he smiled, and didn't push him too hard.

"It is pretty late, let's call it a day. I hope you can choose a happy ending. After the Chinese New Year, Linhua group will have its shareholder meeting, the official acquisition proposal will be handed to you by April. I trust that in four months time, you can think this through."

"What if I reject?"

"Future Technology's Chinese operation may experience some unpleasant surprises."

[Looks like Wang Linhua is firm on grabbing Future Technology in his hands.]

"Oh? It looks like I have to consider this carefully then."

Sneering in his mind, Jiang Chen stood up.

He walked towards the door but suddenly stopped. Turning back around, he smiled.

"I hope you don't regret your decision today."

Wang Linhua took a moment before he burst out laughing.

"Regret? Buddy, you have a big mouth. To make me regret, you are still too young."

"Is that so?"

Jiang Chen left Wang Linhua with a smile that held a deeper meaning, he didn't stay any longer as he pushed open the door.

Chapter 232: The Necessary Deterrence

"How did it go? Is it good news or bad news?" Standing outside of the room, Wang Xinyan looked at Jiang Chen, who just came out of the door, with a smile.

"What do you think?' Jiang Chen stopped and looked at her, half-smiling.

"I think it didn't go too well." Wang Xinyan crossed her arms as she stood beside Jiang Chen, "I don't understand, what's there to reject? Am I that despicable?"

"What's there to reject?" Jiang Chen laughed dubiously, "You tell me, what's there to agree?"

Jiang Chen didn't respond to her plan of testing the water and left immediately.

Looking at Jiang Chen walking away, Wang Xinyan's flashed an unusual light as a mischievous smile appeared on her face.

"Interesting."

...

After coming out of the hotel, Jiang Chen walked to the garage. Just as he was about to go into his car, a stranger approached him.

Seeing that Jiang Chen was walking over, a man in a brown trench coat waved at him and walked towards his direction.

"You are?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows.

"Just a salesman." The man shrugged and smiled friendly.

"I am not in the mood to buy anything."

"No, trust me, you will be interested in my offer." The man coughed, and extended his right hand, "Zhang Youjie, I'm an employee of the UA Consulate."

Jiang Chen's eyes moved slightly as he shook his hand out of etiquette, then with a layer of meaning, he said, "Consulate worker? What do you have for an ordinary merchant like me?"

A Han name, should be a UA Han?

"Ahem, Mr. Jiang is too humble. A normal merchant would not go save someone in Iraq, nor would he go step in the muddy water in Kane, he especially wouldn't train mercenaries in Niger." Zhang Youjie said in a low voice then he coughed.

What a detailed investigation.

"Then your intention is?' Jiang Chen asked emotionlessly.

"Please don't be mistaken, I am here with good intentions. Although you are unnaturally active internationally, your current actions aren't threatening the security of my country." Seeing the caution in Jiang Chen's eyes, Zhong Youjie rushed to explain.

"Can I hear about this good intention of yours?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"Have you considered switching to a different nationality? The Wall Street is a broad stage. For a talent like you, it is too pitiful if you waste your time on those greedy politicians."

"Wall Street? I currently have no interest in Wall Street." Jiang Chen said nonchalantly.

"Don't reject it yet." Zhang Youjie stopped Jiang Chen's words, he slipped a business card into his hand with a smile, "It is never bad to have a few extra options right? The door to freedom is always open for people with talent, especially for a genius like you."

Zhang Youjie bowed nobly before he turned around and left.

Staring at Zhong Youjie's shadow, Jiang Chen played with the business card in his hand for as a dubious smile appeared on his face.

Wall Street? Would the etiquette of the Wall Street capitalists be better? As long as they are politicians, they are the same

everywhere.

He stuffed the business card into his pocket as Jiang Chen sat into his Maybach.

If Wang Linhua thought he could use the power within the system to force him to agree, then he is fated for disappointment.

Future Technology will never be a subsidiary of the Wang family, Jiang Chen never had the intention to compromise.

...

After he got into the car, Jiang Chen didn't head home. Instead, he went to the rural area and parked in front of the Hongyi private club.

Jiang Chen closed the door, entered the club, passed through the hall and walked straight to the reception desk.

"Hello sir, what kind of service-" The receptionist smiled professionally as she greeted Jiang Chen.

Those coming at this hour, needless to say, was here to "spend the night".

But Jiang Chen's first sentence caught her by surprise.

"Call your manager...Zhou Zihao here." Jiang Chen said in a straightforward manner.

The receptionist paused for a moment and looked at Jiang Chen in confusion.

"Sir?"

"Just say that someone called Jiang Chen is here."

She looked skeptically at Jiang Chen, but she still picked up the phone and called the manager.

"Hello? Manager Zhou? Someone named Jiang Chen wants to see you -, Oh, okay..."

When she hung up the phone, the way she looked at him changed from skepticism to respect.

If the mention of this person's name in that one phone can get her manager to come down, this person is obvious not ordinary. In her impression, the only person that could do this was called Wang Zhiyong.

Without waiting for long, Jiang Chen saw the "squint eye" coming down.

"Haha, we meet again, brother Jiang." Zhou Zihao walked up to

Jiang Chen with a smile, "How have you been?"

The warmness made it seem like the unhappy ending that happened here last time didn't exist.

"Not very good, so I came here to find you." Jiang Chen also smiled.

"Find me? Uncle Wang wants you to be his son in law, does brother Jiang want me to be the best man?"

"You already know?" Jiang Chen was slightly surprised.

"I do have some connections here." Zhou Zihao shrugged.

"Okay let's not play riddles then. Partnership, are you interested?" Jiang Chen was direct.

After a brief moment, an interested expression appeared on Zhou Zihao's face.

"Partnership? Is Future Technology not satisfied with great influence that is the Wang family?"

"Nothing to do with Future Technology." Jiang Chen said emotionlessly, "A partnership between you and me."

"You want me to go against uncle Wang, even though I don't have the reason -"

"Military artificial intelligence project."

Zhou Zihao's eyes immediately narrowed, although his eyes were not big to begin with.

Jiang Chen clearly sensed that he was tempted.

"This is not the place to talk." Zhou Zihao said in a low voice as he signaled to Jiang Chen to follow him into the second-floor room.

Immediately after they sat down, Zhou Zihao couldn't wait and asked.

"Can Future Technology really do it? The military artificial intelligence program?"

"Smart drone control system."

Jiang Chen sensed clearly that he was tempted by the offer, but he didn't immediately agree as a hint of caution came out of his eyes.

"How do you want me to help you?"

"I heard you have a hobby of shooting adult videos, how many have you filmed?" Jiang Chen's sight was dubious.

Zhou Zihao's eyes slightly moved, he obviously knew what Jiang Chen referred to.

"You want those videos?"

"Exactly."

"Are you crazy, you think you could use those 147 political sex scandal video to take down Wang family?"

"147 of them? That is more than what I expected... I wasn't thinking about taking down the Wang family, what I need is necessary deterrence." Jiang Chen stared at Zhou Zihao's squinted eyes, "Zhou family is in Shangjing, and you are in Wanghai, I suppose you don't really favor your own family. Smart drone control systems... if you give me the videos, the systems are yours."

Chapter 233: The Skin of a Military Tech Company

Future Technology had to go, and this was Jiang Chen had decided a long time ago. But even if it's gone, there would still be a process involved. Moreover, even if it's gone, that didn't mean he would abandon the domestic market. It's just that selecting a small country was easier to control as a headquarter to facilitate the future development of Future Technology later on.

However, he didn't expect that Wang family would no longer be able to sit still so quick.

In order to control the artificial intelligence technology and to rope state-owned assets in, the organization's authority was employed to compel Jiangchen to surrender his shares of Future Technology. Using the state-owned assets and Wang family joint ownership of Linhua Group to own a controlling number of shares in Future Technology, Wang Linhua's formulated a sound plan.

When all was said and done, Jiang Chen's connection could not be considered extensive. Future Technology's profits made people envious. Although the Wang family had kept him away from trouble, what if the Wang family became greedy too? Obviously, in the face of family interest, Wang Dehai naturally chose his own family and allowed Wang Linhua's behaviors.

However, in regard to Wang Linhua's "not so excessive" conditions, Wang Dehai still gave it a thought. Although Jiang Chen had to give up his shares, they didn't make it "too difficult" for him. 5 billion RMB along with the identity of son-in-law, Wang

Dehai thought it was enough compensation.

But Jiang Chen was not satisfied with this.

So he went to look for Zhou Zihao.

Don't be mistaken, Jiang Chen never thought those videos would work, or that those videos would make Wang family compromise with him and stop their scheming against Future Technology. If he did release the scandal videos, it would force the two parties on completely opposite sides without any room for negotiation.

Taking a thousand steps back, even if the Wang family stopped, would it stop other greedy people from making move against him? A head-on conflict with the Wang family would mean that he would lose the protection of the top dogs, which would make it more difficult for Future Technology. Wang Linhua was convinced about this point. Thus, he directly confronted Jiang Chen and overtly plotted. "I want your shares. Are you going to give it to me or not?"

After getting the videos from Zhou Zihao, Jiang Chen carelessly threw it into the storage dimension.

The trump card he was relying on was the "UAV Smart Control System 1.0," which Zhou Zihao had happily taken home and taken credit for.

Although Zhou Zihao submitted the project under his name,

would the bigwigs be dumb enough to think that it was Zhou Zihao who really developed it?

With just a simple investigation, it was easy to deduce the last person Zhou Zihao made contact with before coming back to Shangjing.

The people eyeing his interest was not the government, rather it was the Wang family. Would the government really care about such minuscule profit? The government was only interested in the artificial intelligence project in his possession and nothing more. Wang Linhua could persuade the largest shareholder of Linhua Group, SASAC (State-owned Assets Supervision and Administration Commission), to acquire Future Technology. Without a doubt, he appealed to this type of reason: "become the first shareholder that could transform Future Technology into a military tech company and use artificial intelligence in the military."

Since the civil-level artificial intelligence could not whet the appetite of the higher-ups, then the military grade should do the trick.

As long as the top dogs were satisfied with the contribution of Future Technology on the national defense and were persuaded that it would make more contributions in the hands of Jiang Chen, then the state's reason to control Future Technology would no longer exist. At the same time, the state could also provide certain policy protection to Future Technology.

As for the Wang family? As long as Jiang Chen would be able to

persuade the top dogs that Future Technology could only maximize its value in his hands, would he need to worry about the Wang family? Even if the Wang family was influential locally, their local sphere of influence was limited, so how could they oppose the will of the central authority?

As for seeking connection with the Zhou family, it was only to avoid encroaching on the other party's vested interest. The video was nothing more than to divert Zhou Zihao's attention, so that he would think that Jiang Chen was only interested in his videos. As such, he was impatient to return and present the "treasure."

...

It has been a week since Jiang Chen made a deal with Zhou Zihao. Just like what Jiang Chen had expected, an unusual guest appeared in his mansion.

It was a middle-aged man with a shaved head, lean, and sharp-looking figure. Despite possessing an ordinary face and a fading white sideburns, the shrewd aura emanating from him made Jiang Chen unable to ignore his presence.

Standing behind him should be his bodyguard. His slightly burly figure made him look like a person with excellent combat ability, but Jiang Chen had seen too many of them, so he didn't give it much attention.

"Ye Guolong, Colonel." Ye Guolong sharply extended his hand and shook hands with Jiang Chen. He only stated his rank without

going into the details of his exact position.

[It's actually a colonel. It's at least an officer rank, even at a deputy division level.] While Jiang Chen was secretly astonished, he did not reveal too much emotion on his face.

"Jiang Chen, just an ordinary businessman. Come inside, if you please." Jiang Chen smiled and invited Ye Guolong into the living area.

Sitting on the sofa, Ye Guolong looked around the living room and spoke, "Has Mr. Jiang been expecting my arrival?"

"Oh? Why do you think so?" Sitting across from him, Jiang Chen asked while smiling.

"You even have the tea already prepared." Ye Guolong smiled and took a sip of tea. "It's still hot."

"When an important guest is visiting, I can't be too shabby, can I?"

After some casual small talk, Ye Guolong put on a severe face as he headed to the critical topic.

"Mr. Jiang, I'll be straightforward with you—did you create the UAV Smart Control System 1.0?"

Seeing Ye Guolong's seriousness, Jiang Chen turned solemn as well and put down his tea.

"That's right."

Since he already asked, it was apparent that already know everything through an investigation, so it would be not sincere to run around in circles.

"When did you start developing this system? Other than Zhou Zihao, how many people have seen the source code?"

"Is Colonel Ye interrogating me?" Jiang Chen didn't answer and retorted.

Hearing that, Ye Guolong paused for a brief moment before he slightly frowned.

"This is a state secret, so please cooperate, Mr. Jiang."

"Someone seems to have submitted my work as military technology, so my work became a state secret? Could I interpret it this way, Colonel Ye?"

With that, Ye Guolong could not help but feel embarrassed.

This software was indeed submitted by the Zhou family, but according to their investigation, the software was developed by

Jiang Chen. It was precisely the reason why they went to look for Jiang Chen. It was so they could ensure the safety of the software. Even with the software, they were hesitant in using it. Since it pertained to national security, there was no room for error.

"Uh, for Mr. Jiang's contribution, we'll offer a fair amount of compensation. I hope Jiang Chen can consider what's important for the bigger picture," with that, Ye Guolong could no longer maintain a stern face and stated awkwardly.

Seeing Ye Guolong's expression, Jiang Chen smile and stopped giving him a harder time.

"The software started its development phase around three months ago before Zhou Zihao acquired the software from me, so only the development team overseas and I had seen the code. But I have to warn you, version 1.0 is only half-completed."

"Half-completed?" Ye Guolong furrowed his brows.

"Exactly, though it looks fine now, there are a lot of security risks in the system. These problems could have been solved in the subsequent updates, but unfortunately, Future Technology encountered some small problems. To tell you the truth, I gave the software to Zhou Zihao because of the threat I received from a not-to-be-underestimated person. This led us to rush out to release this semi-finished product in exchange for Zhou's policy protection," Jiang Chen responded.

"Do you know the consequences of messing with us with a half-

completed product?" Ignoring his last statement, Ye Guolong asked dubiously.

"Was the software created by Future Technology?" Jiang Chen feigned astonishment.

Ye Guolong was speechless again.

In fact, the software was not submitted under Future Technology's name. Even if something did occur, it was the Zhou family's problem, it had nothing to do with Future Technology.

Ye Guolong couldn't resist the urge to curse at the dumbass Zhou in his mind, who didn't realize that the software was half-completed.

But the Zhou family was not to be blamed. Though the system was half completed, it was definitely still usable. Only through a series of experiments would the flaw be exposed. One could say that they were too impatient.

After a brief moment of silence, he slowly opened his mouth, "How long will it take to complete it?"

"A month would do."

Hearing Ye Guolong asked this question, he knew the incident was about to be resolved.

"What kind of small problems did you encounter?" Ye Guolong asked impassively.

"This is the recorded message between the president of Linhua Group, Wang Linhua, and me." Jiang Chen put a USB on the table.

Frowning, Ye Guolong picked up the USB.

"I will report the problem for you to the higher-ups... Technicians should better stay away from politics."

"I do too, but someone always wants to use politics against me," Jiang Chen shrugged and stated in a helpless voice.

After thinking for a moment, Ye Guolong said, the UAV Smart Control System 1.0's maintenance will be contracted by Zhongxin High Tech to Future Technology."

Zhongxin High Tech was the Zhou family's corporation responsible for the design of drones, a leading corporation participating in the military artificial intelligence project. It would be impossible to obtain the patent rights of the "UAV Smart Control System 1.0" since he already gave the software to the Zhou family. Thus, it belonged to them now.

But Jiang Chen didn't mind because compared to the profit of Future 1.0, the profit from this military artificial intelligence project was negligible. He viewed the skin of military tech

company with utmost importance. With this, it was tantamount to the protection from the central authority. Wang Linhua must weigh it carefully before using the power of the system. A careless mistake could be regarded as treason.

Afterall, plotting against a military tech corporation was different than an ordinary company.

"So wouldn't Future Technology be considered as a military tech corporation?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"That's right." Ye Guolong nodded, stood up, and extended his right hand again. "As for the specifics of the agreement, Zhongxin High Tech's representative will be here tomorrow to discuss it with you. I hope you will have great, outstanding contributions to the national security."

"Of course." Jiang Chen shook Ye Guolong's hands, smiling.

Chapter 234: Each Parties' Response

"Little Zhang, you drive."

"Okay." The young man who stood behind Ye Guolong sat in the driver seat without a word and started the car.

Ye Guolong sat in the car, he played with the USB in his hands, cracked a smile and stuffed it in his pocket.

"The old guys at the Zhou and Wang family are embarrassing. F*ck, don't let the technical people be in politics. This is bullsh*t," Ye Guolong cursed before he lit a cigarette for himself.

To be honest, he felt sympathy for people like Jiang Chen.

When he was young, he also experienced something similar. It was his hard work, but people pointed things out on the side. In the end, when the results came out, his name had to go behind theirs.

The good thing was that his technicals were strong. People without ability could no longer climb above a certain point, but he ended up prevailing to the top.

He was at the subdivision level, with colonel rank. In a few years, it won't be difficult to become enter the division level.

Because of his experiences in the past, the people he despised the most were people that wanted to steal the work of others. In his perspective, the technical people should stay away from politics and diligently focus on the technicals. Or how else could the strategy of the country to promote technology be achieved?

But it was only wishful thinking. With technology becoming more and more political, even he had to play by the rules of the game.

He had seen Future 1.0. The human-computer interaction achieved to such a high level of complexity. He still remembered how amazed he was at the intricate design of the system. What shocked him more was that an expert like him could not figure the fundamental principle of the software out. This made him amazed at the ingenious of the younger generation.

Seeing today, the rumored chief engineer, Jiang Chen, was a stellar young man.

But unfortunately, even a stellar individual like him still must face the treacherous acts of people with ill thoughts.

Although the smart drone control system 1.0 could no longer be categorized under Future Technology's name, even Future Technology has to be contracted to update and develop the later phase of the smart drone control system. Ye Guolong already made up his mind. Within the permissible boundary, he would fight for Jiang Chen's interest as part of the compensation.

"You are right Colonel Ye." Zhang Wei drove the car and laughed.

Because of his identity, he could not comment more on the topic.

Ye Guolong, knowing that, didn't discuss the topic further with him.

"Go back to the hotel. We will go back to Shangjing; we have a lot of things to work on once we go back," Ye Guolong said nonchalantly, as he opened the car window to dust his cigarette.

"Okay."

Ye Guolong let the cold air inside the car as he abruptly said.

"Speaking of this, Little Zhang."

"Hmm?" Zhang Wei smiled.

"As someone of your age, what do you think of Jiang Chen as a person?"

Zhang Wei hesitated for a moment.

"In what area?"

"Anything, we are only chatting." Ye Guolong cracked a smile.

"Very rich." Zhang Wei chuckled.

"No sh*t, I don't need you to say that."

"I don't know if it is my illusion or not, but I think he has great combat ability." Zhang Wei had a stern expression.

"Great combat ability? Compared to you?" Ye Guolong asked curiously.

"Of course I am a bit better since I did spend so many years at the border," Zhang Wei touched his nose and said.

Ye Guolong laughed as he didn't say more. A soldier's combat ability compared with a technical person's? It was not embarrassing at all.

But what Ye Guolong didn't know was, Zhang Wei was not completely truthful.

Since it was his superior, how could he say he was weak compared to someone else? They were only chatting and would not actually fight.

But he had suspected that his illusion was wrong.

The instinct from the battlefield actually told him, if he met the

person on the battlefield, he had no odds of winning at all.

...

Wanghai city UA Consulate.

Smith sat at his table, with his legs crossed. He was drinking his afternoon tea while killing time reading the newspaper.

As the person responsible for the consulate, if there were no foreign affair duties or a citizen causing trouble, he spent most of the time relaxing. He enjoyed the feeling of no reporters checking in to see if he had wasted taxpayer's money or not. He could relaxingly enjoy the afternoon during work.

If the air were a bit better here, it would be perfect. But of course, he knew not everything could be perfect.

Then, the sound of the door being pushed open signaled the end to his relaxing afternoon.

"Mr. Smith. I think this is the second time I have seen you drinking tea in the afternoon," A yellow-skinned young man said in a ridiculing tone as he walked in with speedy steps, grabbed a chair without care and sat in front of Smith's table.

If Jiang Chen were here, he would be shocked to find out that the Chinese young man was precisely Zhang Youjie. The one that described himself as a consulate worker and tried to lure him to

immigrate.

"Ahem, is CIB that bored that you are doing the job of the inspectors?" Although complaining, Smith still stuffed the newspaper in his hands into the drawer and folded his hand together. "Speak your mind, what kind of trouble did you cause."

Zhang Youjie was not a consulate worker at all. Although his name is on the list, he is actually a CIB agent. This secret, only Smith as the Consul General knows about.

"No trouble. I just got an interesting piece of information from our insider." Zhong Youjie took out his phone and slid it across the table.

Smith glanced at the tightly shut door before he looked at the picture on the screen.

"Jiang Chen? I heard of this person before. The president of Future Technology. Wall Street seems to think highly of this person, stating he is the second Steve Jobs..."

"Everyone knows him, especially the Consul General who spends time reading the newspaper during work." Zhang Youjie had no considerations for Smith as he glanced at the guy displeasingly. Smith sniffed his nose and ignored his ridicule.

"Therefore? Is there a problem with this guy?"

"Our intel had always suggested that Future Technology's artificial intelligence's value was not as high as we had imagined. Since Future 1.0's basic principle was logical answering, as opposed to say they are advanced in software design, it would be fairer to say they have a strong understanding of human psychology. Although the encryption on the database is shocking, it is not advanced to the point worth our effort."

"Therefore?" Smith didn't look like he was too interested.

"The situation has changed."

"Future Technology has demonstrated value worth your effort now, am I right?"

"That's right." Zhang Youjie smiled mysteriously and lowered his voice. "Based on insider information, the smart drone control system designed by Zhongxin High Tech is actually from the president and chief developer of Future Technology - Jiang Chen."

"... This is surprising information," Smith turned more serious, he leaned against the chair and muttered to himself.

"Based on the source's analysis, this smart control system will be used on "Dragon II" High altitude unmanned reconnaissance aircraft, it could be used to guide the DF-21D Anti-ship ballistic missile. Because of the barrier in design, the "Dragon II"'s control system has been delayed and expected to be completed by May of next year. But because of this goddamn Future Technology, our little friends in the South China Sea are too nervous to sleep now,"

Zhang Youjie cursed out.

"It’s only software, is it worth being so dramatic about?"

Zhang Youjie glanced at Smith.

"Based on the information as well as the analysis conducted by the Pentagon, this artificial intelligence could allow "Dragon II’s" hardware utilization efficiency to increase by 10% more than expected. Do you know what this means?"

"I don’t know, but I feel CIB doesn’t seem to dislike Future Technology." Smith shrugged.

"Of course, because the possibility of a partnership remains."

"Oh?" Smith looked curiously at Zhang Youjie, "Partnership?"

"That’s right, based on my research, Future Technology had a conflict with Linhua Technology, but Linhua Technology has connections to the political scene. Therefore, Future Technology received a hindrance to its growth. To alleviate the pressure from the connection, he had to submit this software to Zhongxin High Tech to gain protection." Zhang Youjie had a dubious smile on his face. "We can use this point to convince him. The ticket to the free world, the support from the capitals, there is no way he would not be tempted."

"These goddamn "connections". God, this word is hard to

pronounce, but I like it." Smith began to chuckle.

"So I need your help." Zhang Youjie leaned against the chair, fingers crossed.

"Of course, at your service. But what if he is not interested anymore?"

"Make accidents happen to him, and also give a warning to the team behind him."

...

After sending Ye Guolong away, Jiang Chen returned to his mansion.

Because she didn't like strangers, when guests came, Ayesha went to her bedroom. When she saw that the guests had left, she came downstairs.

Seeing Jiang Chen's delighted smile, Ayesha also felt happy for him and tilted her head.

"Did something good happen?"

"Somewhat, but there is definitely going to be more troubles than before." Jiang Chen smiled as he rubbed Ayesha's head.

"Is it troubles I could help with?" Ayesha put her hand over his as she asked softly.

"Mhmm, I need to give you a gun, not a sniper... Could the Type 11 tactical pistol work?"

"Anything is fine, I have practiced hundreds of times in the virtual reality chamber."

Inside her blue pupils radiated warmth.

Jiang Chen rubbed Ayesha’s head again, got up, and narrowed his eyes while looking at the bright sunshine outside. He muttered to himself.

"This is troublesome. Do I have to be careful even when I'm just on the streets?"

Chapter 235: Sunbathe in the Apocalypse

"Then? You brought out a more advanced technology and submitted it to the superior of the person that threatened you?" Sun Jiao lied on the beach chair. Her red lips bit the straw, and she said sluggishly.

"Although your understanding is a bit weird, it is not wrong." Jiang Chen shrugged.

"Ancient people are so troublesome, if there is a problem, solve it with nukes." Lin Lin bit on the plastic spoon and said without consideration.

She spoke before the words processed through her brain, so Jiang Chen selectively ignored it.

"Nukes. It is better not to use it. Since... The scenery on that side is so beautiful." On top of the chair, dangling her pale and thin legs, Yao Yao tilted her head.

Right now, the four were relaxingly sunbathing.

Wait, how could they be sunbathing in the apocalypse? Especially in the winter time when the average temperature is below 10 degrees Celsius.

They had to thank Lin Lin.

After Lin Lin heard about the magic known as sunbathing, she longed for the "ancient" culture and immediately began to work in the backyard of the mansion.

She first took over the private pool used to store gold, then begged Sun Jiao to order the base's construction team to use polyethylene insulated wall to tightly surround the pool and add air filter vent. Then, she covered the swimming pool with sand.

Immediately, she then used multiple artificial UV light devices to replicate natural light. She installed it on the ceiling and simulated the sun's position based on the time and angle of the light.

Finally, she lavishly used hologram projection devices and flawlessly replicated a beach environment. Other than not being able to sleep in the water and no saline sea wind, there wasn't any big differences to the real thing.

Although Jiang Chen mocked her for all her effort as it would be simpler to use virtual reality to experience the joy. But Lin Lin argued, "the virtual world and real world are two completely unconnected things! This is the necessary experiment to research traveling through dimensions!" to negate his mockery.

All in all, after her work, the sunbathing experience was completed.

The room temperature was adjusted to 30 Celcius, even in the cold wasteland winter, they could enjoy the warmth of the summer beach.

"Woo, I do agree with Lin Lin's proposal." Sun Jiao sipped on the cold coke as she pouted.

Seeing that someone agreed with her perspective, Lin Lin immediately proudly raised her head.

"The civil society has civil society's rules, how could one just pull out nukes randomly." Jiang Chen facepalmed.

"Civilized people are so problematic," Sun Jiao muttered.

"Therefore, things on the other side are not easy," Jiang Chen said helplessly while grabbing a beer from the ice-filled box and taking a big gulp.

The cold beer sliding down his throat was a thrilling feel.

He burped and lied relaxingly on the chair, enjoying the rare moment of peace.

The reason why he appeared here was purely because he had a little bit of free time in his busy schedule. Then he was dragged here by Sun Jiao and Yao Yao to sunbath.

At first, he was not really interested, because this artificial sunbathing experience didn't look too fun.

But he quickly changed his mind.

Of course, the bikini is core to the beach.

The bikini formed with delicate white laces and transparent clothes covered most of the skin but had an intricate and cute vibe to it. Without guessing, it obviously belonged to Yao Yao.

With black lace as the main structure, the bikini that only barely covered the essential parts with seduction and sexiness naturally belonged to Miss Sun Jiao.

As to Lin Lin, her almost blinding white skin made people particularly jealous. The digitalized metabolic function meant that she didn't even need sunscreen to carelessly enjoy the sun.

Because it was too boring just to lie there quietly, Jiang Chen began to tell them about the things that happened on the other side.

"But this type of outdated technology, is it really okay?" Yao Yao quietly said.

Although it was Jiang Chen's special request, for her to create the "flawed" smart drone control system, it still made the benevolent Yao Yao feel guilty.

"It is already really advanced. If it is more advanced, then there would be new problems." Jiang Chen rubbed Yao Yao's head and

smiled.

Technology from 2020. It would be considered extremely outdated to today's standard. Even the programming language was the "most primal," but it was advanced to the modern world.

"If you can't use nukes, what about power armors?" Lin Lin continued to propose bad ideas as if the world is not chaotic enough. "A technology discrepancy of 150 years, a power armor alone would destroy that Linhua Group right? And there wouldn't be any nuclear radiation."

Jiang Chen facepalmed, why is communication so difficult.

Although he would definitely bring out the power armor, absolutely not now.

But wouldn't be too long until that happens.

"Linhua group is not a military organization, how should I say this... All in all, they are just a normal company. You have spent too long in virtual reality, how would you not know what a company is?"

"Umm, I didn't leave the hospital in virtual reality," Lin Lin murmured in a small voice.

"Is there no military?" Sun Jiao bit the straw as she said with authority. "That's even easier, I can wipe them all out by myself."

Then, she picked up another can of coke. She was on her fifth one.

Sun Jiao seemed to be particularly fond of coke.

[Why are they so violent... Yao Yao is more gentle.]

But hearing their words, Jiang Chen's heart felt warm.

Although they had no understanding of the other world, they still warmheartedly gave him ideas, caring for him.

"How's your research going? Lin Lin?" Jiang Chen asked nonchalantly.

He referred to carrying live beings through the interdimensional space.

Lin Lin pouted her mouth in remorse and shook her head.

"Are you stuck... Don't worry, take it slow," Jiang Chen comforted her.

With research, there is no use in rushing, although he wants to see results earlier too.

"Then what do you plan to do? Although I don't know civilized people's way of doing things, if you bring out the technology today, maybe tomorrow they will discuss with you the possibility of other technology," Sun Jiao said.

"There is no need, I only need some time," Jiang Chen shook his head, "I'll leave by March at the latest. Once Spring starts, the required food for the Sixth Street trade will be gathered overseas. The software will be my departing gift since that place is my home country."

Military tech is not military purchase, there was no room to collaborate with an external force. Since the research team is supposed to be overseas. Jiang Chen only stated he was only the representative for that research team in Han. Once the complete version has been passed on to Zhongxin High Tech, the subsequent update would not easily be given to Future Technology. Once they have the source code, Zhongxin Tech would likely improve on the completed version then create a final version. The subsequent update would be completed by them without much trouble.

Within this month, his ability to leave the country would likely be restricted, but it would not be so problematic once he passed on the software.

Since Jiang Chen was not the developer, he was only a representative.

If the research team is not in the country, it would be futile even if they controlled him.

In the next month, he would only have to prove he is a representative. For example, travel around? Or head home. As long he pretended to be "not writing the code," the assumption of "the research team being factitious" would no longer stand.

Controlling a representative would not bring any material benefits. It would be similar to the control of an embassy not being able to force the other country to give grounds in foreign affairs.

By that time, even if he really wanted to go, there wouldn't be any difficulties.

Perhaps someone would try to convince him to stay, but it would be impossible to force him to stay.

At least there wouldn't be a fool like Wang Linhua, gambling on if Jiang Chen was the only developer.

"What are you going to do with Linhua Group?" Sun Jiao asked.

"I said I will make him regret." Jiang Chen's smile was evil.

Looking at Jiang Chen's expression, Sun Jiao smiled and didn't say more.

At this time, the tablet on the table began to flash.

"Your phone." Lin Lin used the plastic spoon for the pudding to point at the tablet on the table.

Jiang Chen grabbed the tablet as he pressed the pick up button.

The image was first blurry before it quickly stabilized.

Ayesha appeared on the other side of the screen. When Jiang Chen left, he gave his EP to her and told her to contact him if anything happened.

"Did anything happen?"

"Your phone just rang, it was Wang Dehai."

"Mhmm, I see, I'll head back immediately."

Then, he hung up.

"Umm? Is that your woman on the other side?" Sun Jiao was thinking about something as her gaze became mischievous. "Your taste is quite good."

"Are you jealous?" Jiang Chen joked.

"How is that possible." Sun Jiao looked at him with charm, "Are her boobs bigger than mine?"

"Bigger doesn't always mean better. Even if it is a bit smaller, it can still be delicious..." Yao Yao used a small voice to argue.

"I agree." Lin Lin raised her hands, but then she smirked at Yao Yao without any good intention, "But for Yao Yao, there is nothing at all."

"QQ!"

Chapter 236: Meeting Wang Dehai Again

When he returned to the modern world, Jiang Chen returned the call.

During the conversation, Wang Dehai didn't mention what happened in the past few weeks at all and ceremonially praised Future Technology's outstanding achievement. Of course, he didn't mention the specific contribution, since name wise, the smart drone control system was the Zhou family's work. Then he briefly asked Jiang Chen to come to the municipal government when he has time before he hung up.

He took the EP back from Ayesha.

"Are you going to go out?" Seeing that Jiang Chen changed, Ayesha said gently.

"Mhmm." Jiang Chen nodded, then smiled. "I need to go to the municipal government. The old fox Wang Dehai wants to see me, so it's better for me to go soon."

"Do you need me to accompany you?'

"Drive for me." Jiang Chen rubbed Ayesha's head.

"Mhmm." Ayesha obediently nodded. "Let me go change."

Then, she turned around to go back to her room.

She changed into a black trenchcoat and tied her brown hair back into a ponytail. On top her high nose bridge was a pair of shades. She certainly did look like a cold and merciless bodyguard.

Although she always acted like a newlywed wife.

The two went into the garage and got into the car.

Ayesha started the car, and Jiang Chen put on the seatbelt. When the car drove out of the community, Jiang Chen scanned out the tainted window.

"Is there something wrong?"

"Nothing, maybe just my illusion." Jiang Chen muttered before he leaned back in the chair.

For a moment, he felt someone was watching him.

...

When they arrived at the municipal government building, Jiang Chen got out of the car, and Ayesha stayed behind.

A smart looking, middle-aged man stood at the door waiting.

When he saw Jiang Chen, he walked straight towards him.

"Hello, Mr. Jiang."

"Hello. And you are?"

"Wu Bo, Secretary Wang's assistant." Wo Bo extended his hand and shook with Jiang Chen. Then with a courteous gesture, he said, "Please follow me."

The two didn't speak along the way. When he took Jiang Chen to Wang Dehai's office, Wu Bo left.

Pushing the door open, Jiang Chen once again saw the aged but still dogmatic-looking face.

"Please take a seat." Seeing Jiang Chen, Wang Dehai smiled and gestured for him to sit.

Jiang Chen nodded and sat on the sofa before he too looked at Wang Dehai with a smile.

"It's been a while, is Uncle Wang's health doing well?"

"Very well." With the pen thrown into the pen holder, Wang Dehai looked deeply at Jiang Chen, then he said, "Little Jiang, you have been hiding quite well."

Jiang Chen obviously knew what he referred to. Wang Dehai wouldn't know that the smart drone control system 1.0 actually was created by Yao Yao not long after the meeting with Zhou Zihao.

It only took two days to exchange the video with Zhou Zihao. It didn't take three months of development time.

"Not hid well, just preparing for the worst," Jiang Chen said humbly.

But this humble attitude didn't please Wang Dehai.

Wang Dehai sniffed, laughed, and looked at Jiang Chen with eyes full of another meaning.

"I remember that you told me two months ago, Future Technology's artificial intelligence has no value in the military."

"Future 1.0 don't possess any military value, but the smart drone control system does," Jiang Chen replied expressionlessly.

The smart drone control system 1.0 was created by Future Technology, everyone knew this secret.

After a pause, Wang Dehai slowly said, "Linhua Group's shareholder meeting is canceled."

What this sentence means was Linhua Group's equity infusion of Future Technology has died in its infancy. Disregarding the promise given by Ye Guolong, SASAC would not vote in favor of this proposition. When the people on the top specifically said to take care of Future Technology, how could Wang Dehai use the power of policy to help Wang Linhua?

Without Wang Dehai's support, the flawlessly operated Future Technology was left with weaknesses for Wang Linhua to take advantage of.

"A wise decision because Future Technology never had the intention to sell shares." Jiang Chen smiled.

"Why are you not satisfied with Linhua Group's proposal?" Wang Dehai asked emotionlessly.

"The hundred millions of monthly tax revenue for the local government is too little? Your life is not worth it?" Jiang Chen laughed and asked rhetorically.

Even with more tax, it was still the government's money, it would only be Wang Dehai's political achievement, but Wang Dehai already has that in his book. If he could cut a piece of the cake from Future Technology, it would fit the Wang family's interest more. But since Jiang Chen did save his life, and practically helped the Wang family, it was not right for him to do this.

Especially due to the last sentence, Wang Dehai was ashamed.

The other person saved his life, but when Wang Linhua proposed to use Linhua Group to acquire Future Technology, he didn't stop him, but rather he permitted by acquiescence.

Knowing he was in the wrong, Wang Dehai's face turned red and shifted his gaze away from Jiang Chen.

"Wang Linhua was at fault in this event. I have talked to him already. But since the unpleasant event didn't happen, could Mr. Jiang let this go?" Wang Dehai asked slowly.

[Let it go? You are trying to get out of this. There is plenty of opportunities in the future to teach you a lesson.]

Wang Dehai nodded as he picked up a document from the table. He lightly coughed before he started reading.

"For Future Technology's outstanding contribution to national security in the high tech industry, on behalf of the Wanghai city government, I am honored to praise..."

Jiang Chen quietly waited for him to read through the bullsh*t before he accepted the certificate.

"So that's all for today?"

"That's right." Wang Dehai nodded.

"Then I'll go back." Jiang Chen smiled and picked the pile of documents before leaving for the door.

"Wait." Wang Dehai abruptly stopped Jiang Chen.

"Hmm?" Jiang Chen stopped and turned around.

"The thing you got from Zhou Zihao... Is it that?" Wang Dehai asked in an undertone.

"I don't know what you are talking about." Jiang Chen shrugged as he smiled at Wang Dehai.

The two silently gazed at each other.

"How do you plan to use that thing."

"Don't worry, I will never use that thing." Pausing, Jiang Chen then continued, "Of course, on the basis that the Wang family remains restraint."

Then, Jiang Chen disregarded the gloom on Wang Dehai's face and left his office.

But what Wang Dehai didn't see was, the instant he turned around, a contemptuous smile appeared Jiang Chen's face before it vanished.

[Linhua Group?]

[The sentence "I hope you don't regret this" is not merely a joke.]

Chapter 237: Will you kindly step into the jar?

Inside Linhua Building.

Wang Linhua sat in front of the office table with a gloomy look on his face.

The meat that was almost in his hands somehow slipped away and he couldn't do anything about it. His mood was obviously not too pleasant because Jiang Chen suddenly introduced the smart drone control system 1.0 which completely disrupted his plans.

The domestic real estate on the market was contracting due to the high price, but no market became apparent by the day. Linhua Group during 2008 was indeed very profitable, but it was going downhill. With the population aging and the growth of excessive housing, the downhill trend to the real estate market was almost irreversible.

Even with the introduction of policies such as decreased interest rate, the second child, it was still too difficult to reserve the inevitable trend of the downfall to the real estate market.

Just like the previous glorious, but now doomed coal industry, the real estate market will have to accept its inevitable fate. This point could be demonstrated by the shaky results on the financial report of Linhua group. While still in the positive, but their margin was getting narrower.

Wang Linhua, who could foresee the end to this industry, obviously was not going to wait for his own death.

There were only two choices in front of Linhua Group.

One to expand to the international market, two to shift into a different industry.

It was challenging to expand into the international market, for simple reasons. Due to the identity of the largest shareholder of Linhua group. While this skin worked well domestically, it didn't fair too well internationally. The current status quo is, to slice a share of the cake in the international market, then they would have to use the money to do so. Although Linhua Group had money, they were not like CNPC who could not care about losses and depend on government for subsidization. This route could work but at too high of a cost.

Especially because the international market was not within the territory of the Wang family, this increased too many variables for investment. The people back home didn't dare to trick you, but it would a different case outside. Once on the international stage, they may not withstand the test of capital.

As a careful consideration, Wang Linhua didn't use the first option.

On the second hand, it was easier to shift to a different industry. Just like the mine owners that sold the unprofitable mines, some

invested in sports, some in movies, even some entered the real estate market to eat "the leftovers."

While Linhua Group was prepared to enter the entertainment industry. But at this time, Future Technology's rapid growth gave Wang Linhua a tempting idea.

One software, a few servers, thirty-something programmers and sales would do. Once the software received recognition by the market, cash would be flying in.

Although Wang Linhua was lusting for Future Technology's profit, he consciously knew that tech was an industry where risk and reward both existed. Even Buffet didn't dare to invest in it, which meant that the risk and reward were not proportional.

Therefore, he had some scandalous ideas.

High risk, it only referred to the tech company that hasn't managed to secure a stable source of revenue generation. For Future Technology that already has done so, there was no risk. As long as he controlled Future Technology, and use this as the point to enter the tech industry, Linhua Group would smoothly complete its transition!

Future Technology's operating condition was smooth, had stable cash flow, the capitalists at Wall Street with bundles of cash could not exchange away Jiang Chen's share. But for Wang Linhua it was not a big deal. In this country, having money meant nothing, or there wouldn't be so many people with money leaving.

But Jiang Chen didn't manage to leave yet. Future Technology's primary operation was in the country. Before it could even enter the world stage, it was the perfect opportunity to make his move!

As long as he controlled Future Technology, he could enjoy the current profits and lead Future Technology to expand into the military tech field. Military artificial intelligence happened to be the strategic focus of the national defense now. It would not only increase the Wang family's stake politically, but it could also allow the core asset of the Wang family smoothly transition through the downward trend in the real estate market.

Two birds with one stone.

Because of this, Wang Dehai would permit his action.

But unfortunately, his plan fell through.

Wang Linhua rubbed his sore temple and picked up a document on the table. He forced himself to focus on the work at hand and not think about those bothersome things.

But then, there was a knock at the door.

With a frown, Wang Linhua cleared his throat.

"Please come in."

His secretary walked in with a pile of documents in his hands.

"What good thing just happened? You are so happy," Seeing the smile on the secretary's face, Wang Linhua's eyebrows jumped as he said emotionlessly.

"President Wang, the company just received a big project." Calming his excitement, his secretary Zheng Kai spoke with a trembling voice.

"How big of a project?" Wang Linhua slanted his mouth as he leaned against the chair.

Big project? The number of buildings yet to be sold are almost rotting in Linhua Group's hands. Knowing that it was hard to sell houses and that the stock market seemed to be rising again, who would save the housing market now?

"It's a project overseas. With initial estimates totaling over ten billion USD!"

Hearing this, Wang Linhua's eyes widened as he immediately sat up.

"What did you say? An overseas project? How much?"

"Ten billion USD..."

He stood up from his chair, circled the table, and ripped the documents from the secretary's hand as he looked emotionally at the documents in hand.

"Pannu Island's 680 square kilometers tourism, commercial as well as basic infrastructure agreement... Johnny International?" Wang Linhua was more and more excited as he read through the document, but when he saw the company name, he paused for a moment.

He never saw this name before.

"They have passed through the credit check for the first phase of construction fee. It is rumored that the party behind them is a South African Gold company, they have two mines that could be used as collateral for the loan, so it should be fairly trustworthy." Zheng Kai saw the skepticism on Wang Linhua's face as he rushed to explain.

He had heard about Pannu Islands before; a small country with relatively rich tourism resources but lacked infrastructure development. The foreign relation of Pannu and Han was just stable, although they have a consulate in Wanghai city, they still rented an apartment in Shangjing as an embassy.

Because they didn't have the money to build the basic infrastructure, they naturally could not attract investments. But if capitals were willing to heavily invest in the island country on the Pacific, everything would be different.

Based on this proposal's content, the project would be divided into four phases. After the completion of the first phase, Johnny International would pay the first phase of two billion USD in agreement, then the remaining eight billion would be paid at the end of the construction. As to the guarantee fee of two billion, it would be paid using the land near the construction zone of 110 square kilometers, a 70 square kilometers adjacent island as well as cash.

Paying with land pleased Wang Linhua perfectly.

Without exaggeration, once the ten billion USD infrastructure is completed, the land sold to him at a discount would more than double in price! As to whether the land would be developed by themselves, or sold to other people, it would be profit regardless.

Wang Linhua's hands trembled.

Even if he had seen the ups and downs in life, a ten billion dollar contract was a first.

This contract, for the Linhua Group in the stagnant domestic market, was an opportunity.

He didn't get overblown by the amazing deal. Inhaling a few times to calm his breath, Wang Linhua told his secretary in an undertone.

"Pannu Islands' political environment, Johnny International's background, I need you to give me a detailed report in two days. Do your job and your bonus doubles."

There was too much unknown in the international market. Without a detailed investigation, a wrong investment could send the company crashing. Even if the proposal was attractive, Wang Linhua didn't let his guard down because of this.

But when he saw the two gold mines as collateral in the appendix of the proposal, as well as the asset verification from the American side, he began to feel floaty.

"Yes!" Hearing his bonus could double, Zheng Kai was ecstatic and immediately left the office.

Seeing that Zheng Kai closed the door, Wang Linhua threw the folded documents on the table, the gloom on his face vanished.

[This is god helping me! How did that saying go...Misfortune may actually be a blessing.]

Wang Linhua almost wanted to shout to the sky to unleash his thrilled emotion.

Although he lost the opportunity to control Future Technology, there was a major breakthrough in the international market.

After taking a few more deep breaths, Wang Linhua grabbed his

phone and called the person responsible for managing the Wang family asset.

Once the ten billion USD deal is revealed, Linhua Group's market capitalization would without a doubt double! Because of his pessimism towards the real estate market, he used the bull market before to decrease Linhua Group's holding. But now, he must increase his holding again through the secondary market. He must do this before the details are revealed so that he can increase the holding of the Wang family in Linhua Group and maximize their gains!

Wang Linhua excitedly licked his lips before he sat back in his chair. He picked up the phone, called the manager of each department as he planned for a brief meeting.

They must win this contract!

But not even in his dreams could he imagine Jiang Chen had dug a giant hole for him, waiting for him - the Wang family to jump inside.

(1) Will you kindly step into the jar? - Try what you have devised against others.

Chapter 238: The Bodyguard from the General Staff Department

"I already called that Irish guy, that bastard must have started already. Hehe, you are such a bad person. Linhua Group would cry in a few months." Robert cussed in jest.

"I just want the greedy people to pay for their sin," Jiang Chen shrugged and said nonchalantly.

The Wang clan would never imagine that Johnny International was just a puppet established by Jiang Chen through Robert. Once he subverted the current government of Pannu Islands, that Johnny International would declare bankruptcy, and the contract between Wang Linhua and Johnny International would become nothing but a piece of paper.

This 10 billion USD project would leave the Wang family in ruins.

"So when do you plan to leave?" Robert asked.

"I may have to delay until January. I'm afraid I can only stay in the country this month," Jiang Chen uttered helplessly.

"Restraining order? I understand," Robert smirked.

When he came back to the US from Iraq, he was put on a restraining order by FBI until he was able to close the shell

company in Saudi and dispose of the tanker that was used to transport crude oil. It was only then that his name was finally removed from the blacklists off major airline companies.

"Only a month. It would get better after this month. How's training at the base?" Jiang Chen asked, yawning.

"Already done. According to Ivan's report, these rookies are now resembling a real soldier."

Jiang Chen nodded. Once the training was completed, they could proceed to the next plan.

"What about that Irish guy?"

"Superb acting. He played the antagonist role to the extreme," Robert reported passionately. "Other than the politicians he bribed, not one person on the Pannu Islands doesn't hate that guy."

"Then according to the script, the savior should be there soon." The corner of Jiang Chen's lips curved.

"That's right, so you have to be faster."

Jiang Chen hung up the phone, stretched, put the satellite phone in his pocket, and leaned against the chair.

This month would be relaxing, however, starting tomorrow, he

would no longer be able to stay home.

Only by wandering outside and allowing those skeptics to see for themselves that the program was truly not his creation would he could be considered safe.

This was very easy as long as those people testified that he hadn't touched the computer at this period of time, and he wouldn't have the "time to commit the crime." Then he would suddenly come up with a finished product a month later, those skeptics would naturally be discredited.

Just as Jiang Chen thought if he should call Liu Yao to tell her the delay in their vacation to Pannu Islands, there was suddenly a gentle knock on the door.

"Is there anything you need me for?" Jiang Chen turned around and saw Ayesha standing at the door.

"Someone wants to see you," Ayesha said softly.

[He's here already?]

"Mhmm, I see, leave it up to me." Smiling, Jiang Chen got up from the chair.

...

A black Santana parked outside the courtyard of the mansion, a man standing like a statue stood outside the steel gate.

1.8m high, slightly dark skin, with a sharp buzz cut, facial feature could only be described as ordinary. The vintage grey jacket made him even more ordinary. But if one underestimated his ability, without a doubt, they would pay the price for that...especially those spies from the hostile force.

Sauntering to the gate, Jiang Chen gave him a friendly smile and opened the door for him.

"General Staff Department, Dagger," the man meticulously said and extended his right hand.

The man called Dagger was the bodyguard that the bigwigs had sent to protect Jiang Chen's safety. One part was to protect him, the other to keep an eye on him. But Jiang Chen didn't mind since it was only for a month.

"Jiang Chen," Jiang Chen he said in a casual tone and shook his hand.

The moment they hand shook, Dagger's appeared astonished as he stared at Jiang Chen is disbelief.

In response to Dagger's face's bewilderment, Jiang Chen merely smiled and let go.

"Had Mr. Jiang worked with guns before?" Dagger asked in an undertone.

"I played with them overseas. I don't think this breaks any law." Jiang Chen laughed.

Dagger did not respond and nodded, and then he took out a document from his inner pocket and handed it to Jiang Chen.

"From today onwards, your safety will be my responsibility until the program is developed and transferred to Zhongxin High Tech. If you have any concerns or if you're displeased with my performance, you can call the number provided in the document to report to my superior. I will do my best to do my work to the best of my ability without affecting your daily life, but I hope Mr. Jiang can also cooperate with me. In the next 30 days, please avoid traveling in crowded places as much as possible, so as to reduce the difficulty of my work.

"Will I encounter any danger?" Jiang Chen frowned slightly.

"We don't rule out the possibility of encountering external force's agents," Dagger responded tersely.

Jiang Chen nodded.

He had already expected this situation to occur until the completion of the program. If anyone wanted to prevent Han from getting their hands on "UAV's Smart Control System 1.0," targeting

him would be the easiest choice.

But after this month, the situation should be a lot safer.

"No problem, do I need to provide you with a room?"

The man called Dagger shook his head.

"No need, I will maintain a certain distance with you, Mr. Jiang can pretend I don't exist."

"Then where will you stay?" Jiang Chen chuckled.

Dagger pointed at the black Santana behind him.

"I'll be okay in the car. Call me if you encounter any special situation."

"No problem." Jiang Chen shrugged. Just as he was about to say that was all, he suddenly remembered and asked, "What about my family?"

"Rest assured, our people are already secretly protecting them," Dagger answered positively.

In fact, Jiang Chen himself was not too scared of the threat of the external force. As for individual combat power, no one in this

world could match him, even the agent from General Staff Department named Dagger. The only thing he was anxious about was his family in the far Hucheng.

Although Dagger had already stated that they were protecting them, Jiang Chen was still worried.

The original plan was to go home in New Year to give the two elders a surprise, as well as carefully explain his current situation. Since some words were better off said in person rather than on phone.

But now, it seemed to be necessary to head back earlier.

Jiang Chen briefly explained his recent itinerary to Dagger before he returned to the mansion.

To avoid unnecessary trouble, Jiang Chen stored the virtual reality training chamber in the storage dimension. With nothing to do after Ayesha completed her two-hour training program, she started watching TV.

Seeing that Jiang Chen came back, she lowered the TV volume and asked, "Is it done?"

"Mhmm. What do you think about the ability of that person?" Jiang Chen was naturally referring to Dagger.

"Weaker than me." Only after a moment's thought, Ayesha came

to this conclusion, and then she went on without hesitation, "At least when I was observing him, he didn't notice my gaze at all."

If Dagger heard this comment, he would probably have the urge to commit suicide by smashing his head onto a block of tofu.

"My Ayesha is already this strong?" Jiang Chen praised her and couldn't resist rubbing the brown hair.

Her gorgeous face blushing, Ayesha timidly lowered her head.

"After all, I have already completed at least 500 times of training sessions in the system... Is that level of bodyguard necessary? I alone should be enough to protect you."

Even for a veteran soldier, it would be impossible to complete 500 missions in peacetime. Considering realism of the virtual reality system and the increase in physical ability due to the genetic vaccine, the experienced agent Dagger would naturally lose to Ayesha.

"Somethings may not be what they appear on the surface. Rather than saying that the bodyguard Dagger is here to protect me, it is more fitting to say he is keeping an eye on me." Jiang Chen shrugged.

A penetrating light flashed across Ayesha's eyes while she softly uttered lethal words, "Do you want me to get rid of him?"

"Ahem, that would cause more trouble, so just ignore him for now. It'll be difficult this month, but after this month, we can then move."

"Move? This place is not good?" Ayesha asked as she tilted her head.

"It's not about good or bad—there are too many things to consider here," Jiang Chen explained in simple terms as he didn't want to do too much explanation about this issue.

Ayesha half-knowingly nodded.

In regard to the trouble that Jiang Chen was facing, she didn't really understand. But she was clear on one point: regardless of he faced, as long as he needed her, she was willing to raise her gun for him.

Just like what happened in Veit.

With her hands encircling Jiang Chen's neck, her blue eyes gazed softly at the black pupils.

"Wherever you will go, I'll always be with you."

Jiang Chen felt his heart being filled with warmth. Heart throbbing, Jiang Chen bit the lovely, red lips.

The quiet atmosphere lasted for a long while before the two parted.

"I plan to go back to Hucheng tomorrow."

"Hucheng? Your hometown?" She vaguely recalled Jiang Chen mentioning it before.

"Mhmm, I will stay there for a month. Take some change of clothes with you."

Hearing this, Ayesha's face all the sudden turned red as a rare hint of coyness crept into her voice.

"Could...could I meet your parents?"

Jiang Chen paused before a troubled look appeared on his face.

[It's okay, but it feels...]

"Forget it if it's troublesome," Ayesha softly said, albeit slightly disappointed.

She didn't want him to feel troubled.

"No, not troublesome at all..but you have to promise me one thing." Jiang Chen opened his mouth looking somewhat awkward.

"Mhmm!" The blue pupils began to show an excited look.

"When my parents ask you about your age, say that you're over 18..."

Chapter 239: The Glorious Return

Hucheng, a tranquil and beautiful small town that sat on the east side of Fanyang Lake.

Compared to a major metropolitan like Wanghai, the pace of life here was slow. There were no towering skyscrapers, crowded streets, nor an endless stream of traffic on the streets. The buildings along the streets were only four or five stories high with first floor shops. This type of scenery was hard to see in Wanghai city.

After being used to the propensity of the big city, occasionally breathing the air of a small town indeed was a unique experience.

Watching the familiar but strange scenes outside the window, Jiang Chen somehow felt melancholic about coming home.

Since he entered Wanghai university five years ago, he rarely came back. After his graduation, he didn't even go home. He calculated, since the last time he came, it has been more than two years.

With the dream of building his own career in the big city, as well as being a proud university student, he swore when he graduated that without becoming successful, he will never come back. Now that he thought about it, when he graduated, he didn't live the best life.

But life is always filled with countless coincidences. The life full

of hardships only lasted for a year before his life became a fantastic journey that was almost impossible to imagine. Not only did he drive a luxury car accompanied by a beauty, a Senata from the General Staff Department followed him.

Not even the governor of the province could receive this type of treatment.

When the car passed through the high school he attended, the familiar gate as well as the aged face in the security room flashed by. Looking at the rusty school emblem, Jiang Chen felt even more melancholic.

"Should we stop here for a bit?" Ayesha noticed the change in Jiang Chen's expression as she caringly asked.

"No need, I want to go home earlier." Taking a deep breath, Jiang Chen shook his head.

The people he longed for the most was without a doubt his parents.

Finally coming home...

Looking at the familiar street, a genuine smile appeared on his face.

"Mhmm." Ayesha scanned the GPS and accelerated.

The black Senata following them also picked up the speed as it followed Jiang Chen's Maybach without missing a beat.

It was a young man sitting in the driver seat. He looked sharp, but also unsettled. He looked like he was new to the job. The man called Dagger sat in the passenger seat. With eyes narrowed, he looked like he was taking a nap. But the people who know him all knew, if you thought he was asleep, you would be absolutely wrong.

"Business people are so damn rich," Miao Jun holding the steering wheel stared at the Maybach and said enviously.

Living in a mansion, driving a luxury car.

But envy was envy. With his meager salary, there was no hope of buying a car like that.

Dagger opened his eyes to glance at his partner before continuing to close his eyes. His voice sounded reminiscent.

"Experience life more when you are young. When the time is right, someone will ask you if you will leave or get promoted. If you decide to leave, once you take off your uniform, you can go work as a bodyguard for rich people. The money you earn is enough to buy one."

The people wealthy enough to hire ex-agents as bodyguards

would not cheap out on the money. Since the bodyguards' loyalty is connected to their life. The comrades that he worked with within the General Staff Department that chose to leave all made enough money not only for a car but a lovely house. But him, with all forms of injuries, only the shiny badges brought some comfort.

But he didn't regret anything. Because he is a soldier, the moment he enlisted, he decided to continue down this route.

Miao Jun looked at Dagger in shock and laughed in embarrassment.

"We'll see. Leaving the army is still too far away."

Dagger cracked a smile, and the wrinkles on his face were squished together.

Although his partner named Miao Jun didn't say anything, he knew the young man would decide to leave the army. It was a different time now. Nothing wrong to consider more for yourself. There were only foolish men like him who would contribute his entire life to the greater good.

"Not early, make up your mind earlier. Once this mission is completed, your profile will be promoted. If you perform well, it won't be long before someone asks you the question."

"Haha, Commander Dagger, what do you think about my ability." Miao Jun laughed with a sense of pride in his voice.

He had the pride of the young generation. Since he was a top student from military school, regardless if it was digital warfare, fighting, or shooting, he obtained A+ in every category. He did have the right to be prideful.

But Dagger just laughed and said.

"Enough to be a bodyguard for a small boss, but still too naive for people who fear death."

He didn't hear the praise he expected to hear. Miao Yun paused for a moment as he made an awkward face.

"People who fear death?"

Dagger didn't respond to Miao Jun's question as he closed his eyes and continued to rest.

Miao Jun glanced at the old commander, displeased.

[As the newcomer of the new generation, what kind of qualifications do you have as an old man who didn't even go to university to berate me like this?]

Under this mixture of emotion, he couldn't hide his temper and spoke with an attitude.

"This is a B level mission, could you take it more seriously?"

Dagger opened his eyes as he looked dubiously at Miao Yun, he only left a sentence with deeper meanings before he closed his eyes again.

"The person sitting in the car in front is a person that fears death."

Miao Jun was confused.

This means he has a powerful bodyguard?

[But other than the foreign girl driving, who else is in the car?]

[Could someone be hiding in the trunk?]

Dagger peeked at his confused expression and shook his head secretively.

While this rookie has the abilities to be successful, his observation skill is too weak. As an agent, weak ability doesn't matter. But a flaw in observation is the most critical weakness of all.

On the car in front, not only was Dagger unable to see the boundary of the VIP being protected, but he also sensed the foreign girl driving the car with a cold expression has abilities that should

not be underestimated.

Although the mission was B, there was no difficulty at all.

...

Whatever the two people behind them thought, Jiang Chen had no interest at all. Just like what Dagger suggested, he and Ayesha pretended that those two didn't exist.

It was around half an hour more before the car drove into an old looking neighborhood.

He parked the car, held onto Ayesha's hand, and stepped onto the familiar concrete stairs.

When he climbed to the fourth stairs, looking at the old door, he had a bitter smile on his face.

In three months time, he had sent over one million home. But by the looks of it, mom and dad didn't even touch the money.

Jiang Chen inhaled deeply, raised his hand, and gently knocked on the door.

Ayesha who stood beside him had a rare frantic expression on her face. Although the franticness was carefully hidden behind her cold mask, when she met Jiang Chen's eyes, her coldness melted

away, and her nervousness of "meeting the parents" was exposed.

Jiang Chen squeezed her hand as he gave a comforting smile.

"Don't be nervous, my parents are nice people."

But even though he was the person saying that he began to feel nervous himself.

Half a month ago he just told his mom he has no girlfriend, but now he brought a foreign girl back. Would mom and dad be happy or...

The footsteps behind the door began to approach.

The door opened.

Staring at the emotional figure behind the door, Jiang Chen felt his eyes tearing up.

"Mom!"

Chapter 240: Mother

Hardship had left its mark of time on that face, seeing the dyed white hair on her temples, Jiang Chen could not help but become teary-eyed.

"Mom!" Jiang Chen hugged his mom.

"Little Chen, you're finally back." Embracing her beloved son, Li Xuemei's voice was choked with emotion.

"Mhmm, I'm back. Your son has grown up," the rim of Jiang Chen's eyes were full emotions as he took a deep breath and said with a tremulous voice.

"Accomplished or not, you're always my son! Old man, your son is back. Come out and take a look!" Lin Xuemie shouted behind her.

But there was no response in the room.

She slapped her forehead and chuckled when it dawned on her. "Look at this memory—I think your dad is probably playing chess in that stone pavilion in the district. You quickly go look for him, since it's almost time to eat. That old man must be showing off with his chess friends, flaunting the house that his dear son had purchased in Wanghai City."

Due to her old age, her memory was not as good. Jiang Chen was

heartbroken while staring at his mother.

"What's there to boast about me?"

Although his words sounded humble, a proud smile unconsciously crept into his face.

"Ok, stop bragging, go get your dad to help me. My little Chen is finally back, so your mom will show off some skills... Eh? This is?" As she spoke, Li Xuemei's eyes suddenly lit up as though she had discovered a treasure while she stared at Ayesha, who was hiding behind Jiang Chen.

A different face, to someone who never left the country, was always an exciting news.

"I'm Jiang Chen's assistant." Because of trepidation, Ayesha almost bit her tongue.

Assistant?

Jiang Chen took a moment to process it. It was different from what they had agreed upon. He gazed at the flushed face and facepalmed. It finally dawned on him why would Ayesha change her mind.

He didn't expect that at the last moment, this girl would be frightened silly...

But this could also work. It saved him from being "interrogated" by his parents.

"Assistant?" Li Xuemei looked at her son, baffled.

Why bring the assistant back? She thought it was a daughter-in-law that her son had brought back. Even if it was a foreigner, she would not mind. Rather, she would be proud of her son.

Since she grew up in the Reform and Opening period, to the people in their era, being married to a foreigner was something to be proud of.

"Assistant in my work. Because it's quite hectic in the company and due to some business needs, she has to come back with me. This is Ayesha from UA," Jiang Chen hurriedly explained.

Strictly speaking. Ayesha is a Syrian, but considering the copious negative news in that area, Jiang Chen didn't want his parents to think too much, so he didn't say her real hometown. The green card was processed by an acquaintance of Robert's, so it would be accurate to say she was an American

Listening to Jiang Chen's explanation, Li Xuemei thought for a brief moment before she smiled at Ayesha, and then she warmly held her hand. "Come in. I haven't cleaned the house for a while. Please don't take offense."

"It's, It's okay," Ayesha responded, face reddening.

"Our little Chen has always been like this. He's pretty slow with the girls—"

"Ahem! Mom, why are you revealing your son's dark past?" Jiang Chen grumbled and coughed loudly to interrupt his mom from continuing.

Jiang Chen looked embarrassed, but Ayesha wore an interested expression on her face.

"What dark past!" Li Xuemei rebuked Jiang Chen before once again smiled at Ayesha, saying, "Shasha, let aunt tell you, little Chen has always been courteous since he was young. It's the first time he brought a girl home."

"Shasha?" Eh, isn't the spelling of a foreign name—"Jiang Chen forced a smile as he wanted to correct his mom's mistake, but Ayesha didn't' seem to mind.

In regard to the name "Shasha," she appeared to take a liking to it.

"His first time?" Ayesha had a timid expression.

"Mhmm!" Li Xuemei nodded. She obviously could tell the meaning behind Ayesha's expression. Thinking of her would-be grandchildren, she affectionately took Ayesha's hands and

continued cheerfully, "Let me tell you when he was young..."

Seeing the "mom and daughter-in-law" walking into the room, smiling and laughing, a genuine smile broke on Jiang Chen's face.

Although he was afraid of his mom revealing his "dark past," but when he thought about the happiness on her face, it did not matter anymore.

As long as she felt happy.

...

Ayesha began helping Li Xuemei to prepare dinner in the kitchen.

Speaking of food, it was worth mentioning a small episode that happened between Ayesha and Jiang Chen.

In the beginning, Jiang Chen was concerned about Ayesha's religion. Therefore, he specifically instructed not to deliver pork to the organic food company that delivered vegetable and meat to his mansion.

Until one day, when Ayesha and Jiang Chen grabbed a takeout ham pizza, did the pork taboo was finally resolved.

According to Ayesha's argument, when she became Jiang Chen's

woman, in fact, she had already violated the doctrine, and automatically abandoned her religious identity, therefore her diet taboo would naturally no longer exist. But when it comes to pork, she still preferred beef and lamb, and this was purely because of eating habits, rather than taboo.

Witnessing the death of her parents at the hands of religious zealots, she had long begun to question her religion. Thus, towards her husband becoming an atheist, she didn't feel any repulsion at all. Particularly, after living in this highly secular state for some time, she began to get accustomed to living just for one person.

In fact, Ayesha's change was noticeable, except Jiang Chen never really paid attention to it. For example, if Ayesha was really religious, she would be seen praying several times in a day, but Ayesha never prayed at home.

Seeing that Ayesha and his mom had such a good relationship already, Jiang Chen left the time to the two as he went downstairs alone.

Downstairs, he met Dagger and Miao Yun leaning against the Santana chewing on takeout food.

"Do you want to come up for a meal?" Seeing the poor guys, Jiang Chen invited with a smile.

Miao Jun wanted to accept, but Dagger shook his head.

"There are strict rules within the organization, so just pretend we don't exist."

Jiang Chen shrugged and no longer insisted.

"Suit yourself, but I don't understand how you guys are so obvious downstairs... Is this really okay?"

Hearing this, Dagger cracked a smile.

"What do you think? Should agents go hide in the bushes? Those are assassins, not bodyguards."

Jiang Chen laughed, he shook his head and walked to the stone pavilion.

Dagger continued digging into his plastic container of fish-flavored minced pork with rice.

"Do we not need to follow?" Finished, Maio Jun threw the container into the garbage and dusted his hands.

Dagger chewed slowly. After swallowing the food in his mouth, he nonchalantly said," No need. This neighborhood is safe."

Miao Jun immediately realized after taking a moment to think, he awkwardly laughed." People on the top didn't even tell us—"

"Because there's no need," Dagger interrupted his partner's words, throwing the squeaky clean lunch box into the trash, "That's why I said, there is a lot more you need to learn."

VIP was already under protection, how could his relatives' security be overlooked?

If anyone dared to make moves here, it was no different than running straight into a gun.

Chapter 241: Jiang Jianguo Eager For Grand Children

The district was not big, but the square was extremely lively, and it was probably due to the fact that the residents were mostly comprised of the elderly and children. After all, there were less and less young people interested in outdoor activities these days.

Those who lived in the community were mostly employees of the nearby well-known state-owned steel factory. Years passed, the generation that had devoted their youth to the industrial foundation of the republic had become old, and this led to the community becoming a gigantic retirement home.

Hucheng's young generation would often choose to live somewhere closer to the metropolis, near Hucheng or even further and more prominent city to search for opportunities, and they would leave their children to their parents. As such, leaving behind children and the elderly became a common scenario in this generation.

Of course, these were off-topic.

Those who were accomplished outside were rare. Therefore, when Jiang Chen's parents heard that their son managed to build his own business and was even able to buy a house, it was no wonder his parents were extremely gratified.

The only thing that left Jiang Chen's parents worried was the matter of grandchildren.

Although Jiang Chen not in a hurry to get married this early, his parents were obviously not satisfied with the idea. His classmates in junior high, their kids had long been able to walk. And this included the prom queen of his junior high, though she no longer possessed her previous allure...

In the center of the square, a few old women were getting ready to dance.

While passing through, Jiang Chen walked to the Stone Pavilion where his mom told him to go.

...

"Check! Haha," Jiang Jianguo laughed out and slapped the chess piece in his hand on the board in high spirits.

The chess mate sitting across him had his eyebrows furrowed, but then soon looked relieved and exclaimed, "What a nice move, I thought my rook would be able to regain lost ground, but I didn’t expect this bishop to take my rook out."

"Tough Victory, tough victory. It's s getting late, and if I don’t go back now, I'm afraid my wife will come here and made me go home to eat," Jiang Jianguo said humbly and waved his hands.

"Ah, Old Jiang, you're lucky. Your son is accomplished now, your chess skill has improved, and your body is healthier than before. If

my son is half as accomplished as yours, I'll laugh in my dream." Zhang Xinye sighed.

His son went to Hongcheng to work, but his monthly salary could barely cover his expenses after the mortgage. Although they were close to Hucheng, they only had time to visit in New Year time. The only thing he was satisfied with was his three years old grandson. Although a bit naughty, he was born healthy.

"Old Zhang don't sigh. Your grandson can already recite poems, compared to my grandson who still plays with building blocks all day long despite being four years old already." Although it sounded like Yan Zhengwen was complaining, from the big smile on his face, his affection towards his naughty grandson was quite evident.

"Speaking of which, Old Jiang, when will you get your son to give you a grandson?" Old Zhang jested.

In the topic of grandson, Jiang Jianguo's had nothing to say...

"Don't even talk about grandson, that kid doesn't even have a wife yet."

"Tha couldn't be... Logically speaking, now that little Jiang'has a house and opened his own company, matchmakers in Hucheng should be forming a long line. What do the city girls think?" Old Yan touched his mustache, looking baffled.

Since the elderly were not using the Internet, they were

obviously not aware that the little Jiang they were referring to was not only affectionately called as the national husband by the female fans on Weibo, he also had an ambiguous relationship with a female celebrity...

Without exaggeration, if Jiang Chen would really post his intention to seek marriage in Weibo, those who wanted to warm his bed (1) would form a long line.

"Old Liu, who works at a facility service, has a daughter who isn't married yet. She's also a university student who has just graduated this year. Why don't I help you talk to him about her?" Old Zhang asked tentatively.

"There's also the daughter of Old Xia. She just graduated this year. I heard she is also in Wanghai City working at a big company. I think it will definitely work to match these two together!" Chen Weidong, who had just lost a chess game, also made his idea known to his friend.

"Sigh. It's too early to say that," Old Jiang let out a sigh.

"How's it too early? It's almost New Year, Your son will be back this year, right?" Old Zhang asked.

"Yes, right now there are more men than women. Didn't you listen to the news? By 2020, there will be 20 million more men than women that it will be harder to get married by then." Old Yan, who was wearing a pair of spectacles, was a technician in a steel factory and enjoyed reading news.

"Only 20 million, yet our population is over a billion," Old Zhang scoffed.

"Fool, only less than 200 million need to get married. This 20 million makes up 10 percent of..."

Listening to his old friends' banter, Jiang Jianguo looked worried. What if his son really couldn't find a wife? Now that the house is built, but without a grandson, what kind of sad story is this?

Jiang Jianguo made up his mind and quickly pulled Old Jiang.

"How is Old Liu's daughter?"

"I have seen her before...extremely beautiful," Old Zhang said cheerily.

"Then you have to help me out. I can't just wait for that kid to make his move," Jiang Jianguo urgently said.

"Haha, Old Jiang can't sit around any longer. Okay! I will help you out on this one!"

"And Xia Donghua's daughter as well..."

"I'll go talk with old Xia. He is part of our technical department,

so it's easy for me to talk to him about this. Haha, Old Jiang, if this works out, you have to treat me to a bottle of wine," Old Ye chuckled.

"No problem, it's just a wine. If my kid really likes the girl, I'll treat you guys to ten bottles!" Old Jiang promised enthusiastically.

"Then I'm lucky, I didn't help at all, and I get to drink alcohol," Old Chen said gleefully.

"Eh? Is that Little Jiang?" the sharp-eyed Old Zhang craned his neck to take a look.

Pausing for a second, Jiang Jianguo wanted to say he should get a pair of glasses like old Yan, but when he turned around, he was flabbergasted.

"Dad! I'm back!" Looking at the familiar figure, Jiang Chen's eyes became moist, his voice was also shaking.

"Son, this kid! You finally remembered to come back?" Looking at his son, Jiang Jianguo's eyes became teary. Although his words were harsh, he hugged Jiang Chen's shoulder and patted him vigorously nonetheless.

"Not bad, stronger, good, good..." After saying several good words, his voice sounded choked.

Being deeply aware of their old friend's tendency to save face, if

someone he knew saw this emotional scene, he would be too embarrassed to play chess within a fortnight. Thus, the three friends bade goodbye.

"Old Jiang, my wife is here, I'll be going ahead now."

"Same for me, haha, I still haven’t bought the egg my wife asked me to buy. I’ll take my leave I’ll leave the chess to you."

"Haha, I'll go too. I will not disturb you two.’

"Uncle Wang, Uncle Liu, Uncle Yan, I will go visit you another day," Jiang Chen promised sincerely.

All of them worked at the steel factory, Jiang Chen remembered when he was young, Jiang Jianguo often took him to visit them.

"Haha, little Jiang is accomplished now, yet he can still remember us..."

After they said their greetings, the three elderly left.

Though he had a lot to say to his son, his throat moved for a while, but no words came out.

Thousands of words would not equate to seeing his own son.

"Dad, mom asked me to tell you to go home to eat."

When he heard "dad," Jiang Jianguo suddenly felt somewhere in his heart was constricting.

Ecstatic, Jiang Jianguo patted his son’s shoulder. He was so emotional that he words became incoherent.

"Okay, okay! Let’s go home and eat!"

(1) Warm his bed is an internet way of saying wanting to sleep with him.

Chapter 242: Just tens of millions

Dinner was very sumptuous.

They were Jiang Chen's favorite—potatoes, roast pork, beef with green pepper, and fresh and tender steamed carp.

Having been able to savor the familiar taste again, Jiang Chen devoured the food as though he would swallow his tongue along with it. He ate three bowls of rice before he was satiated.

Sitting on the side, Ayesha secretly memorized Jiang Chen's favorite dishes and made up her mind to learn from Aunt Mei so she can cook for him every day.

Speaking of Ayesha, she almost replaced Jiang Chen's position as the center of attention on the dinner table.

When his parents realized that the foreign girl with brown hair and blue eyes spoke perfect Chinese and had a gentle personality to boot, they warmly welcomed her. Especially Li Xuemei, she constantly winked at Jiang Chen, who was busy eating his food. She wanted him to treat her more affectionately.

As a woman herself, she was acutely aware that the relationship between the two was very unusual. At the very least, the foreign girl has affection towards Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's worry was nevertheless excessive. Li Xuemei, who

hadn't met a foreigner before, could not discern Ayesha's age at all. She only felt the girl's skin was fair and pale and possessed a relatively slender figure, and concluded that all foreigners probably look this way.

Simply put, she was pleased with Ayesha who could potentially become her daughter-in-law.

But Jiang Jianguo didn't think too highly of a foreign wife. He wanted to get a grandson soon to flaunt in front of his chess buddies. If his son took a foreign wife, what if his daughter-in-law's side of the family took his grandson away? It would be difficult to see his grandson across the Pacific Ocean.

Having never left the country and surfed the web much, he naturally didn't know that people overseas didn't have a habit of taking care of their grandchildren.

After dinner, Li Xuemei had practically revealed all the embarrassing childhood stories of Jiang Chen to Ayesha before walking to the kitchen. Ayesha who had read through the etiquette in Han, timidly followed behind her and washed the dishes with her.

This action naturally scored high points in the two elderly's eyes. Jiang Jianguo, who was slightly unwilling before, couldn't help but feel more pleased.

While the two women stayed in the kitchen, the two men sat on the living room sofa, watching TV while bragging.

After saying a few words, Jiang Jianguo suddenly put on a stern face and stared at Jiang Chen.

"Little Chen, be honest, when do you plan to get married?"

"Married? It's still early—" Jiang Chen stated casually.

"Not early at all! Your uncle Wang, who always put you on his back, had a grandson who already knows how to recite poems!" Jiang Jianguo said desperately, his eyes widening upon hearing that his son had no intention to get married yet,

"Dad, don't rush things. Don't you want to enjoy life for a few more years?" Jiang Chen asked, slightly embarrassed.

Towards becoming a father, he was not mentally prepared at all. How to bear the responsibilities of becoming a father? How to educate the child? He had never given these questions a thought before.

And he was not really anxious about the issue of having children.

With the advent of technology in the apocalypse, modifying the somatic DNA to increase life expectancy was no longer impossible. Though it could not achieve eternal life, it was bound to extend life expectancy to one or two hundred years, and it would be enough time to wait for the possibility of eternal life. Once the civilization in the apocalypse has been rebuilt, it would no longer be a dream.

Since there was no need to consider aging, the necessity to pass on the genes didn't seem too imminent now.

Jiang Chen even considered that after moving his parents overseas, he would bring some "supplements" from the apocalypse for his parents. Although those who were in advance in years were not suitable to use a genetic vaccine, some anti-aging medicines could work wonders on them.

"What enjoying life! I only want a grandson." Jiang Jianguo was furious.

This was a bit difficult now.

As for his father's willful demand, Jiang Chen found himself troubled. At the moment, he really couldn't think of a way to convince the elderly who was "eager for a son."

"Ummm, marriage shouldn't be forced. After all, this isn't the old age. There's a famous saying... Right! It is better to be single than to get married to the wrong person."

"What marrying? You're naturally going to get married!"

"Isn't that all the same?" Jiang Chen asked, dumbfounded.

Seeing that his son refused to compromise, Jiang Jianguo

pondered for a moment as he didn't want to push him too hard. If his son thought he was being too pushy, what if he doesn't come home anymore?

After a moment, Jiang Jianguo said gently, "Okay, you can decide this on your own, but you have to keep marriage in your mind. The purpose of life is to have a career and family. Since you're accomplished now, use the opportunity to find a good wife to avoid problems in the future..."

"Yes, yes, yes, you're right." Jiang Chen nodded fiercely.

In short, whatever the elderly said, it would be better to just listen. As for how he would execute it, he had his own plan.

"That girl..."

"Ayesha."

"Mhmm, that Ayesha is not bad, but her family is too far. So if there are conflicts over the grandchildren, it will be ugly. So think about it carefully. Old Liu's daughter is not bad —"

"Dad, do you want me to go on matchmaking dates now?" Jiang Chen smiled bitterly.

"What? You look down on these dates?" Jiang Jianguo's eyes widened. "Your dad married your mom through the dates set up by matchmakers."

"No, I don't look down on them." Jiang Chen immediately waved his hands to pacify his father.

[Sigh, what year is it already?]

"Take some time in the next few days to see them. I already arranged it for you."

"Okay." Jiang Chen nodded.

He would just treat it as making his parents happy. He would go, but he would find a random alibi as an excuse.

If his date knew, he wondered if she would be angry or not. Without meeting first, the man already thought of ways to get rid of her.

In the end, Jiang Chen didn't argue so that this subject would be over soon.

But then, he thought of something.

"Right, dad. Didn't I send some money home? Why do I feel you haven't used it yet?" Jiang Chen looked around the familiar furniture in the living room and asked.

"We did use it. In fact, we bought a new Simmons mattress a few

days ago," Jiang Jianguo responded dismissively. He didn't seem to want to stay on this topic further.

"Ahem, don't save money for your son. Bragging aside, I have too much money that I can't possibly spend it anymore," Jiang Chen could not help but say.

"Can't spend it anymore? Even if you have money, you have to be frugal. You have to be prepared in case of an emergency," Jiang Jianguo lectured and gave Jiang Chen a hard stare.

"Yes—" Jiang Chen drawled in a feeble voice.

"Let me ask you, tell me the truth, how's your company doing?" Jiang Chen picked up a cup of tea, drank the tea leaves that he had distributed from his units a few days ago. He was planning to teach his son about some business practices so that he wouldn't offend people or suffered a loss.

Jiang Chen's eyes turned, wondering if he said a billion dollar market value, his dad would not believe it. And even if he did, he would probably be scared silly.

Therefore, after a careful consideration, Jiang Chen gave a really conservative number instead.

"There are probably several tens of millions."

Clank!

The cup fell to the ground and broke.

It was the third time Jiang Jianguo widened his eyes. He ignored the broken pieces on the ground and stood up.

"How much?"

"Around tens of millions... The company is still growing, it's hard to stay the number," Jiang Chen said in a small voice, gulping.

[Good thing he didn't say billions or else my dad will get a heart attack...]

Chapter 243: Detectaphone

Jiang Jianguo couldn't process that fact that there was now a millionaire in the family.

He originally thought that his son only made a few million to solve the housing problem. After all, it was already impressive to go from nothing to a millionaire. He would never imagine that even calling him a billionaire was an understatement.

After washing the dishes, Li Xuemei picked a guest room for Ayesha, and then took Jiang Jianguo and Jiang Chen into the living room, and seriously watched him.

"Little Chen, tell me honestly, did you do anything illegal?"

Li Xuemei was afraid that her son was doing something shady, which enabled him to become a millionaire in just a few months' time. She couldn't think of anything but a bank robbery.

"How is that possible? Do I look like that type of person?" Jiang Chen gave a wry smile.

He did rob banks before...but it was the apocalypse, so it was more appropriate to use the term "pick up".

"Then how did you become a millionaire overnight?" Jiang Jianguo could not help but ask.

"Develop software...but mostly by offshore operations for an overseas software company." Thinking that there might be other people listening to their conversation, Jiang Chen changed his words halfway through the sentence.

"Software? Is that the stuff inside the computer? Is it reliable?" Jiang Jianguo widened his eyes, flummoxed.

He could not understand how those things would make money.

"It's mainly on the smartphone... Hmm, how should I explain this? Dad, don't worry about how I make money. You should think more about how to spend the money." Jiang Chen tried to explain, but when he remembered that his dad couldn't even figure the smartphone out, he gave up on this idea.

"As long as you didn't do any illegal... Mom is just worried that you met the wrong kind of people. You have to remember: don't do anything against your conscience. Even if you make less, your conscience will be at ease," Li Xuemei told him as she rubbed Jiang Chen's hair.

"Okay mom, I know. I'm more than 20 years old and no longer a child," Jiang Chen uttered helplessly.

"In our eyes, you'll always be a child."

Jiang Chen was frozen for a moment, feeling teary.

...

After the family meeting had ended, Jiang Chen went into the study.

Because Ayesha was a guest, she slept in Jiang Chen's old bedroom.

The two elderlies first insisted that they would take the study and leave their bedroom for Jiang Chen, but the latter would not allow his parents to sleep on the sofa. "Threatening" his parent that he would stay in a hotel, he was finally able to persuade his stubborn father and mother, who always doted on him.

After combining the two sofas together and covering it with thick bedding, it didn't feel worse than a bed.

In fact, if from the very beginning Ayesha had revealed her relationship with Jiang Chen, he would not be in this predicament. Jiang Chen felt pity at the idea that he was unable to hold the attractive body in his sleep.

At about 10 o'clock in the middle of the night, the two elderlies gradually fell asleep.

Jiang Chen estimated it was about time. Thereupon, he sat up, walked to the window, and closed the blinds.

After getting a fourth-dimensional messenger, he would call Sun

Jiao from time to time. Now that he was back to his hometown, according to his agreement with Sun Jiao, he was ready to show them his hometown.

But just as he was about to take his EP out, the door sounded with a soft knock.

"Come in, I haven't slept yet." Smiling, he didn't need to think to know it was Ayesha.

Just like what he expected, when the door was pushed open, a gorgeous face peeked inside.

Ayesha, dressed in pajamas, cautiously entered the room without any noise and closed the door behind her.

"Did you miss me?" Jiang Chen walked beside her and encircled her slender waist with his hands.

Her gorgeous face flushed, and her pristine blue eyes flashed with gentleness, but she quickly shook her head and changed into a serious expression.

"I found this inside the room." Ayesha opened her hand and passed the content to Jiang Chen.

Stunned, Jiang Chen picked up the three thumbnail-sized black buttons from her hands.

"And these are?"

"Bugs."

Expression turning grim, Jiang Chen's eyes narrowed.

There was no doubt that someone had put the bugs in his house, and this made him utterly furious.

"Has the location been tracked to determine the location fo the listener?" Jiang Chen asked in an undertone.

"It's confirmed." Ayesha nodded and continued in a quiet voice, "Do you need me to go check?"

Jiang Chen played with the three buttons in his hand and thought for a moment.

"No need. If we discover those who we shouldn't discover, it would become awkward."

Hearing this, Ayesha nodded before she turned around to return to her room.

Though she felt that it would be better to get rid of those stalkers, since Jiang Chen said it was not necessary, so be it.

"Wait," Jiang Chen called out to her just when her hand was at the threshold.

"Mhmm?" Ayesha turned her head.

"Check me out as well," Jiang Chen requested with a wicked smile.

Although she didn't know why Jiang Chen was smirking, Ayesha still nodded. She quietly left the room and she came back while carrying a black pen-like device.

This anti-surveillance detection device is one of the special equipment Jiangchen had prepared for her. Jiang Chen had purchased it for around 100 crystals at the Sixth Street's market, which was the basic equipment of PAC agents.

In the future where information channel was not limited to the electromagnetic waves, and anti-reconnaissance measures were emerging endlessly, this device may not be able to 100%, remove the surveillance devices. However, "150 years" into the modern world, there would be no surveillance device that could escape from the scan of this apparatus.

Just like he had suspected, even the room, where people normally didn't stay, had also been bugged.

"Only one?"

"Mhmm, under the table," Ayesha muttered, then she put away the device and walked to the desk.

As she bent down and fumbled on the inside of the desk to take a look, Jiang Chen unconsciously swallowed.

The white nightgown, which previously covered the upper part of her thigh, because of bending, the hem of the clothes was now moving up and down so that the slender and long legs were all but exposed.

The pale skin was smooth and seductive in the brightness of the moon.

Along with that view, her underwear was also slightly exposed.

In front of Jiang Chen, Ayesha had always been unguarded. While she was focusing on searching under the desk, she had no idea how exposed she truly was.

Soon, she found a button-like device in the inner part the desk between a compartment.

"I found it. Woo..." Just as she was about to turn her head, her excitement as a result of discovering her target morphed into a fiery blush.

Caught unaware, Jiang Chen went behind her and embraced her gently.

"Don't, don't do this. Your parents are just next door..." Ayesha groaned adorably. Nibbling on her lower lips her, eyes became misty in the moonlight.

But Jiang Chen refused to let her go. Smirking, his hands wander around as he whispered into her ear, "That's why you better keep your mouth shut and don't make any sound..."

Like a timid rabbit, Ayesha nodded, wearing a fierce blush on her face...

A touch of cloud drifted by, veiling the moonlight ever so slightly.

Even the moon in the night sky could not bear to take a look.

A repressed piece of musical composition started playing inadvertently.

Not until the clock ticked quietly for two hours did the night return to its former tranquility.

Chapter 244: If people don't showoff, what's difference compared to a salted fish?

These days, Jiang Chen had been very free.

Despite finding those surveillance devices in his room, he didn't bother to care who did these vile things. Everyday he just chatted with his parents, took Ayesha to the places where he spent his childhood, took several photos with his mobile phone and sent it to the three people in the apocalypse to satisfy their curiosity.

"This is my high school," Jiang Chen explained to Ayesha. Standing in front of the gate, Jiang Chen stared at the building with a sense of nostalgia.

It was where he spent his youth with sweat and tear.

Reminiscing his past, he used to be a youngster who would blush and had his heart beat faster just by merely touching his seatmate's hand accidentally. Back then, he used to be so naïve and innocent.

"Did you attend high school?" Jiang Chen casually asked.

"Didn't get to finish it. The school was destroyed," Ayesha responded blankly.

What an utterly tragic memory.

"I'm sorry for reminding of your unhappy memories," Jiang Chen murmured.

The cold face gave him a gentle smile, and then she shook her head.

"No need to apologize. There's nothing we can do about it."

Towards her tragic past, Ayesha had never felt any regret for it. Even to the tragedy that happened to her own family, she just accepted this fact in silence. When Jiang Chen asked her before if she wanted to seek revenge against the people who killed her family. As long as she desired it, he would be willing to help her, but still she shook her head.

Jiang Chen didn't ask her why, but he could somehow guess the reason.

It was a distressing reality. The residents of her hometown probably resembled the people of the apocalypse the most.

Only those people who were accustomed to death would be so apathetic towards death.

It was precisely because of this that she could only be intimate to the only person that made her feel warm, the only person that made her open her heart.

Rubbing her little head, Jiang Chen smiled, took her hand and

went to the school gate.

"Class is still ongoing at the moment. Uninvited guests can't enter the school premises," the old man, sitting in the security room and clad in a military jacket, solemnly said.

Although Jiang Chen could still recognize him; on the other hand, he would obviously not remember everyone who went out from here.

Jiang Chen was stunned as he could not imagine that he would be blocked by a security guard. However, seeing the alertness on the guard's face, Jiang Chen immediately understood why.

There was nothing wrong with the guard obstructing anyone from entering the school. Jiang Chen remembered when he was still studying here, there would be young thugs who were fond of hanging out in the vicinity of the school. Even though they were nothing, they would pretend to be a "boss" in front of these teens to show off their grandiose" tale," and then they would gang up on inexperienced delinquent girls and ask them for money and the like.

The brown curly hair of Ayesh was obviously misunderstood by the old guard as dyed. After all, the guard was getting old and could not see her facial feature clearly.

As though reading the guard's mind, Jiang Chen smiled and walked over and started a conversation with the old man.

"Is the principal still Mr. Wu?"

"Yes, are you looking for him?"

"Mhmm... Call him and tell him someone wants to donate a school building."

The guard was gobsmacked.

"What?"

...

Ordinary people may not recognize Jiang Chen, but as the school leader of the Hucheng High School II, how could he not recognize his outstanding alumnus? To start with, in a small place like Hucheng, it was rare to have someone so accomplished. And now, that this place had produced a president of a 10 billion company, someone who had been praised by the Wall Street Journal to be equal to Bill Gate and Steve Jobs; and recognized as the "third technology revolution leader."

Wu Zechen had been working in Hucheng High II for more than ten years and could be considered as a veteran of the school. Although he didn't have much impression of Jiang Chen, who graduated five years ago, it didn't stop him from feeling proud. It was not at the point where he would mention Jiang Chen's name every sentence, but at the end of every principal's speech, he would use Jiang Chen's story to motivate the young students to study

harder to get into a good university.

This was despite the fact that Jiang Chen's current achievement had nothing to do with the university he attended at all...

Less than half a minute later, Jiang Chen saw Principal Wu led a group of school officials walking out in hasty steps. From afar, he waved at Jiang Chen and greeted him with a bright smile.

"Haha, Mr. Jiang came to visit us. We weren't prepared. You should have given me a call," Wu Zechen said passionately, shaking Jiang Chen's hands vigorously.

"You don't have to bother. I just want to check the place out again." Jiang Chen smiled.

"That's not okay! Mr. Jiang coming back to Hucheng High School II is an important event, we need a welcome ceremony—"

"There's no need. Let's not disturb the students." Jiang Chen waved his hand.

Towards the old principal's excessive enthusiasm, Jiang Chen couldn't help but feel embarrassed. After shaking hands with the vice principal, directors, and other school officials, he finally entered the school gate.

Of course, the reason why the old principal gave Jiang Chen such a warm welcome was because of his introductory words of

"donating a school building." After receiving confirmation from Jiang Chen, his aging face bloomed like a flower and personally played the role of a "guide" by showing Ayesha and Jiang Chen around.

He previously thought he would have to retire being a headmaster, but Jiang Chen somehow came back and contributed to his hometown's school.

Once the new school building project had been finalized, it would not take him two years to transfer to Education Bureau. With this qualification, he would be promoted at least half a level, perhaps even a full level. After gaining so many benefits, it was no wonder why he would be so passionate.

Originally, the principal's enthusiasm gave Jiang Chen a headache. After all, he initially intended to wander about the familiar campus while holding Ayesha's hand to reminisce the past in silence, and also made a bit of contribution for his hometown, but he didn't expect that he would have a group school leaders following him.

But soon after, he quickly began to enjoy this experience.

The reason being was because...

"Quickly look, isn't that Jiang Chen?" Passing through the classroom where he spent his three years, a sharp-eyed girl immediately recognized Jiang Chen and dragged her seatmate excitedly.

Among the youngsters using smartphones, Jiang Chen was especially famous since Future 1.0 had at least 300 million domestic users. The majority of people enjoying watching shows and playing games would choose to install Little White to save battery and increase speed.

"Eh? It's true! OMG, how did Old Wu manage to invite the nation's husband to the school?" A pretty looking girl with long hair widened her eyes and stopped scrolling through Weibo.

"Put your phone away, if the director sees you—"

"Wait, let me take a photo first." The girl raised her phone to take a picture.

Not only among girls, Jiang Chen was also popular among guys.

A lot of smart students view this man as their role model and wished to become like him one day, to be able to strut back to their school and hold their heads high, and let those "arrogant" school leaders trail behind them and enjoy their fawning words.

More than a billion of net worth, a foreign gorgeous female assistant: the epitome of life's winner.

Though Jiang Chen really wanted to tell them that his present achievements had nothing to do with studying... despite getting a high score when he was admitted to Wanghai university.

In short, it was incredibly exhilarating to be envied and praised by a crowd of energetic young people.

That's right! Jiang Chen utterly enjoyed the feeling of vainglory.

"What do you think of this, Mr. Jiang? Are you satisfied with the culture at our school?" Wu Zechen asked in great spirit when he saw Jiang Chen's mouth curved up.

"Whether I'm satisfied or not, I'm not qualified to say it. But seeing that our students are so energetic, as an alumnus, I'm extremely pleased," Jiang Chen casually said and grinned.

"Haha, how could that be? We have a lot of students that view Mr. Jiang as an alumnus," a female secretary in her 30s said while giggling.

Towards this compliment, Jiang Chen cracked a smile.

"Speaking of, where is teacher Cai?" That was his homeroom teacher. After walking around the campus, he failed to see him.

"Mr. Cai is already old and retired. I heard that his son is doing well in the south, so he retired there."

Already retired?

Jiang Chen could not help but feel some regret, thereupon he felt relieved.

He had already spent more than half of his life teaching, so it was time to enjoy life.

...

5-million school building, a set of 1 million state-of-the-art teaching equipment, and a marble statue. Principal Wu insisted that a ceremonious donation ceremony should be made, or else it would be hard to express the gratitude of the students and staff of the school.

But Jiang Chen rejected it. Afraid of trouble, he used the most straightforward method and donated it under Future Technology's name. The company's legal department would send people to coordinate with this matter, so he didn't need to worry anymore.

After taking care of everything, Jiang Chen called Xia Shiyu to let her know.

"Hello?" Jiang Chen drawled on the phone.

"Ah, hmm? Do you need something?" Xia Shiyu sounded slightly absent-minded.

Puzzled, Jiang Chen frowned and said in a voice filled with concern, "There's something... I feel like you don't sound right.

Are you coming down with a cold?"

"No, nothing, just a bit personal stuff," Xia Shiyu perfunctorily said.

Her parents wanted her to go on an arranged date by a matchmaker saying it would be hard for older girls to get married. The male's side also worked in Wanghai City and owned a company. Apparently, he was quite well off... What era was this?

For the past few days, Xia Shiyu has been troubled by this.

She was unable to talk her insistent parents out of it and finally agreed to take a vacation and return home

It just to make her parents happy.

As for the date, she had unceremoniously sentenced him to death in her heart already.

For some reason, even though it didn't have anything to do with Jiang Chen, she still didn't want Jiang Chen to know about this. The more embarrassing thing was, when she thought about marriage, what happened that night would somehow surface in her head.

That night, their lips were only a few centimeters apart.

If they kissed on that day...

After listening to Jiang Chen's donation distractedly, Xia Shiyu hung up the phone.

After a long sigh, she held her phone in front of her chest.

That bright, red thin lips pouted, it was a rare scene.

She cluelessly murmured to herself, "Fool..."

(1) Salted fish is an Internet slang for saying useless person.

Chapter 245: The Perfect Coincedence

Hucheng was a small place.

In such a small place, good news and bad news spread equally as fast.

The news of a famous entrepreneur, Jiang Chen, visiting his relatives and donating a five million school building to his alma mater instantly circulated in this small place.

There were plenty of people who made money in recent years, but there were not many who thought about their hometown. For a time, various titles such as "conscientious businessman" was named after Jiang Chen. As such, even the city officials also specially came to visit him.

They didn’t receive any news of Jiang Chen returning to Hucheng to visit his relatives. After all, the General Staff Department kept his itinerary an absolute secret. Not only the city officials, but even the media also didn't receive a single bit of information. Not until the cheap Wu Zechen, who benefited the most from this, held a school ceremony and made a conference did the reporters receive the news.

For a time, the previously quiet Jinsha Steel Plant residential area was instantly in an uproar.

The city officials visiting him sent him a plaque of two meters in length in recognition of his outstanding contribution to the

development of his hometown. In response, Jiang Chen was naturally gratified.

As for the mayor wearing a huge smile, he immediately proposed potential partnerships and stated he was willing to provide additional generous policies for the staff of Future Technology.

Jiang Chen only smiled at the offer proposed by the mayor and didn’t outright agreed. He just politely expressed his gratitude towards the government's enthusiastic reception, but because the development strategy of the company must be discussed with the company executives, he could not commit just yet.

But what Jiang Chen didn’t expect was that after the city officials left, the district leaders also came for a visit. This made Jiang Chen at a loss on how to react as he didn’t expect that just by donating a school building on a whim would make his home feel like a tea shop with people constantly visiting him. The steel plant leaders, the directors of the board of education, and the relatives he hadn't met before all visited him.

Simply put, these past few days was annoying the heck out of him. He was planning to donate a road before he left, but given the present state of affairs, it would need to wait until he left.

But seeing how happy his parents were, he did not say anything.

His home had been quite uneventful these recent years as the two elderlies lived a rather secluded life. Because they were just average workers, the relatives from their hometown didn’t really

visit as they would only chat with their neighbors while they were shopping. When did they ever experience something of this scale?

Not only those relatives who came from different places came and stopped, but even those fulltime top officials came running to their door to ask about their well-being. Astonished by the treatment that their son was receiving, they finally had an idea on how successful their son was.

But even then, there was no escaping the matchmaking...

...

"You made such a bold move, and this increased the difficulty of our work." Leaning against the Santana, Dagger grinned with a cigarette in his mouth.

"There's nothing I can do about it. Should l pay you overtime?" Jiang Chen jived and took out his electronic key and opened the car door.

"Mr. Jiang, it's against the protocol to bribe civil servants." Miao Jun coughed.

Dagger didn’t pursue the topic any longer. He flicked the cigarette and asked nonchalantly, "Is the software done?"

"You're gonna have to ask the overseas team." Standing in the doorway, Jiang Chen s shrugged.

"Good luck." Dagger nodded and gave a cursory glance at the passenger seat. "Where is your assistant?"

"I’m going to matchmaking today." Jiang Chen’s expression looked somewhat helpless.

Miao Jun burst out laughing, his arm on the steering wheel.

"What era are we currently in?"

Jiang Chen did not bother about him, put up the car window, and started the car.

Dagger extinguished the cigarette butt and got into the car as well. He patted Miao Jun on the shoulder and said dismissively, "Follow him."

The location of the matchmaking was in the downtown of Hucheng, roughly 20 kilometers away from the small area where Jiang Chen came from.

In the entire Hucheng, only the Jialin commercial area was still considered flourishing. Although he wasn’t planning on agreeing, he would still give the other her due respect. He wouldn’t just find a random KFC to purposely anger her away.

Near Lake Restaurant.

It was Jiang Chen's first time here, but because of the positive reviews on the internet, he called to reserve a private room. The place had beautiful scenery, Jiang Chen heard that it was possible to view the panoramic beauty of the East Like in the private suite on the top floor.

After parking his car in the parking space, Jiang Chen readily locked the door and headed to the suite under the direction of the server.

Dagger and Miao Jun did not follow him upstairs, and just picked a seat on the first floor, and then ordered a few dishes. They had been eating takeout food for the past few days, even the not picky Dagger was starting to get sick of it.

Upstairs, Jiang Chen ordered a table full of dishes and then began to play with his phone while waiting for the arrival of his date.

To be honest, he had never attended any matchmaking session before, so he somehow felt nervous.

Not long after, Jiang Chen heard approaching footsteps near the door.

The door opened, Jiang Chen put away his phone, but the instant he looked at the door, his expression froze.

He was not the only one who was frozen.

Standing in the doorway with one foot in, the gorgeous but expressionless face also appeared bewildered.

"It’s you?"

The two people simultaneously exclaimed in astonishment and both fell into an awkward silence.

Black wool sweater matching with a pair of black stockings—the not-so-colorful outfit didn’t seem to be suitable when on a date, but on her, it perfectly complimented her serene yet stunning aura, which was normally hidden behind her expressionless face.

Jiang Chen didn’t expect that it was his company’s CEO who would show up. He had never heard Xia Shiyu mentioned her hometown before, but coincidentally they were from the place and even lived in the same circle.

What a coincidence.

Xia Shiyu also didn’t think that the person to show would be him. Compared to the shocking reality, an unknown anxiety was welling up inside her.

Her lips quivered slightly and felt her face was burning. The rejection spiels brewing inside her head after an entire night jumbled inside her head. The usually calm Xia Shiyu was now frozen at the door.

[If it was him, should I reject?] Xia Shiyu was utterly lost.

Looking at Xia Shiyu's messy expression, for some reason despite feeling awkward, he wanted to laugh as well.

"Uh, have a sit first."

"Mhmm."

Head buried in silence, Xia Shiyu hastily at across Jiang Chen, and then remained silent.

Jiang Chen noticed that her pale neck went beet red all the way to her cheeks.

Silence ensued for a long time.

"What a coincidence, I didn’t think it would be you." Jiang Chen unnaturally laughed and broke the silence.

"Mhmm," Xia Shiyu assented again, her head still lowered, but there was nothing more.

He had no experience on what to say during a matchmaking session.

The set of words he prepared before coming here were completely useless.

He was aware of Xia Shiyu's affection for him that night. Or more precisely, right after that news conference, he had already been vaguely aware of it for a long time.

Different from Liu Yao as a mistress, and Ayesha with a different cultural background, Xia Shiyu would never accept him with another woman.

But because of the faint selfishness in his heart, he couldn't do or say anything that would make her give up on him despite knowing that the ambiguity of his action towards her would hurt her more in the end.

Reject? Or accept?

Chapter 246: What's your consideration?

The two didn’t speak with each other until the server brought the dishes.

Delicacies filled the table, the scenery outside was still scenic and picturesque, but Jiang Chen thought the food tasted bland.

The red lips were chewing reservedly, so it was a tad unfortunate that not a single word came out. Although Xia Shiyu'a blush had receded, her gaze remained glue on the food on the table. The somewhat stiff expression appearing as though she was avoiding his sight.

Just as Jiang Chen was about to say something to break the silence, Xia Shiyu suddenly spoke.

"Am I really boring? With her head bowed, she asked in a barely distinguishable voice.

"How could that be?"

Jiang Chen was used to Xia Shiyu's aloofness, so he did not mind her being cold. If she suddenly became talkative one day, Jiang Chen would feel surprised.

"Really?" she said in what seemed to be in disbelief.

"Why do you ask?" Jiang Chen could not help but ask.

"If there's a gathering, everytime I speak, it would result in a silenced crowd," Xia Shiyu uttered in total bewilderment.

While he didn't know why she would bring this up such situation, Jiang Chen trod carefully when he phrased his words, "Perhaps...it was because of your temperament?"

"Temperament?" Xia Shiyu lifted her head looking confused, staring at Jiang Chen's eyes.

"Just like a pristine flower in the snowy mountain, gorgeous but can only be appreciated from afar." Because it was extremely hard to approach, so some chose to stay away.

"Are you saying that in the...perspective of the opposite gender?" Xia Shiyu murmured.

"That's right."

"What about the same gender?"

"It's probably due to jealousy."

Jiang Chen's response made Xiao Shiyu's calm heart sped up again.

"Then what about you?" overwhelmed by indescribable emotions, she haphazardly asked this blunt question.

"... That's hard to answer. Say, aren’t we supposed to be on a blind date? Why do you have to talk about such a serious topic?" Jiang Chen quipped.

"Then...do you want to marry me?"

Jiang Chen was utterly astonished.

[Does this count as a confession?]

Towards this unexpected confession, he was not mentally prepared at all.

He originally thought with Xia Shiyu reserved attitude, this issue would drag on for a long time before it actually came out in the open.

Moreover, he didn’t think her confession would be so straightforward.

"Don't one discuss marriage after dating?" Jiang Chen gave a wry smile.

Xia Shiyu’s face turned red and with her head buried, she admitted, "No one has taught me this."

The coyness in her expression was a rare sight to see.

"Didn’t you date before?’ Jiang Chen sighed, feeling helpless.

"That doesn’t count," Xia Shiyu promptly rejected the idea.

"Then what does it count for?"

"Perhaps... just a failed attempt." Because she was curious about how dating felt like, knowing that she could not stay single for the rest of her life, and due to myriad other reasons, she accepted someone she didn’t like but who pursued her for the longest time.

And even she was aware that that strained relationship was not a sign of love.

The only thing she didn’t expect was that he eventually betrayed her merely because she didn’t want to be intimate with him. Did he only pursue her is just so he could do that kind of thing with her?

Just like Jiang Chen had thought, her emotional maturity was not directly proportional to her success in her career. Rather than calling it pure, it was more naïve.

"When two people became a couple, do they have to kiss?" Xia Shiyu asked, her eyes becoming somewhat dazed.

"Uh, it’s not a strict requirement. That's to say, if you really do like the other person, then you won’t mind kissing."

"What about the opposite?"

"The opposite?" Jiang Chen put down his chopsticks, staring at her perplexedly.

"If I’m willing to... kiss, would you date me?"

It appeared as though she had exhausted all the courage in her body.

...

Inside the washroom.

Using both of his hands, he scooped a cold water and splashed it on his face.

Feeling his agitated stated calmed down, Jiang Chen then flung the water on his face and looked at himself in the mirror.

"The f*ck... I almost become a scum," Jiang Chen mocked himself before he let out a relieved sigh, he then shook his head and headed for the door.

He didn’t reject Xia Shiyu’s confession. Although conscience told him that perhaps rejecting her was the wiser choice. He didn’t dislike Xia Shiyu or rather, towards the girl who had been working diligently for his business, he appreciated her and also a very good impression of her.

From the initial hatred to relief, and then because of her inadvertent disclosure of her love for him, this made him have a special spot for her in his own heart. Jiang Chen could not help but suddenly have a feeling of falling into her "trap."

However, although he did not reject, he did not entirely agree.

Simply put, the two were now in a relationship between friendship and lover.

The parents were finally satisfied. The two agreed to tell their parents that they were dating. With this, there would no longer be trouble with matchmaking sessions, To this result, Xia Shiyu was pleased too. After all, she was not mentally prepared for this at all.

Take one step at a time.

Just as Jiang Chen was prepared to leave the washroom, a familiar looking man stepped in front of him.

"Hello, Mr. Jiang, we meet again," Zhang Youjie greeted him amiably and extended his hand, exposing his white set of teeth.

Slightly frowning, Jiang Chen’s eyebrows soon were unfolded as he also extended his hand with a smile.

"Why is Mr. Zhang here?"

"I’m a salesman, so I always appear in front of people in need." Zhang Youjie shrugged and smiled. "Have you given it a thought? What's your decision?"

"Decision about what?"

"To become a citizen of US."

Jiang Chen looked dubiously at him. "Do you know that there are two agents behind my butt at all time? Let me guess, you're going to be caught and deported?"

"They have no right to do that to a foreign diplomat. Doesn't your country have right to even speak freely?" Zhang Youjie shook his head and mocked.

"That’s hard to say." Jiang Chen didn’t refute it.

"Ahem, seeing you is not really easy, so I’ll keep it simple. If Mr. Jiang is interested in our immigration policy, the embassy will provide you with comprehensive "legal assistance." A country’s government has no right to prevent a talented individual from

choosing their nationality and being restricted to go abroad would be contrary to your country's law. We will put pressure on the International Court of Justice to send you abroad through special channels and force it through public opinion—"

"Free choice of nationality?" Jiang Chen scoffed. "Why must it be the US?"

Zhang Youjie paused and then laughed carelessly. "Is this Mr. Jiang's message, or the message from the organization behind you?"

"The latter, of course."

"That's unfortunate then. We could have avoided a conflict." Zhang Youjie shook his head, and then smiled, "Anyway, have a great vacation."

Thereupon he turned around and disappeared at the corner of the hallway.

Looking at the direction of his departure, Jiang Chen's eyes narrowed.

Although Jiang Chen didn't think Americans could cause some trouble in China, especially under General Staff Department's watch, he still felt a sense of foreboding.

He had a premonition that it would not be this simple.

Chapter 247: Undercurrent

At the crowded Wanghai airport.

In such an international metropolis, it was common to see foreign faces. Especially with Christmas approaching, the number of foreigners visiting Han increased due to the holiday.

The announcement of flight departing echoed inside the terminal accompanied by the constant chattering and the cry of children. The terminal was a bit noisy.

A foreigner sat on a chair with his eyes closed, resting. The gray overcoat made him look very ordinary, and under the brimmed hat was a brown face with stubble. Don’t be mistaken, he was a Caucasian, and the skin color was due to staying in the desert for a long time.

It was hard to imagine that someone would be able to sleep in such environment.

"Uncle, toy car," a soft voice rang beside his ear. A little boy stood in front of him and pointed timidly to his shoes.

The person opened one of his eyes and smiled genially, thereupon the wrinkles on his face twisted like knife scars.

He looked like a kind middle-aged man.

Except for the dark green pupil, which destroyed his amiable impression. Inside the cluster of dark green hues was a lethal gleam like that of a dangerous wolf.

The little boy retreated with a frightened expression on his face. He didn’t dare to get the toy car as he scampered away.

Seeing the boy ran away, the man shook his head, stood up, and headed out of the terminal.

"As expected of Mr. Griss. The infamous name of Wolf that could scare little kids in the east thousands of kilometers away," an oriental man laughingly said as he naturally came to his side, and took the suitcase in his hand.

"I don’t want to cause trouble the moment I get off the plane, so, you better call me G," Griss cautioned bluntly.

"Okay, Mr. G." The man who welcomed him grinned. "How do you feel on this new environment? How does it compare to Iraq?"

"The smell in the desert is terrible." Griss grinned and continued, "But compared to the noise here, I very much prefer the tranquility of the desert."

"What made the bloodthirsty wolf turn into Dickinson?" said the man in an exaggerated manner and rolled his eyes.

"It’s probably the blood." Griss shrugged. "Someone told me

before that a poet and a killer are two very similar professions."

"One praises death, while the other executes death?" the other person scoffed.

"By the way, Mr. Li, you seemed to be late?" Griss said dismissively, glancing at the digital clock in the hall.

"I've run into a bit of trouble..." Li Zhongping pulled out the car key from his pocket and laughed.

"What trouble?"

"Mhmm, we originally thought we could form a partnership with them, but now it looks like Zhang Youjie made an error in judgment. Give the change in the situation, we have to start the plan B. If everything goes as planned, we might fight with the Han agents." Li Zhongping sighed helplessly. Although the helpless expression looked exaggerated at best.

Griss shrugged and drawled, "For me, there's no such thing as a surprise."

He didn't care about the Han agents at all. Just like a battle-hardened wolf that fought through hundreds of battles won't care about the hissing of a shepherd. Although he couldn't do the proper walk in the military parade, he knew hundreds of tracking and killing method. He lost track of the number of terrorists who had died on his hands and those who had jeopardized the interests

of the country.

There was no possibility of losing.

"A Han called Dagger is responsible for the target's safety."

Griss' eyes narrowed, a grim smile appearing on his lips.

"Dagger?"

...

"You've been gone for a while."

"I met someone I know, and we chatted for a moment." Jiang Chen sat back across Xia Shiyu and smiled.

Looking at the smile on Jiang Chen's face, Xia Shiyu's face turned red obscurely. She lowered her head while her finger played with the hem of her sweater.

"So are we a couple now?"

With the way Xia Shiyu looked, Jiang Chen's face also turned red. He looked away and scratched his face.

"Uh, I would say so."

[But not completely.]

"Do we need to do something?"

"No...just go with the flow." Jiang Chen swallowed his saliva, staring at the flushed cheeks.

Although he wanted to say, "Let's start with a kiss," he managed to curb his evil urges.

It was because their current relationship was only due to the insistence of their parents.

He could feel Xia Shiyu's affection for him. Likewise, he harbored affection for her as well.

However, given Xia Shiyu's personality, there was no way she could accept the existence of Ayesha and Liu Yao.

Just go with the flow.

"Once we get to know each other more, then we'll head to the next step." It was the agreement Jiang Chen made with her.

...

After lunch, Jiang Chen drove Xia Shiyu home.

Jiang Chen courteously greeted the warm uncle and aunt, gave them the present he prepared, and left after some small talk.

Mom Xia embraced her daughter by the shoulder and smiled while watching Jiang Chen’s car left.

"What do you think? Mom didn’t lie to you, right? The little Jiang certainly is of great character, so you have to be nice to him. In this day and age, it’s hard to find someone with such great qualities."

"Okay, mom..." Xia Shiyu muttered, her head buried and her face flushed.

"Work hard and get married as soon as possible. Your mom and dad are waiting for grandchildren."

"Grandchildren? Uh, I — " The cold face instantly turned beet red. Xia Shiyu’s mouth opened and her mind was in chaos.

[Children...]

[If I have to give birth to children, I have to do that...]

Like a startled deer, Xia Shiyu dashed into her room without turning back and slammed the door shut, leaving the astonished

parents in the living room.

"Old man, what nonsense are you saying?" Mom Xia scoffed at the old man.

With face red, Dad Xia rebutted, "What are you getting at? Don’t you want grandchildren soon?"

"..."

Xia Shiyu rushed into the room, closed the door, and leaned against the door.

Her body leaning against the door gradually slid down, making her sit on the floor.

Panting, she pressed her hand against her chest.

Blush extended from her pale neck all the way to her ears, her heart was beating fast.

[That kind of thing...]

A fuzzy image unconsciously surfaced in her head.

In a suit, Jiang Chen walked beside her with a bright, attractive smile. Blushing, she approached him and hooked her arm around

his.

Wearing an immaculate white wedding dress and a pair of high-heeled wedding shoes, and along with the wishes of her friends and family, the two walked along the red carpet, exchanging a kiss of vow in front of everyone.

The scene turned and then showed their wedding room.

Jiang Chen carried her around the waist, kissed her on the neck, and then he gently placed her on the matrimonial bed and reached...

Suddenly, a faint noise came from outside the door. She didn't know if it was an illusion, but she heard them speak English.

Xia Shiyu stopped and then stood up from the floor.

For some reason, the arguing voice of her parents instantly vanished.

She suddenly felt a kind of inexplicable panic.

A frightening silence ensued outside.

Gulping, she reached for the doorknob and twisted it open.

A smiling face welcomed her outside the room.

However, it didn’t belong to Jiang Chen but to a woman. A woman with blue eyes, blond hair, and wearing a headset.

Xia Shiyu was stunned. It was an unfamiliar face.

"You’re— "

"You don’t have to worry about it, just Miss Kidnapper," Caitlin jeered before she smoothly stabbed the defibrillator to her stomach.

Numbness immediately made Xia Shiyu fall unconscious, as she fell onto Caitlin.

"The package has been retrieved," Caitlin reported leisurely on her earpiece.

The two elderlies in the living room were both unconscious.

"Perfect. Return to "warehouse" for further instruction." Inside a coffee shop, Zhang Youjie wore a triumphant smile.

"Understood."

Zhang Youjie closed the laptop computer and headed out of the

coffee shop.

A trace of mockery disappeared from his lips.

"What an absolute amateur."

Chapter 248: The Greeting from Afar

Speeding off along the highway, Jiang Chen’s hands were on the steering wheel, but what happened during noon lingered in his head.

"That’s really regrettable. We could have avoided a conflict..."

[Does this sentence mean they're plotting something?]

Jiang Chen knitted his eyebrows. He really didn’t really understand why would the UA embassy would be so interested in him.

Could it be the UA intelligence officers heard that Future Technology was responsible for the actual research and development of the "Dragon II" program?

This thought suddenly sent a chill down his spine.

In the wasteland's timeline, a similar program would be developed in 2020. Despite the huge deviation of the history of wasteland from this world, and given how the speed and focus of technology and research differed greatly, the general development trajectory was not much different. Just like how the third scientific and technological revolution was led by computers.

The next 50 years would be the 50 years led by artificial intelligence. The inception of basic AI database, which would

ignite the fourth scientific and technological revolution, and then the introduction of intermediate AI Restriction Act, which would mark the end of the premature change in science and technology. Then it would be the fifth scientific and technological revolution led by the breakthrough in space technology, but that would be in the distant future...had it not been for the existence of Jiang Chen, who was a traveler between two worlds.

If everything went smoothly, Zhongxin High Tech would be capable of completely developing this technology themselves. According to the history, the cutting-edge high-altitude UAV similar to Dragon II didn't have a long development cycle.

Now that he thought about it, the delay in development was unlikely due to the barrier in technology. If someone could leak the information, there was no reason they wouldn't obstruct the progress in some way...

At the thought of this, Jiang Chen furrowed his brows.

He had never given this issue a thought.

In that timeline, PAC, Soviet Union (CCP), and NATO could be said the tripartite that divided the world. However, in this timeline, PAC and CCCP simply did not exist at all.

The series of drastic changes in Eastern Europe had ruined the last trace of Soviet. The collapse of the Berlin Wall completely pushed the alliance into the abyss and declared the collapse of the Yalta system. In 1991, the painstaking pillar of CCCP finally

disintegrated and was divided into 15 independent sovereign states.

The fate of PAC was even more interesting since it never existed in the first place. Moreover, judging from the territorial disputes and the geopolitical pattern among Asian countries at the moment, it should not be possible for the organization to be established in the next 50 years or so. An alliance would have to be formed from a political mutual trust; regrettably, this trust did not exist from the very beginning.

On the contrary, NATO was the only one that stood out amongst the three. In spite of the constant portrayal of the media that NATO counties led by the UA were unable to extricate themselves from the quagmire of the Middle East disputes, all countries in Europe had been caught in dire straits by the Greek debt crisis and the influx of refugees. Needless to say, NATO was terrifying in both economic output and the military strength.

When did it start?

Rather, when did history start to diverge?

Just as Jiang Chen thought of what seemed to be an irrelevant question, his cell phone suddenly began to ring.

Putting on his Bluetooth headset, he pressed the call button.

"Hello?"

"Do you still remember me, handsome oriental man?" Despite her jesting tone, Jiang Chen could detect that this sentence was almost squeezed out from her teeth.

Han with a Russian accent. Although the other had not reported her name, her identity could easily be identified.

"Of course, I remember the beautiful Ms. Natasha. How can I help you?" he replied casually and chuckled.

[KGB? Other than tricking them in Veit, Jiang Chen couldn't think of any other connection with them.]

"Why don't you take a plane to Moscow? I still owe you a shot of Vodka. We can have a long chat in the bar," Natasha said in a provocative way.

"It's a tempting suggestion. Unfortunately, I can't make the trip since I can't even buy a plane ticket at the moment," said Jiang Chen, face not showing the slightest contrite.

"If you really want to come, we can provide you with a free and secure method of entering the border."

"Is KGB taking an interest in me? What an honor." Jiang Chen quipped and didn't accept her proposal.

"It's Kremlin that's interested in you." After a brief pause, Natasha changed into a seductive voice and continued, "Are you

really not going to consider? Han men are popular among the Russian women."

Artificial intelligence would be the development trend for the next few decades, even potentially leading the fourth scientific and technological revolution, which was almost a foreseeable future. The value of artificial intelligence in military applications was even more invaluable. Since the advent of Future 1.0, it had garnered enough attention from Russia; not until they discovered its military value was extremely limited did they move their sight elsewhere.

But who would have thought that Future Technology could really leave its mark in the military field?

Even Jiang Chen himself did not expect that he would have wanted to make a contribution to his motherland before leaving the country. As a result, the information was surrendered and was leaked in the Han market before the development of the program was even completed. It was as if he just became a delicious morsel of meat.

Of course, many companies possessed highly advanced technology companies such as Google and IBM in the world, and Future Technology was just one of them. The technology giants were not desperate to a point where they had to make a move, but Future Technology already possessed enough value to make these giants want to form a relationship with them.

"For example, you?" Jiang Chen casually quipped.

"If you can convince your team serving behind you to settle in Russia, I don’t mind becoming your woman." Natasha wasn’t kidding.

Jiang Chen suddenly burst out laughing.

"I don’t think it's funny," Natasha raged.

"If I really wanted to do something to you, I would have tried all kinds of positions with you in Veit."

Jiang Chen’s mockery made Natasha extremely furious. She gnashed her teeth, wanting to drag Jiang Chen from the other side of the phone and roughed him up. Of course, it was only wishful thinking.

Taking a deep breath, she worked hard to suppress the anger in her heart before continuing, "I believe we've already shown enough sincerity. If you're willing to cooperate with us, we can offer you the most generous conditions—"

"Before our location is exposed, when we're finally safe, and we don’t need to be in any cage in exchange for security. The only person who would be exposed to the troubles would be me," Jiang Chen shrugged and uttered in a nonchalant voice.

"It seems that Mr. Jiang agent is not afraid?" Natasha scoffed.

"There's no reason to be afraid."

Towards Jiang Chen words, Natasha chuckled and didn’t refute his words. "Looks like you are not yet fully aware of your situation. Because of your program, Dragon II will be deployed to the South Hua Sea ahead of schedule, and the strategic balance would be broken. The CIB is doing everything to prevent this from becoming a reality."

Hearing this, Jiang Chen he let out a discreet sigh.

[Sure enough, it's the work of a spy? I was wondering why there are so many mishaps in the program, which made the development of Dragon II stuck in its final stage.]

"So?"

"Wasting resources on a harmless development team indeed seems unlikely, however, if an organization hinders the national interest of the UA, the White House will have a reason to the teach you a lesson. If I don't guess wrong, the UA embassy should have already made contact with you," Natasha snickered.

"I rejected him," Jiang Chen said carelessly.

"Then you might be in trouble. In the foreseeable future, at least before the program is transferred over, your photo will be on the CIB mission brief."

Jiang Chen was stunned for a moment, and then he chuckled nonchalantly and said, "Why don’t you directly tell that to the General Staff Department of China? I’m only a businessman, I don’t have the right to take actions."

"KGB and The General Staff Department have no policy to exchange intelligence. As to why I’m telling you, can’t you see it is an act of friendship?" Natasha mocked.

"Then, as an agent, what would they do next?" Jiang Chen casually asked.

"First priority is to force you to hand over the source code and then kidnap you to an aircraft carrier. The second priority is to shoot you as a warning to the organization behind you not to interfere in the game among the big powers, and at the same time, to cut off the only means for cooperation between you and Han."

Since all partnerships were done through a representative, it was enough to just kill the representative.

Even if Future Technology indeed possessed value, it was not the extent where they could negotiate with the Rainbow Mansion.

"Then what do you think I should do?" Jiang Chen chortled.

"Stop at once and withdraw from the project."

"And then join force with you?"

If you do not want to fall into the hands of the UA and if you don't want to get stuck to where you are, we're your only choice." Natasha's face flashed a smile. In her perspective, Jiang Chen had no reason to reject her.

Under the surveillance of the General Staff Department, just by himself, he had no opportunity to leave the border at all. However, it would be different with the help of KGB. As long as he was willing to cooperate, the existence of the so-called restriction was not a problem at all.

"Do you think I'm scared of CIB?" Jiang Chen asked softly.

"Few people whom they are targeting are not scared."

"Then I'll have to disappoint you, I happen to be one of them." What could the CIB agent even do? Not to mention that this was the Han territory, with Ayesha's counter-reconnaissance ability, Jiang Chen had nothing to worry about.

From a combat ability perspective, he could deal with them by himself.

"The Wolf." Towards Jiang Chen's confidence, Natasha merely provided a short name.

"Mhmm?"

"Griss O’Sullivan, senior CIB agent, who was previously active in Iraq war. There were more than 47 Iran officials who died either directly or indirectly in his hands. He was later transferred to the CIB Anti-terrorism team in Iraq. Have you heard of Laden? Although the SEAL shot him, he was the person that dug him out. Based on the intelligence, he already arrived at Wanghai and forged his identity.

"Is that so? That’s a big fish."

"It's a shark." Natasha laughed intriguingly. "Don’t die. I'll be waiting for you to come to Moscow."

Chapter 249: Sorry, I'm not your subordinate

The call ended.

Laughing and shaking his head, Jiang Chen took off the Bluetooth headset and put it back into his pocket.

"Griss, isn't it? It looks like this problem is becoming serious," Jiang Chen muttered to himself.

From the standpoint of Russia, "Dragon II" being completed in time and being deployed in the South China Sea ahead of schedule was the best scenario. Considering Han's growth in power, it would indeed hinder the UA’s plan to return to Asia-Pacific. In this case, the pressure faced by Russia in East Europe and the Mediterranean would be significantly reduced.

Natasha disclosing the CIB's action was partly a show of goodwill, and partly wishing for Jiang Chen to be prepared.

He just did not know if Dagger of General Staff Department received the news or not.

[Maybe I should send Ayesha to protect Xia Shiyu?]

Driving back to the staff quarters, Jiang Chen parked the car and was about to head upstairs when Dagger came over.

"How’s the result of the matchmaking?" Dagger snickered.

"I guess it's a success." Glancing at the empty seat on the Santana, Jiang Chen asked casually, "Where's Miao Jun who was driving you?"

"Protecting your little girlfriend." Dagger sighed. "Say, could you be a little bit less busy this month?"

Before the General Staff Department sent help, he could only get his deputy to help out. Even though Miao Jun was somewhat impetuous, his ability was quite good. He should be able to deal with the short transition period before their backup arrived.

Whether if there was anyone was plotting against Jiang Chen, Dagger didn’t receive any news from his superior that indicated that an external force was making a move on Jiang Chen. All of the security measures here were just for preventative measures.

Looking at Dagger’s wry expression, Jiang Chen smiled and patted the veteran soldier on the shoulder.

"I can only say I’ll do my best. Anyway, thank you."

[I'm paying hundreds of millions of tax each month, so it isn't too outrageous for you guys to work a little harder.]

"Of course, this is my job." Dagger took out his phone and was preparing to make a phone call to Miao Jun to ask how was the situation.

Just as he was about to call, his phone suddenly rang.

Upon seeing the name, Dagger paused for a moment. His expression turned grim and hurriedly put the cellphone to his ear.

In the next second, his face changed dramatically

...

Sitting in the tea shop downstairs of the apartment, Miao Jun ordered a cup of mocha. Crossing his legs, his eyes narrowed while examining every person that walked in and out of the neighborhood.

Dagger had already gone back with Jiang Chen; on the other hand, he stayed here.

"Fu*k, the life of the rich is indeed different. He's picking up girls while I have to keep an eye out for him," Miao Jun complained in his mind.

While complaining, he was meticulously doing the task that he needed to. It took abilities to be part of the General Staff Apartment.

It was almost dusk when he lifted his hand to check the time. There was still an hour left before the person who would take over his spot would arrive.

Just then, his pupils contracted and locked onto a man wearing a down jacket.

Although on the surface, the man's behavior was very normal and reasonable to the point where he did not stand out from the crowd. However, Miao Jun noticed something unnatural from his actions.

Whether it was the way he took out his cigarette or the angle he looked at this phone, he was able to cleverly avoided the camera in the neighborhood from capturing his face. It may be a coincidence if it happened once or twice, but if it happened all the time, there was only one possibility—the opponent was an anti-surveillance expert!

Thinking of this, Miao Jun could not help but get a little excited and lick the corners of his lips.

Although it was not his first mission, it was his first encounter with a foreign agent. If he captured a spy from an overseas force, it would undoubtedly be a great achievement!

Of course, it was only a speculation. In the absence of conclusive evidence, any arbitrary arrests would not only cause unnecessary trouble, it would just unnecessarily alert the enemy.

Putting his hand into his pocket, Miao Jun quietly moved towards the man in a down jacket.

His hand, which was inserted in his pocket, was gripping a Beretta 92, his finger was gently pushing the safety.

The man seemed to be oblivious to Miao Jun's gaze as he headed to the communal restroom.

"What an amateur." Mouth raised a touch of ridicule, Miao Jun trailed after him quietly.

However, when he stepped into men’s restroom, the expression on his face suddenly froze.

There's no one here?

All the stalls were open and the side of the urinal was empty.

Could it be that the person went to the female restroom on the right?

His face turning speculative, Miao Jun prepared to leave.

But then, he heard a casual voice behind his back.

"Hello. Looking for me?"

He did not know when it started, but the man he was following, was now standing behind him!

Hackles up, a sudden chill went down his spine.

Knowing he was in a dire situation, Miao Jun immediately turned and pulled out his gun.

The man lunged at him, narrowing their gap. The man lifted his hand, easily twisting his wrist, and positioned his finger behind the trigger.

Miao Jun was deeply astonished by how fluid the opponent took his gun. This man was obviously an expert.

Since he was able to confirm his opponent’s capability, there was no need to be reserved. Without ceasing the movement of his one hand, his other hand reached to snap the neck of the person, resorting to a killing move.

But the other person just contemptuously scoffed and was seemingly able to read his thought, he once again easily parried his move.

"Rookie."

Upon hearing the other's ridicule, a powerful knee strike struck his chest like a hammer.

All the air in his chest was forcefully squeezed out of his chest.

Because of breathing difficulties, Miao Jun’s eyes widened and looked like it was about to pop out.

The lack of oxygen made all the tense muscles in his body loosen, while the gun in his hand was easily taken out.

Thereupon, his forehead made an intimate contact with the barrel of the gun.

Succumbing to unconsciousness, Miao Jun fell head first to the ground.

Not pausing for a second, the man pinched the button of the communications device on his collar.

"Problem solved."

"Roger."

Turnin off her earpiece, woere her cap, Caitlin put on her baseball cap and carried Xia Shiyu who was lying on the floor and started to retreat.

A van stopped by the apartment before it left the neighborhood.

The entire operation took less than five minutes from start to finish.

...

Xia Shiyu was abducted.

Hearing this news, Jiang Chen felt his head buzz and fury instantly engulfed his whole body.

Although he had considered the possibility of the enemy plotting against Xia Shiyu, he never thought that they would make a move right after after their date.

Given how fast they were, he didn’t even have the opportunity to send Ayesha to protect her.

"Calm down first, our people are already investigating what happened. Hucheng Police Department will assist us in our operation and put all roads under surveillance. The kidnapper must still be in the city." Dagger tired to placate Jiang Chen’s emotion, despite feeling panic himself.

He lost contact with Miao Jun and was presumably also caught in dire straits. Yet it was not clear which force made the abduction.

Kidnapping Xia Shiyu must have been orchestrated to threaten Jiang Chen. What Dagger could only do at the moment was to ensure that Jiang Chen remained calm to prevent him from doing anything impulsive.

"Your people? How long would that take?" Jiang Chen took a deep breath, his voice trembling due to wrath.

"Within three days, I will definitely give you an update," Dagger said in a calm voice.

"Three days?" Jiang Chen laughed derisively and filled with rage.

Dagger wanted to say something, but this phone rang again.

Dagger put the phone close to his ear, as he heard the voice from the other side of the phone, his expression looked helpless as he handed the phone to Jiang Chen.

"Hello, Mr. Jiang Chen."

"You are?"

"Liu Guangqi, Dagger's superior. You may call me General Liu."

"My girlfriend was kidnapped," Jiang Chen said coldly.

"We already received the news. Please be patient and wait for an update regarding this matter. We will definitely give you an account of the situation. Before that, we hope Mr. Jiang could consider the bigger picture and lessen unnecessary travel."

"What do you mean?"

"It doesn't mean anything. We're just worried that the enemy will use Ms. Xia as a bargaining chip, which may force you to make a regrettable decision.

"You mean, you want to put me under house arrest?" Jiang Chen asked, his voice sounded intrigued.

"This is for your own safety. Also, if the other could not reach you, then they won't be able to threaten you."

"What if they contact you?" Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes.

"Taking Ms. Xia as a bargaining chip is be enough to coerce us into making concessions in light of national interest. I'm asking Mr. Chen to believe in the capabilities of the General Staff Department. We will give you a satisfactory answer within three days," said General Liu lightly.

Hearing this, Jiang Chen calmed down, his heart also started to turn cold.

With these words, the message behind Liu Guangqi's words was

very clear.

The General Staff Department would absolutely not compromise with the agent even with the life of a citizen at stake. If the group that kidnapped Xia Shiyu could not reach Jiang Chen and could only get in touch with the General Staff Department, then the hostages on their hands would lose their value.

At the same time, to maintain the status quo, the General Staff Department would immediately launch an investigation of this incident, and plan for the arrest of the enemy that designed and orchestrated the abduction.

Thus, even if the kidnappers were to kill the hostage, they had nothing to gain from it.

In the face of the national interests, all the sacrifices of an individual were worthwhile.

"That's to say you're giving up on Xia Shiyu?" Jiang Chen asked softly.

"We've never given up on anyone."

"Which law allows one to restrict the freedom of the victim?"

"It’s not a law, it's an order," Liu Guangqi stated using an indisputable tone.

Stunned for a moment, Jiang Chen chuckled.

"Sorry, I’m not one of your subordinates, so your order is invalid."

Jiang Chen ended the call.

Chapter 250: Betrayal

Jiang Chen stuffed the phone into his pocket.

"Please cooperate with my work, Mr. Jiang." Dagger forced out a smile as Jiang Chen was clearly not willing to follow the order.

Daylight during the winter was short, and although it was still moments before six in the afternoon, it was already turning dark.

Despite not being able to see the emotion hidden in Jiang Chen's eyes, Dagger could clearly sense that Jiang Chen was in a terrible mood.

Seeing Jiang Chen had no reaction, Dagger let out a sigh, extended his hand, and pleaded, "Please don’t make this difficult for me... Give me the phone first."

Jian Chen narrowed his eyes, and said—one word at a time—"I've never made it difficult for you. It’s you that has always made it difficult for me, and now, I had enough."

Dagger paused. He didn’t think the always-cooperating Jiang Chen would say this.

Although his words certainly had rationale to it, from the perspective of a soldier, Dagger could not back off.

With his head lowered, Dagger made the last request pleadingly, "Please consider the bigger picture."

"I don’t understand the bigger picture, I will find my own way to save my girlfriend."

It wasn't until this moment did Jiang Chen finally realize the thought hidden in the deepest part of his heart.

If they were only girlfriend and boyfriend in name, and if he didn’t like her, he would never be so livid.

Since he was already sure, there was no need to be hesitant.

Jiang Chen turned to head to his Maybach.

"Sorry, I would have to force you to make the right decision," Dagger said as he took out a pistol.

"You're pointing your gun at me?" Jiang Chen inquired interestingly.

"Sorry."

"You dare to shoot me?" Jiang Chen laughed.

If he died, the program would definitely not be delivered to

Zhongxin High Tech. The only winner would be the people unwilling to see Dragon II deployed ahead of schedule. For the General Staff Department, it was not an ending they wanted to see.

Dagger didn’t respond as he only stood there in silence, but the gun was moving down and pointed at Jiang Chen’s leg.

The intensity in his eyes seems to reflect his attitude—If you dare to leave, I will shoot your leg.

Jiang Chen’s eyes began to turn cold.

The two stood still without moving.

Because of how desolate the place was, no one walked nearby. Dagger didn’t need to disguise the way he held the gun.

The only noise that interrupted this silence was the white birch tree swaying in the wind.

They stared at each other.

The calmness displayed by Jiang Chen confirmed Dagger's suspicions: he was not just a businessman. If he were an ordinary person, he would've wet his pants upon seeing a real gun.

This was the real reason why he pulled out the gun.

Instincts told him that in hand-to-hand combat, he had no confidence in restraining Jiang Chen.

As the second and hour hands on the watch crossed at the six o’clock position, the street lamp suddenly lit up.

The abrupt piercing light caused Dagger to squint his eyes.

At that exact moment, Jiang Chen moved.

Dagger was shocked by Jiang Chen's sudden movement in closing the distance. This ability that Jiang Chen demonstrated left him with no choice but to go all out.

He lifted his left arm up, attempting to use his elbow to strike Jiang Chen's ribcage. If that move landed, Jiang Chen would have at least three rib bones broken.

But his plan fell through.

Despite how experienced he was at fighting, this level of attack was futile against a body strengthened by the genetic vaccine. With a bone strength of 29, it was two times that of an ordinary person; the resilience of Jiang Chen’s rib bone was no less than his humerus.

Jiang Chen easily took the hit and ignored the stunned expression on Dagger’s face. He took a swing with his right hand and landed a hit on Dagger's jaw, knocking Dagger right out.

He quietly picked up the pistol on the ground and placed it in his pocket. Taking out his phone, he called Ayesha.

"Find me at where I parked, let’s get going."

...

In a warehouse in Hucheng’s rural area...

Miao Jun sat slanted on a chair. His limbs were tied on the chair, his dangled face was bruised in red and blue, with blood dripping from his mouth.

"I won’t say anything."

"I don’t plan on letting you say anything." Zhang Youjie shrugged as he pulled a chair and sat across from him. A smile appeared on his face.

"We only need your cooperation."

"Cooperation?" Miao Jun sneered and stared provocatively at Zhang Youjie in the eyes, "Why don’t you just kill me."

Zhang Youjie’s eyebrows raised as he stared back with an ambiguous expression.

A cold sweat rolled down from Miao Jun’s forehead. He suddenly felt that he was under the watch of a cobra examining its prey; there were no secrets in front of him.

"Miao Jun, 25, graduated in Shangjin National Defense University with an outstanding performance. After graduation, received training in the province of Lu for new recruitment training. Later incorporated into the Ji Division’s special force for special force training, and eventually became a part of the General Staff Department in 2014 to conduct anti-spy work domestically. With how fast you are rising up the ladder, you have connections, right?" Zhang Youjie crossed his eyes and said with a grin.

Miao Jun was utterly dumbfounded and looked at the man in front of him in disbelief.

His background was considered a top secret...

With a grin, Zhang Youjie chirped, "Sorry, we also have 'connections'."

"Traitor," He squeezed out a word in his mouth and stared gravely at Zhang Youjie’s eyes.

"You seemed to have mistaken something. Although I’m Asian, I grew up in America. How should I say this in regular language... I’m an American-born Chinese?" Zhang Youjie said with a smile.

Seeing Miao Jun not saying anything else, Zhang Youjie’s body leaned forward and examined him with manipulative eyes.

"Although we have different nationalities, to me, I think you and I have a lot of similarities."

"Oh? I don’t think so."

"I graduated from Northpoint Academy, and you also graduated from the top military academy in China. Are you really willing to die like this? Your life only just began."

Miao Jun raised his head and enunciated, "It is my honor to sacrifice myself for the country."

"Is that so? But what you did is contradictory," Zhang Youjie leaned on the chair, crossed his arms in front of his chest, and used an 'I understand you' tone, "Based on the attitude you displayed during work, as well as your stance during the conversation with other people, you don’t seem to plan on dedicating your entire life to this job?"

Miao Jun’s eyes widened, he didn’t understand how could they have such a detailed investigation with him just being a typical agent while still in the process of being evaluated.

What he didn’t know was that the enemy didn’t have a detailed report on him—bluffing was a conventional technique used during negotiation. Obtaining vast amount of information through a

limited amount of information, although it may not be effective against seasoned agents, was incredibly effective against new recruits.

Seeing the expression on Miao Jun’s face, Zhang Youjie displayed a triumphant smile.

He opened his arm, stared Miao Jun in the eyes and spoke with the same understanding tone, "What’s the difference? Obtaining some credentials and then retire to start a career that has nothing to do with protecting the country. With your background of being a former General Staff Department, you'll just become a bodyguard for the rich? Join us, we can make you a wealthy person right away."

Miao Jun held his breath as his eyes began to waver.

The ideology that had been engraved in him told him that he should reject; but with how Zhang Youjie described it, it seemed to be the case.

He planned to leave the army anyways.

Just look at Dagger, that was the reward for loyalty.

Zhang Youjie acutely noticed the change on Miao Jun’s face as he threw out another tempting offer.

"One million USD, a green card, a ticket to the free world, you

could easily start a new life. And what you only needed to do is to cooperate with us for one thing in the next two days."

Then, Zhang Youjie no longer said anything as he silently listened to the breathing that was periodically tense, and then calm while he waited for the response.

Typically, if the target was silent, it was half successful.

The silence lasted for fifteen minutes.

"... What do you need me to do?" Miao Jun lowered his head.

A victorious smile appeared on Zhang Youjie’s face.

"It’s something simple, you only need to..."

Chapter 251: A Glean Hope

It seemed like a long dream. In drowsiness, Xia Shiyu woke up from unconsciousness.

"Do you know how to speak English?"

With her thought returning to her, she sensed that she was in a mobile environment.

On a car?

"Yes."

"Perfect, my Han is terrible." Caitlin chewed on her bubblegum and grinned.

She tried to focus her vision, but her iris seemed to be covered by a thin layer of a veil which made her unable to see anything clearly.

In haziness, she saw a figure.

"Where is... this? What, what did you do to me?"

Xia Shiyu suddenly woke up from her drowsy state, and her body jerked in anger.

The chair began to squeak, but her motions were ineffective. When she discovered her hands and legs were tightly tied to the chair, her face began to lose any sign of life as her vibrant red lips quivered.

She remembered the instant before she lost her consciousness; she despairingly realized the severity of the situation.

She was kidnapped.

"We didn’t do anything to you, at least for now. You better pray that your boyfriend makes the right decision," Caitlin smiled, but her voice was cold.

"How, how much money do you want?"

"Unfortunately, we don’t need money." Caitlin shrugged.

Xia Shiyu desperately attempted to force his pupils to gaze onto the kidnapper’s face, but it was futile.

She seemed to be surrounded by a thick fog, unable to render anything clearly.

"To prevent you from seeing things you shouldn’t be seeing, we used medicine to obstruct your vision. Trust us, it is for your benefit," Caitlin seemed to have read Xia Shiyu’s mind as she said

casually.

Kaching-

It was the sound of a gun being loaded.

She wriggled backward with fear written all over her face.

"Michael, it is not funny to scare the hostage," The black man playing with the radio device worked on the equipment while he spoke.

"Is that so? Perhaps it is because I spent too much time in Iraq." Michael shook the M9 in his hand as the Caucasian man grinned, "I heard Griss is here, I wonder where that guy is."

"Team A, responsible for providing support. If we encounter the PLA, he might be up," Caitlin said emotionlessly, then looked at the driver in the front. "Adam, how much longer?"

"Half an hour more."

Before the police could set up blockades, they left Hucheng already. Since they were no ordinary kidnappers, if the local police could capture them, then they shouldn’t be agents anymore.

Based on Zhang Youjie’s plan, Team B would be responsible for making the last attempt in convincing Jiang Chen. Team C would

bring the hostage to location while waiting for Team B's news to see if they should leave Jiangxi and head to Fujian on the coast. Once there, they would use a special channel to pass through the strait before leaving the border through Yizhou.

If negotiation fails, Team B will execute Jiang Chen, Team C will also kill the hostage. If negotiation is successful, Team C would continue according to the plan and take Xia Shiyu out of the country. Team B will immediately follow and transfer Jiang Chen overseas.

As to Team A, they were responsible for any of the agents or soldiers that would appear and cover for Team B's retreat.

Caitlin already memorized the mission brief in her mind, she just didn't expect it to be so smooth.

With eyes narrowed, she examined the frightened Xia Shiyu with a grin as she leaned the SCAR assault rifle on its side.

"He is not my boyfriend..." Xia Shiyu said with a trembling voice in an attempt to convince the kidnappers to let her go.

She had never seen anything like this living in the peaceful world.

"Is that so? Then we'll have to find out. But you better pray that he loves you, or we might kill you." Caitlin laughed and completely disregarded her words.

Xia Shiyu felt her hands turn cold as a grave despair started to engulf her.

Her lips trembled, her throat felt as if it was stuffed by a marshmallow, she couldn’t say anything.

[Please, who could save me…]

She closed her eyes in hopelessness.

…

Jiang Chen drove while Ayesha sat in the passenger seat. The two already left Hucheng on a small route. When they passed by the temporary inspection station, the police didn’t detain them. By the looks of it, Dagger was still not awake and didn’t report Jiang Chen missing to his superior.

Jiang Chen's phone rung and he scanned the caller.

<Zhang Youjie>

A sneer surfaced on the corner of his lips.

[Of course, it is him.]

It was not a coincidence that he appeared at the Near Lake Restaurant.

"Prepare the equipment and prepare to track his location," Jiang Chen without any emotion.

Ayesha nodded and took out the wireless tracking device and opened the map on the EP around her wrist.

With the car parked on the side of the road, Jiang Chen pressed the pickup button.

"Hello?"

"Hello, Mr. Jiang, what's your decision?" Zhang Youjie said in a cheerful voice.

"Where is Xia Shiyu?" Jiang Chen said distantly.

"Who is Xia Shiyu? Sorry, I don't understand what you're saying, I'm only a consulate worker," Zhang Youjie spoke with a smile.

"A consulate worker? Then why are you not in Wanghai and here in Hucheng?" Jiang Chen scorned.

"Of course here to deal with diplomatic affairs. Does your country have a law restricting consulate worker's mobility?" Zhang Youejie pretended to be surprised.

Ayesha displayed the EP on her wrist, the red dot stopped at the Wanghai consulate.

[When he left the restaurant, he returned to Wanghai right away?]

"I will ask again, where is Xia Shiyu?"

Sensing Jiang Chen’s rage, Ayesha worriedly held his hand caringly.

The cold touch on his hand calmed Jiang Chen slightly as he looked at Ayesha gratefully before taking a deep breath and recollecting his thoughts.

In a moment like this, the more he panicked, the more likely a mistake would occur. He must have a clear mind to think of a solution.

Just like when he was in Veit.

Seeing Jiang Chen calm down, Ayesha gently smiled and let his hand go.

"I don’t understand what you’re saying. But if you are looking for someone, why don’t you provide me with your email? I have a particular location that might be of help?

If he said anything he shouldn’t have said on the phone, it could be recorded as evidence, and he would face prosecution for espionage. He would never do something to dig his own grave.

Jiang Chen read out his email. Quickly, the phone beside his ear buzzed. The email; was already sent to his phone.

"If anything happens to Xia Shiyu, trust me, I will make you regret it," Jiang Chen said calmly.

"That’d be really scary then. Also, you better go alone. If I find out that the General Staff Department follows you, something bad may happen-"

The phone went dead.

Zhang Youjie paused before he threw his phone on the desk and smiled.

"Interesting."

Chapter 252: Who said I will go with you?

Outside of the Yangjiapin Textile Plant...

A car was parked two hundred meters away from the gate on a small road.

The car was not his Maybach S600, but it was, instead, a secondhand Sonata that he spent one hundred thousand acquiring. He didn't want his ride to be ruined during the fire fight.

Jiang Chen got out of the car and scanned the surroundings before walking to the long-deserted textile plant.

That was the destination they agreed on, 12 kilometers from Hucheng.

Other than the weeds growing around the plant, it was barren farmland in the area with no one in sight.

But just outside of the desolated plant, Jiang Chen saw four out-of-placed vans.

There were two men with baseball caps standing by the door. Their jackets were stuffed with something hidden underneath, and their hands were in their pockets, as if they were holding onto something.

The corners of Jiang Chen’s lip raised with interested as he walked up without fear.

Seeing Jiang Chen walking over, the two exchanged eye contact before one of them walked up.

"Nice to meet you, Mr. Jiang. Did you follow the agreement?" The man raised his right hand and smiled.

He was referring to the agreement of coming alone.

"Can’t you see with your own eyes?"

Jiang Chen ignored his extended hand and walked into the plant.

An awkward expression surfaced on the person’s face while his hand remained extended. He glanced at his comrade on duty who was trying not to laugh as he shrugged and stuffed his hand back into his pocket.

Ayesha didn’t follow along, Jiang Chen gave her another mission.

Just like Zhang Youjie demanded, he came alone.

Inside the plant, there were a few lights in the middle, with few figures visible from the window.

He pushed opened the door to the plant and scanned around the numerous people inside before a smile surfaced.

The camouflaged bulletproof vests, the metallic black assault rifles... to be able to transport these inside the country, they must have spent quite a lot of effort.

The fifteen CIB agents were stationed around the corners of the warehouse, and five people were waiting for Jiang Chen at the door.

The person in the front was giving off a dangerous vibe. Although Jiang Chen was unable to confirm his ability, just from instincts alone, this person was stronger than Robert's bodyguard, Nick.

He must be Griss—who Natasha referred to—also known as Wolf.

Perfect, they are all here.

"You're Jiang Chen?" Seeing Jiang Chen walk in, a man in the middle stepped on a cigarette and took out a photo from his pocket with a grin.

The wrinkles on his face twisted together, the green eyes were filled with a deadly eerie light as he examined Jiang Chen.

"That's right," Jiang Chen said distantly.

"Since you’re here, you must have already made your decision," said Griss with a shrug.

"Of course," Jiang Chen said calmly as he stared into Griss's eyes, "But before that, I need to call Xia Shiyu."

"Don’t worry, you Asian monkey, the hostage is safe. We’re the CIB after all, not IS," the man scoffed.

"Oh? I never really distinguished the two organizations."

"You—"

Upon hearing the mocking words from Jiang Chen, the man was immediately provoked and he stepped up.

Griss glanced at his teammate and said indifferently, "Grim, shut up."

"Yes..." The giant man immediately lowered his head and obediently backed down.

In the face of this oppressive captain, he had no courage to rebuke.

It was already against protocol to reveal the name of their organization, but seeing that the mission was about to be

completed, Griss didn’t say anything.

He tilted his head and spoke to the person beside him.

"Give him the radio."

"Okay, Captain." A soldier with a baseball hat took out a radio from his tactical vest, walked to Jiang Chen, and handed it to him.

With an unidentifiable smile on his lip, Jiang Chen took the radio. The other hand in his pocket opened the wireless tracking device.

He would have to leave that task to Ayesha.

"Hello? Xia Shiyu?!"

"Jiang Chen... Where are you?"

With how feeble her voice sounded, Jiang Chen suppressed the anger in his mind. Taking a deep breath, he used the calmest voice he could muster:

"How are you? Did they do anything to you?"

"... Not yet. Who... who are they?" Her voice was filled with despair and helplessness, but it didn’t sound stiff, so she didn’t

receive any cruel treatment.

After confirming Xia Shiyu’s safety, Jiang Chen felt a little calmer.

Just as he wanted to gain more time for Ayesha, the communication was cut off from the other side.

"You had ten seconds to confirm the safety of the hostage," Griss grinned, taking out a lighter and lighting another cigarette for himself. "Now, your choice will determine the life or death of you and your girlfriend. You don’t have a lot of choices."

Jiang Chen slowly dropped down the radio and looked at Griss in the eyes.

"Oh?"

[I don’t think so .]

He added a sentence in his mind. The hand in Jiang Chen’s pocket threw the wireless tracking device into the storage dimension, then he took out a paper-thin remote and pressed the switch.

The broad-range signal jammer in the trunk of the Sonata parked outside of the warehouse instantly opened and blocked any signal within five kilometers radius.

"Grim, check his equipment." Without concern for Jiang Chen, Griss turned his head and spoke to the comrade on the side.

"Okay, Boss."

Twisting his neck while making a loud crackling sound, Grim walked to Jiang Chen with a wicked smile. He already made up his mind to teach the arrogant guy a lesson.

For example, accidentally breaking one of his nuts during the search...

"Before we leave here, we need to check your equipment to prevent you from wearing any tracking device. Of course, if you resist, there might be some unfortunate things that may happen."

Looking at Grim walking towards him, Jiang Chen suddenly started laughing.

"Leave here? Who said I will go with you?"

When they heard this, all five people surrounding Jiang Chen were shocked.

Without giving them the opportunity to react, Jiang Chen immediately detonated the smoke grenade and EMP grenade in his pocket.

Buzz—!

The static buzzing noise echoed in the plant as the light bulb instantly blew out, leaving the entire plant into darkness. At the same time, smoke began to spread out from where Jiang Chen stood and hid his figure.

"Kill him!"

Griss roared out and instantly ordered the command to kill. At the same time, he raised his rifle and began to fire.

Tatatata-!

Fires splattered as the weaving bullets ripped through the smoke that hid Jiang Chen’s figure. The empty plant was filled with the sound of bullet explosion and the crispness of bullet shells hitting the ground.

Because of the eye's inability to adjust to the sudden change in light, everyone’s vision was shrouded in darkness. However, the people here were all seasoned soldiers and, even with their eyes closed, they could work together to prevent the target from escaping with the web of bullets they wove.

"Stop!"

The shooting stopped, and the smoke began to fade.

The plant returned to silence.

The thick smoke dispersed at a steady pace and gradually began to meld with the smoke risen from the rifles.

The five CIB agents in the middle of the plant still maintained their shooting position and locked on to the smoke.

Although the smoke had yet to disperse completely, no one questioned the ill fate of the Oriental man who didn’t recognize the situation.

It would be absurd to have escaped from the rapid shooting.

It was only protocol to maintain firing position.

"Boss, he must have died," Grim said as he moved his joints.

Griss stared into the middle of the smoke.

The target must have died, but an unsettling feeling was growing in his mind.

The smoke was like the egg of the devil, something was about to walk out from it.

Was it an illusion?

But then, his eerie green pupils suddenly contracted, the calmness that belonged to an elite soldier instantly faded!

"God..." With hopelessness in his voice, Grim, who previously wanted to break Jiang Chen’s nuts, moved back shaking violently.

The surface of the steel armor reflected five frightened faces.

With the T3 power armor covering him, the revolving machine guns rotated rapidly as Jiang Chen unlocked the safety to the weapon module.

"Let’s play a game."

Chapter 253: The Slaughter Armor

The slick steel surface looked like a futuristic warrior just walked out from a sci-fi film. The rapidly revolving machine gun cast out a fearsome vibe under the pristine moonlight.

"Take cover—!"

Griss roared as he rolled to the wall on the side.

The instant his back made contact with the concrete wall, the storm of bullets blasted by.

Grim, who was closest to Jiang Chen, had no opportunity to dodge. He maintained his frightened expression while being shredded to pieces by the bullets. The three CIB agents nearby also experienced a horrific death by the fierce bulletstorm.

The sparks from the bullets lit up the surface of the power armor as the CIB agents, who were hidden around the plant, retreated while firing. However, the scattered bullets hitting on the T-3 C-type steel were as weak as scratches and only left a series of clanking sound—they couldn’t even leave a single dent on the surface of the armor.

That was the difference in technology.

Unless it was a heavy anti-armor sniper rifle or a machine gun, it could not pose any threat to the airdrop-type T-3 power armor that

represented the highest level of technology before the war. If it was the land-type power armor, only the cannon on the M1 tank could pose a threat.

Right when he threw down the EMP and smoke grenade, Jiang Chen traveled back to the apocalypse. Before going back, he first went to the armory in the apocalypse right beside the power armor, suited up, and he traveled back before returning to the modern world.

The CIB could not see any of his actions under the cover of the smoke. In their eyes, the power armor seemed to have appeared out of nowhere. If not for that, they wouldn't look like they just saw a ghost.

Jiang Chen in a power armor was like a devil stepping out of the abyss, completely destroying any of shred of their willpower with his firepower.

"I'm hit! Medic!"

"Tom is down! Dammit!"

"What is this thing?! God, make him stop!" The voice sounded like he was about to cry.

"..."

Concrete shattered as Griss leaned tightly against the wall, the

thunderous machine gun noise causing him to almost lose his sense of hearing.

"Smoke grenade!"

With a roar, he pulled out a smoke grenade from his waist, jumped out from under cover while moving to his team's zone of control, and squatted back down.

"Change to thermal vision!"

"Roger."

The nine CIB agents all replaced the scope on their assault rifle and peeked out from their cover while aiming right into the heart of the smoke.

But then, they were completely stunned.

There was only a white fume inside the haziness and they couldn't see anything.

Jiang Chen, in the middle of the smoke, grinned as a series of red dots appeared on his iris.

"Fury!"

The revolving machine gun was deactivated and he pulled out the tactical rifle from his waist.

The agents who planned on firing back had no time to react before the bullets cracked open two people’s skull.

With the loss of two lives, the CIB agents had to retreat back into cover while firing in a scattered formation.

"Dammit, dropping the ball at the most critical situation, I’ll stuff your head into the toilet when I head back."

Griss cursed at Zhang Youjie who was responsible for the logistics as Griss ripped off the thermal imaging scope with his teeth gritted.

Fear permeated throughout his entire body as the muscle on Griss’s face twisted violently.

He had not experienced this feeling for a long time, the sense of adrenaline overwhelming him.

He ripped off the radio from the tactical vest and screamed inside, "The enemy’s firepower is too strong, Team A and B are under attack, mission failed! I repeat, mission failed!"

But there was no response from the other side.

Griss was stunned.

Not just the thermal imaging, but even the radio were also not working. It was if an unknown power had destroyed all the electronic equipment.

The comrades fired back while ducking out of cover, but he gradually couldn't hear the bullets anymore.

The concrete debris cut through his face while he took out the digitalized scope.

There was no red dot on the screen, it also stopped working.

An unknown fear suddenly overwhelmed him, his eyes popped out, blood-shotten.

A one-sided slaughter.

The impenetrable armor, the mysterious weapon that instantly destroyed all electronic equipment... who are they? They are definitely not the PLA! Hua would not have this type of military technology!

From Afghanistan to Iraq, Wolf Griss was used to savoring the fear on the enemy's face. Marking down coordinates while enjoying the sight of garbage fleeing under the rampage of the AC-130, Griss had scoffed at the scums who didn't know what thermal vision was as they ran desperately to the bushes, trying to escape

from the Grim Reaper’s feast...

But he never thought that he'd one day become the prey.

... No, it was no longer a battle, it was a massacre!

At that moment, warm blood splattered all over his face and interrupted his pondering.

He looked up. The comrade who shot back a second ago lost his head already.

In two short minutes, the twenty CIB agents from Iraq were down to five.

"Retreat! Retreat!" Griss, realizing the situation he is in, roared out as he attached the grenade launcher onto his assault rifle and fired it into the smoke.

There was a loud explosion, but he didn’t care if it hit the target or not. He rushed to the back door of the plant with his head covered.

The grenade exploded on the arm of the power armor as the fragmented shrapnel screeched against it. However, Jiang Chen only tumbled a little without being too affected.

Allowing the bloodlust to overtake him, Jiang Chen fired with

the tactical rifle while moving forward to CIB's zone of control. His pupils contracted as he locked instantly on to a red dot. Just as the person peeked out, Jiang Chen pulled the trigger and killed him without any hesitation.

Because they didn't think that they would encounter any armored forces, along with the secretive nature of this mission, the CIB agents didn't bring any anti-tank rocket launchers with them this time.

With just grenades that were meant to be used against infantries, it was incapable of dealing any damage to the power armor!

"You want to run?" Jiang Chen grinned and scoffed at the four CIB agents retreating. He deactivated Fury and moved to the door slowly.

...

From the moment the shots were fired inside the plant, the two people patrolling by the door realized the oddity of the situation as they took out their assault rifles hidden underneath their jacket and remained on high alert.

With the loss of communication, they were completely oblivious to what was happening inside the plant.

Upon seeing Griss run awkwardly in their direction, Brian, who was at the door, immediately went up to find out what was going

on.

"Sh*t, captain, what happened inside?"

"Dumb*ss, get in the car!"

Griss immediately pulled on the fool that ran toward him and shoved him into the van.

It was the first time Brian saw Griss being so desperate like this. Realizing the severity of the situation, Brian didn’t dare to speak any more and took the driver's seat.

A few other agents also quickly got into the van.

"The status of the communication system on the car?" Griss asked while breathing heavily.

"All function— Sh*t! No signal!" The agent on the backseat smashed the car door.

"F*ck!" Griss cursed as he glanced at the situation outside of the car. Seeing that the metal giant didn’t follow them out, he felt somewhat relieved.

[Maybe that metal giant has weaknesses too… like low mobility?]

With the car already started, he couldn’t care about anything else other than leaving the area and sending the shocking information back to the CIB headquarter.

Compared to the source code of the drone and the metal giant, the mysterious weapon that could instantly paralyze a team electronic device was more shocking! If they were all from the organization behind Jiang Chen, then the CIB must reevaluate their strategy against the mysterious organization.

Just as his strained nerves started to loosen up, the scream of the driver rang beside his ear.

"What the f*ck! What is that!"

Four flying discs flashed in front of the car window. Under each disc, a black machine gun hung there.

With a cold sweat rolling down his forehead, the driver pressed on the gas, knowing full well that it was too late.

Fire emerged as the Hummingbird drones began to unleash its power.

Without any time to react, the CIB agents in the car were reaped of their lives by the merciless bullets.

...

Low mobility? That was Griss’s wishful thinking.

The reason why he didn’t want to wear the power armor out of the warehouse was purely due to the concern for privacy. It was an unwise move to expose such a large target in public. Although it was just a barren farmland without anyone there, it was better to be safe.

Jiang Chen returned to the apocalypse and left the power armor in the armory before he traveled back to the modern world.

He scanned outside of the plant with the broad range life detection device and saw one red dot lit up. Jiang Chen grinned, took out the PK2000 from the storage dimension and strolled to the shattered van.

Blood dripped out of the door and pooled to the ground. Red and white contents mixed together and were stuck everywhere.

At the sight of the horrific scene inside the van, Jiang Chen was shocked; however, he didn’t feel any sympathy.

He recalled the Hummingbird drones and then dragged Griss, who was shot multiple times and on the verge of dying, out of the van and onto the ground. He then took out the hemostasis spray and applied it to Griss's wounds.

Griss was covered in blood, the calmness and ferociousness had

already faded.

Rather than Wolf, it was more appropriate to describe him as a dead dog.

Jiang Chen looked at him from the top, kicked his arm, and said with interest, "Can’t say anything anymore?"

Griss stared into Jiang Chen’s eyes, with blood in his mouth, and said while stuttering, "I... won’t tell you where the hostage is. Just wait to recover the body of your little girlfriend."

"Might not be the case," said Jiang Chen as he took out a voice recorder and threw it on Griss’s body.

Just as Griss was confused by his action, Jiang Chen grinned.

"I ask, you answer."

In his hand was a truth-telling serum.

Chapter 254: Sniping

"... We lost Team B, negotiation failed. Execute plan II. I repeat, negotiation failed..."

The message, mixed with static noises, came from the radio on the floor.

Xia Shiyu horrifically glanced around, but she couldn’t see anything.

Suddenly, she heard the sound of a window shattering, followed by something heavy dropping onto the ground. Then, the room returned to silence.

The room was dark without any light. This left the already visually-impaired Xia Shiyu in darkness with just moonlight from the window scattering in.

[Negotiation failed... does this mean they are going to kill me?]

When she thought about it, the hopelessness inside her grew deeper. Her originally clean jeans were now covered in dust as she feebly jerked on the ground.

The rope was like a python that restrained her tightly to the corner of the wall. No matter how hard she tried to break free, she could not move a single inch.

"Jiang Chen..." A weak whimpering came out from her tape-covered mouth as Xia Shiyu closed her eyes.

Would he just appear like that night and rescue her from her despair?

"Save me..."

Although there was a slim chance of it happening—and perhaps she may have her throat slit the next second and fall on the cold floor—she was still hoping for it to happen.

...

"Target executed."

An indifferent voice, mixed along with a mist of breath, came out of Ayesha's lips.

Under the crosshair was a female body. The blonde hair was scattered on the ground with blood. The 12.76 mm bullet had pierced through her skull and the CIB agent had died under her sniping.

"Did I make it...?"

Her chest pumped furiously. The moment she received the coordinate from Jiang Chen, she floored the gas pedal and raced

here. When she got off the car, using the fastest speed possible, she rushed to the highest point of a yet-to-be-completed building before lying on her current sniping position.

It was a race with the Grim Reaper.

If nothing else happened, the moment that the coordinate was sent over from Jiang Chen, the battle over there would have already started. Although he would definitely use a signal jammer to interfere with the enemy's communication, without any contact for an extensive period of time, the enemy commander would become suspicious.

Fortunately, the location where they kept the hostage was not too far from the abandoned clothing factory. She made it there before the enemy found out what was truly happening.

Ayesha moved the crosshair and observed Xia Shiyu's status.

The hostage appeared to be in a stable state... Without any reaction to gunshots, she must have her vision obstructed. It was better this way, for if the hostage were to scream because of the scene, it would make the situation worse.

[Is she the other wife of my husband? She looks pretty.]

While Ayesha was thinking this, she opened the life detection device beside her scope.

The blue waves scanned across the field before a few red dots were quickly marked on the scope.

She moved the crosshair of the Ghost sniper rifle and locked onto a patrol at the gate warming his hands.

"The second one," she murmured as she pulled the trigger.

Bang!

The bullet shattered the person’s skull with blood and brain matter splashed all over the ground. With the patrol being shot, the enemy finally realized they were under sniper fire, and the two red dots behind the structure quickly moved into the building.

Without any hints of being perturbed, to her, killing was as easy as breathing.

All for Jiang Chen.

"Target exposed. Next should be to control the hostage," Ayesha muttered to herself as she moved the crosshair back to the room where Xia Shiyu was, aiming the crosshair at the door.

Indeed, the red dot moved onto the third floor beside the door.

The enemy didn’t just rush inside. Even if they were to think with their butt, they would know that inside the room was under

the killing range of the sniper.

"Smoke grenade? Too bad it's useless on me." Ayesha ignored the door being slightly opened as she aimed at the concrete wall and pulled the trigger.

...

"Dammit, its PLA’s sniper, someone betrayed us!" said Mike with a short breath as he tightly clenched onto the loaded pistol.

"We might be surrounded, control the hostage first." The black man with an assault rifle was calmer as he took out a smoke grenade from his waist.

There was only one place where one can find a sniper in Hua, and it was in the military. Snipers were like rats traversing under the foot of an elephant. If their trails were exposed, their only fate was to be stomped.

Unfortunately, this place wasn't Iraq. There was no aircraft carrier to provide covering fire while they retreated.

Just as the black man was about to throw a smoke grenade inside the room, the concrete wall he was leaning against instantly shattered. A bullet penetrated through the ten-centimeter wall and ripped his head into pieces.

"Fu*k!"

Mike immediately rushed for the stairs. He couldn't care about the hostage anymore. The enemy’s bullets seemed to have eyes growing on them. He only wanted to leave this god-forbidden place!

Mike flipped out of the window and rolled to the back of the abandoned building. With his back against a thick wall, he regained a sense of security: It was normal for a bullet to penetrate through a wall, but it was impossible for it to pass through an entire building.

He glanced at the empty ground twenty meters in the distance and debated for a few moment, but he had no courage to run across.

"Sh*t! What is the dumba*s Miller doing!" he cursed out, but he had no other solutions.

Miller was the sniper responsible for supporting this mission, but there was no movement from him at all. Because he was operating alone, Miller was not in the communication channel with Team C. Only Captain Caitlin could reach him, but she was already dead.

...

"Hidden?"

Ayesha muttered as she put away the sniper rifle and headed

downstairs.

Due to the threat of the sniper, the enemy would not return to retrieve the hostage.

She moved along the bunker at high speed as she closed the distance with the target building. Jumping over a wall, she took out the pistol around her waist and moved to the CIB agent hidden behind the building. Her steps were quiet—like a cat—not making any noise.

A terrifying feeling suddenly overwhelmed Mike. The instant he turned his head, his eyes were met with the muzzle of Ayesha's pistol.

Bang!

Ignoring the body crumpled on the ground, Ayesha moved to where Xia Shiyu was kept.

Chapter 255: That Bullet

It was easy to kill, but hard to take care of the aftermath.

A total of 22 lives, all consisted of CIB elites. If the CIB knew Jiang Chen was the perpetrator behind this massacre, they would jump up like a cat with its tail being stepped on and launch a series of counterattacks.

He could not take the responsibility for this incident.

Jiang Chen had used the truth-telling serum and obtained all the mission details from Griss's mouth. Team A and B had died in his hand, without any accidents, and Team C should be finished by Ayesha already.

Zhang Youjie had, additionally, requested a sniper to assist with the mission in case there were any potential problems, but with Ayesha's ability and equipment, it shouldn't be a big deal to take out the sniper.

All counteractive measures were prepared for against the General Staff Department. Never in his wildest dream would Zhang Youjie believe that it only took two people to wipe out the entire CIB force.

With a casualty of almost thirty people, this was the most significant loss suffered by the CIB.

During the interrogation, Jiang Chen used the voice changing app on his phone to alter his voice so there was no need to worry about drawing any connections with him.

He picked up the voice recorder from Griss's clothes and stared at the black face without a word. Taking out a pistol, he aimed at Griss's head and pulled the trigger.

Bang!

The pupils dilated and began to lose its color.

Griss stopped breathing and his bloodstained life came to an end.

Unlike the last time in Keiv—because they saw his power armor—he couldn't leave anyone alive.

Jiang Chen sighed, put away his pistol, and started to deal with the aftermath.

Including Griss, Jiang Chen dragged the six people inside the van into the abandoned plant and lined them up together with the other bodies. It was a bit problematic dealing with Grim since he was shredded to pieces already.

Jiang Chen had the rare sensation of his stomach feeling upset.

The meat chunks were still warm...

After he removed any of the sensitive document and communication devices, all the bodies were transported back to the apocalypse to be burned outside of the Fishbone base. Upon returning back to the modern world, Jiang Chen used the blood dissolver to clean up any remaining blood.

Just like this, their existence in the modern world was wiped out.

There were still signs of a battle, but the bodies were nowhere to be found.

What Jiang Chen needed to do was to make the CIB believe that the agents on this mission were not dead, but—instead—all captured and imprisoned in a secret prison.

Only the government was capable of imprisoning nearly thirty agents inside Han; a person would not have the ability to do so.

After all, imprisoning was incomparable to killing. Killing would only require a single bullet, but to capture people, it would require at least a prison as well as guards numbering no fewer than the prisoners. If there were any fewer, they may not be able to contain the elite agents.

Without the agents' bodies, the CIB would be unable to confirm their deaths and would suspect that it was the General Staff Department who captured them.

In regard to prisoners, the UA’s typical response would be to save them. But Han, who had never captured anyone, would not admit that they had imprisoned the agents. If Han didn’t take the initiative to denounce UA for their espionage activities, UA's president could not step up to acknowledge the CIB’s operation in Han. If they did, they would lose all their face as a country.

With Han not making the first move to denounce the UA, the UA would have no grounds to plead on behalf of the agents.

Since it could not be solved diplomatically, they were only left with conducting secret missions.

Therefore, the center of CIB’s activities in Han must be focused on the captured agents within the next year and, hence, ignore the smaller character, Jiang Chen. Even if they could not find any results, they could only conclude that the missing agents were secretly executed by the General Staff Department, and they would likely not associate the death of their agents with Jiang Chen.

As for to how to deal with the General Staff Department, that would the next step.

Now all Jiang Chen needed to do was to make the recorded message appear at the appropriate location.

As he was thinking, Jiang Chen took out the satellite phone from his storage dimension.

"Hello, Robert? I need your help..."

...

The ropes around her wrists and her legs were cut open. Xia Shiyu watched the girl fluidly inserting the dagger back around her wrist. She gulped and then spoke with a trembling voice, "Who, who are you?"

Since her vision had yet to completely recover, she couldn't clearly make out the girl's face. She could only determine from the graceful outline that the girl must be stunning.

"Ayesha, Jiang Chen's bodyguard."

Since Ayesha thought they would be "working together" in the future, there was nothing to hide... So Ayesha only hesitated for half a second before giving her name out.

Xia Shiyu would undoubtedly have a bewildered expression if she knew Ayesha's thought.

"Bodyguard?" Xia Shiyu never knew Jiang Chen had a bodyguard before, so she could not help but to feel puzzled.

"Mhmm. We met in Iraq," Ayesha answered concisely.

Iraq?

Xia Shiyu had some memory of Jiang Chen's visit there. She was still perplexed to this day why he went there.

[Who are these kidnappers? They seemed to have kidnapped me with Jiang Chen as their intention...]

What was surprising was that even if she experienced such a horrific event purely because of Jiang Chen, in her heart, she didn't blame him at all.

[In other people's eyes, I'm already someone important to him...] Xia Shiyu's heart began to beat faster.

The only thing that made her slightly disappointed was that Jiang Chen wasn't the one who showed up.

But it made sense as she could not imagine Jiang Chen coming to her rescue with a gun.

The people who kidnapped her were not ordinary thugs, but fully equipped soldiers. In her memory, Jiang Chen might be a good fighter, but he was nowhere strong enough to contend against elite agents.

[Why would foreign agents be interested in Jiang Chen anyways? Because of Future Technology? But Future Technology is only a private enterprise, why would the foreign agents be interested?]

Xia Shiyu had no knowledge of Jiang Chen's involvement in Dragon II, so she thought it was reasonable. Although Zhongxin High Tech had negotiated with Future Technology, she didn’t know the specifics of the agreement since it was Jiang Chen who was responsible for the negotiation.

However, she had a feeling it might have something to do with that project.

"I will take you out of this place first, let’s talk in the car." Ayesha’s voice interrupted her thought.

Jiang Chen would be here to clean up the scene in a bit, so it was better to take Xia Shiyu out of the place first.

"Mhmm." Xia Shiyu gulped and nodded.

With how anxious she looked, Ayesha’s expressionless face turned into a smile. She comforted her gently:

"Don’t panic, they are all dead."

[Eh, she is panicking more?]

Ayesha tilted her head, perplexed, while she looked at the shaking Xia Shiyu.

[Whatever, let’s get out of this place first.]

Shaking her head, Ayesha extended her hand to Xia Shiyu on the ground with care.

"If you can’t see, you can hold my hand."

Although Xia Shiyu was still terrified, she took a deep breath as she did her best to control the fear in her mind. She extended her hand while shaking and held onto the small hand.

But all of the sudden, Ayesha was alarmed and, almost instinctively, she shoved Xia Shiyu away.

Bang!

At that moment, a bullet penetrated through the window and struck her on the chest.

Chapter 256: Coldblooded

Blood gushed out of Ayesha’s mouth as the impact felt like a truck had slammed into her head on. Her tiny body was thrown into the air and smashed against the concrete wall. If it wasn't for the kinetic skeleton, she would've been dead already.

Blood dripped down through the corner of her lips. While enduring the sharp pain in her chest, Ayesha didn’t dare to hesitate and rolled away from the window.

Almost instantly, another bullet arrived and struck where she was previously. The shattered concrete debris scratched her face, and the 12.76 mm bullet left a giant crater on the ground.

After escaping from the area directly observable through the window, she then let out a sigh of relief and ripped off her jacket with teeth clenched.

Even with the genetic vaccine, bullets still treated everyone equally.

While the assault rifle of the modern world was inferior compared to those from the apocalypse, the power of a sniper rifle was not to be underestimated. From the damage done to the ground alone, the enemy must be using an anti-armor sniper rifle —the Barrett M82!

Though the bullet was deflected, it still caved in the polyethylene bullet-proof vest. The massive kinetic energy from the shot had

knocked the wind out of her.

Xia Shiyu, completely oblivious to what had just happened, remained terrified and lied there without moving.

"Ayesha..."

"Don’t move, stay down!" Seeing Xia Shiyu wanting to come help, Ayesha immediately stopped her.

The caved-in part happened to be pressing against her ribcage, substantially interfering with her ability to breath.

She swallowed the blood back down, gritted her teeth, and removed the polyethylene plate in front of her chest.

Since it was one-time protection anyways, there was no point in leaving it in front of her chest after being shattered.

Taking a deep breath, she calmly took out a smoke grenade and threw it near the window.

Fearing that Xia Shiyu would stand up, Ayesha said, "Stay put. Try to stick to the floor if you have difficulty breathing."

"Mhmm."

Xia Shiyu tightly pressed against the ground with the smoke hiding her terrified—but gorgeous—face.

Forcing her body to move, Ayesha picked up the assault rifle and helmet belonging to Caitlin and returned to the window.

Using a lighter, she heated up the helmet and then used the assault rifle to raise the helmet, slowly moving it to the window opening.

Bang!

With the "head" barely exposed, the helmet was blown away.

[Thermal vision?]

Ayesha’s eyebrows twisted together and looked at the door.

The enemy must have headed to the sniping location she was previously at; therefore, the door must also be in the range of the sniper. Without the ability to move, they were completely suppressed inside this room.

It was her first time encountering a situation like this in real life.

[What to do...]

Inhaling deeply, Ayesha clenched tightly onto the Ghost sniper rifle in her hands.

She started to feel hazy from the acute chest pain. It was only through sheer willpower that she hadn't fallen unconscious yet.

Her body temperature began to lower, and her consciousness also slowed.

Suddenly, a faint light flashed on the EP.

Ayesha, noticing the abnormality on the EP, hesitated for a moment before opening it up.

<Hidden Genetic Code:>

<Coldblooded: Decrease the surface body temperature to the extreme—like a dead creature—to achieve the state of being invisible to any non-optical detection device.>

<Side effect: Metabolism lowered to the extreme, interfering with any wounds healing. Prolonged usage may result in a coma.>

[Hidden genetic code? Eliminate body heat?]

[Could it really do that?]

[... Whatever, I have to take the gamble.]

She took another deep breath as she felt her body heat decreasing to the extreme and her heart speed slowing down tremendously. Ayesha, with the sniper rifle, knelt at the window.

Seeing that a bullet didn’t arrive, she had a smile on her face.

Inside the smoke, without the help of thermal vision, the enemy couldn't see her.

She activated the thermal vision on the scope and locked on to the bright spot a thousand yards away.

"Goodbye."

Ayesha pressed the trigger, and blood splattered in the scope.

"Finished..." she muttered to herself.

At the same time, her tightly tensed consciousness reached its limit.

As the smoke began to fade, the sniper rifle rolled out of her hands, and she dropped to the ground.

"Ayesha!"

She faintly heard someone calling her name, but she couldn’t hear anything after.

[Tired .]

[I really want to sleep...]

...

Dagger struggled to get up from the ground after waking up from unconsciousness.

"Fu*k, this guy didn’t go easy on me."

He touched his pocket; the pistol and phone were all there.

"It’s going to be really problematic now."

Dagger rubbed his bruised face as he sat down on the bench nearby. It was completely dark already. After lying on the concrete ground for so long, Jiang Chen must have been long gone.

He took out the phone and dialed Jiang Chen.

"The number you are calling is either out of service or has been shut down..."

"Should I say it is expected?" Dagger let out a sigh as he hung up the phone.

At the same time, his phone rang.

"Hello?"

"It’s me, Miao Jun," replied a feeble voice from the other side of the phone.

"Little Jun?! Where are you now?!" Dagger was shocked.

Although the tone sounded confounded, it was indeed Miao Jun’s voice. Dagger originally didn’t have any hope, but Miao Jun did manage to escape from the CIB! If he saw the face of that agent, it would definitely be a turning point in this stalemate!

On the other hand, while he didn’t say anything, he was indeed worried about the safety of this immature student.

"I’m in the rural area..."

"Wait there! Tell me the address, I’ll be right there."

After confirming the location, Dagger rushed into the car and raced to the rural area.

While en route, Dagger reported to headquarter about losing Jiang Chen and of Miao Jun escaping.

To the news of Jiang Chen defying the order, his superior, General Liu, was only silent and not angry. He then ordered Dagger to immediately rescue Miao Jun, who had escaped from the CIB. As for Jiang Chen, he had already sent other people to handle it.

When the communication ended, he reached to where Miao Jun described.

With the car parked on the road, Dagger took his pistol and rushed into the alley.

Not long after, he saw Miao Jun covering his stomach while leaning against a wall.

Miao Jun was covered in blood, with bruises all over his face.

Seeing this scene, Dagger instantly became furious and he quickly rushed to the side of Miao Jun, putting an arm around his shoulders.

Dagger started cursing when he saw that his student was tortured by the CIB.

"Fu*k, don’t let me catch them—"

But he couldn’t finish the sentence, his voice froze halfway.

Slowly, he looked down.

"Why..."

"No reason."

The blood on Miao Jun was fake, and the feeble voice was also feigned.

However, the blood flowing out of Dagger was real.

"Because of money?"

Dagger stared at the blade in his stomach, bitterness was the only impression left on his face.

The pistol slid down from his hand, and Miao Jun kicked it away.

Perhaps Miao Jun was embarrassed to answer such a question; he didn’t say anything as he made another stab at Dagger's stomach.

"If you wanted to be rich, why did you become a soldier..."

More blood flowed out, interrupting Dagger’s harsh words.

In the unknown alley, the seasoned veteran stopped breathing.

After killing the "master" he had spent half a month with, Miao Jun took a deep breath and suppressed the guilt in his mind. He took the phone and car key from Dagger's body and walked to the Sonata.

One million USD, he could not make that much in his life.

Just like what Zhang Youjie had said: since he was already planning on retiring, what difference does timing make?

Chapter 257: CPR

Her eyelashes trembled.

While feeling drowsy, Ayesha felt something wet touch her lips.

The pressure on the left of her chest caused an anguished moan to escape from her lips.

This feeling was very weird, making her uncomfortable.

Subconsciously wanting to escape, Aisha's figure twitched.

In response, "the weird feeling" seemed to be more excited. The compression on her left chest became harder and faster; the aggressive feeling on her lips was increasing...

Gradually, Ayesha’s consciousness returned. She opened her eyes slowly, but was met with a pair of crystal pupils.

She was stunned.

Xia Shiyu was also stunned—the panic on her face quickly turned into embarrassment.

The reason for the awkwardness was naturally because of her intimate position.

Because she had never done CPR before, half of her body was resting on Ayesha’s body. With one hand on her left chest and the other hand pressed against the ground, she had kissed Ayesha’s lips in an awkward position.

The two fell silent.

"Ayesha!" At the same time, the door was slammed open, with Jiang Chen rushing in.

Xia Shiyu had called him a moment ago explaining that Ayesha was in critical condition, so he had rushed over in a panic.

But before he could take a few steps through the door, he froze in place.

Uhh, how should he say this? Although Jiang Chen was pleased to see the two having a good relationship, he was not mentally prepared to see this...

"Uh, when did you start..." Jiang Chen scratched his face and awkwardly looked away.

"No, it’s not what you think!" Xia Shiyu’s face turned red and instantly jumped away from Ayesha’s body as she desperately tried to explain to Jiang Chen.

Compared to Ayesha, her face was a lot thinner.

"This is... CPR?" Ayesha, still on the ground, tilted her head.

While she was also embarrassed, she quickly collected herself together and realized that Xia Shiyu was performing CPR on her.

It's just that the position was too awkward; generally, when performing CPR, it was not necessary to lean on the person's body.

"Mhmm!" Xia Shiyu gently bit on her lips, blushing.

Although she was terrified, when she saw Ayesha fall unconscious, she had gritted her teeth and dragged Ayesha away from the window.

After doing all this, she had immediately called Jiang Chen and explained Ayesha's condition. Right before she was about to call the police, Jiang Chen had stopped her and asked her to wait there before he hung up.

[Don't call the police?]

Although Xia Shiyu didn't understand why Jiang Chen would make this judgment, with a headless corpse beside her, she—who was already terrified—began to realize that the incident may not be normal. After an internal struggle, she had finally chose to trust Jiang Chen's judgment and not call the police.

She had tried hard to not look at the gruesome corpse and focused all her attention on the girl in front of her.

The girl was beautiful.

Her eyelashes were long, her facial structure was also delicate, and her fair skin was especially comparable to a porcelain doll, arousing jealousy from anyone looking at her.

When Xia Shiyu thought about this, she felt jealous.

She had never known that Jiang Chen had such a beautiful bodyguard beside him. And with those looks, she may not even be 18 yet...

But then, a hint of guilt appeared in her mind. Ayesha had just saved her, and she was now speculating about Ayesha's relationship with Jiang Chen... it was insulting. With Jiang Chen attitude and personality, he shouldn't have done anything that would cross the line...

Needless to say, she didn't really understand Jiang Chen after all.

Just as her mind drifted elsewhere, she had suddenly noticed that the girl's chest was not moving.

This had caused Xia Shiyu to start panicking, and she

immediately put her finger on Ayesha's upper lip. There was no breathing!

Without hesitation, although she had never done a CPR before, Xia Shiyu still stepped up, resulting in the intimate scene that had just occurred.\

"Thank you." Ayesha smiled at Xia Shiyu.

"No need to thank me... Or rather, I should thank you." Xia Shiyu took a deep breath and sincerely bowed down.

Ayesha didn’t say anything and accepted Xia Shiyu’s gesture.

"You made me scared... What happened?" Jiang Chen was relieved as he walked beside Ayesha to help her up.

"Sniper, I overlooked it," Ayesha said apologetically.

Because she was too anxious to save the hostage, she only scanned for life signal at the target building and forgot to scan her surroundings, which resulted in the enemy gaining the upper hand.

When Jiang Chen heard this, he immediately started to check her body and rushed to question:

"Are you injured?!"

"No, the polyethylene plate blocked the bullet." With the concerned expression on Jiang Chen’s face, Ayesha only felt warmness in her heart.

Jiang Chen was relieved after everything was okay. When Jiang Lin designed the K1 kinetic skeleton, he told Jiang Chen that the supra-molecular polyethylene ballast plate could only block some rifle bullets, but he didn’t know if it could block sniper bullets.

However, when he gave a thought, it made sense.

The assault rifle Jiang Lin had referred to was the PK2000 and the Reaper that was common in the apocalypse. Although the light armor could not defend against the sniper rifle in the apocalypse, the M82, known as the cannon in the modern world, could only shatter the plate.

So the injury sustained by Ayesha was only due to the kinetic energy from the bullet.

But the problem was if it was just the kinetic energy, why was she knocked out? Although the power of the anti-armor weapon was fierce, it was not strong enough to the point where it could knock Ayesha—who was injected with a genetic vaccine—unconscious.

"Ahem." Xia Shiyu looked at the way Jiang Chen explored Ayesha’s body and turned aside. With a hint of jealousy in her voice, she said, "Although Ayesha is your bodyguard, she is a girl after all... Just be careful."

"Ah. Sorry." Jiang Chen instinctively retracted his hand.

Ayesha looked at Jiang Chen and Xia Shiyu. She seemed to have understood something as a smile surfaced.

[That kind of relationship?]

"Head to the car first with Ayesha, I will be right there." With the questions Xia Shiyu seemed to have, Jiang Chen paused and then added, "Once we're on the car, I will explain to you everything."

With the serious expression on Jiang Chen's face, Xia Shiyu just nodded and Ayesha took her to the Maybach.

After cleaning the battlefield, Jiang Chen returned to the car.

The Sonata Jiang Chen bought was parked in a community nearby, abandoned.

It was one in the morning and there was only one car on the empty road; it looked desolate.

Jiang Chen sat in the front seat as Xia Shiyu, in the back, seemed to be uncomfortable. Jiang Chen asked with care in his voice, "Do you feel uncomfortable?"

"N... No."

Xia Shiyu yawned, leaned against the car door, and muttered, "My first kiss... was given to a girl."

Ayesha who was about to start the car paused before she began to giggle.

"What are you laughing at?" With redness covering her face, Xia Shiyu pretended to be serious, but her voice wasn't confident at all.

Jiang Chen also resisted the temptation to laugh as he said out loud, "CPR doesn’t count as the first kiss."

"That makes sense..." Xia Shiyu looked away with a relieved expression.

"Is there anyone you want to give your first kiss to?" A rare, cunning look appeared on Ayesha’s expressionless face.

"Of course, someone I like."

"Do you like Jiang Chen?" Ayesha was persistent.

"Why, why do you suddenly ask this?" Xia Shiyu’s face immediately blushed as she spoke incoherently.

Jiang Chen also awkwardly scratched his face as he said, feeling embarrassed, "Ahem, don’t—" But his sentence was cut short.

Ayesha suddenly kissed him.

Xia Shiyu just felt something shattered as she completely froze.

"Your first kiss is now his."

Ayesha turned around and smiled gently at the completely dumbfounded Xia Shiyu.

The pristine blue eyes were filled with mischief.

...

Miao Jun parked the Sonata on the side of the road and walked to the agreed location with a perplexed feeling.

It was one and a half hour past midnight, the road was empty. Leaning against the road lamp, he gazed into the distance and silently waited.

Based on the agreement he made with Zhang Youjie, as long as he took care of Dagger and brought his phone to the agreed location, the task would be completed.

"If you want to be rich... then why did you become a soldier..."

The words left by Dagger lingered around his ears like a nightmare.

"You think I really wanted to be a soldier?" Miao Jun swore out loud and stuffed his cold hands into his pocket.

Betraying his country.

He never thought this day would come.

That thought alone gave him goosebumps.

A car light eventually approached from the distance. When Miao Jun saw this, he clenched the pistol in his pocket. Right when he saw the face in the car, his tensed expression started to loosen.

The car came and parked in front of him. A middle-aged man got out of the car and smiled at Miao Jun.

"Mr. Miao, I trust that you must have completed the deal we made."

Chapter 258: Eternal Loyalty

"Team A and Team B lost communication. Team C and Sergeant Miller confirmed dead."

Inside the consulate office with the report coming in from the phone, Zhang Youejie's finger trembled.

Five lives, 20 something people captured. The supposedly-flawless mission ended in an overwhelming defeat.

Not to mention, it was the most severe loss suffered by the CIB.

The other side of the phone fell silent. Li Zhongping, who was still in Hucheng, waited for an order.

"Is it the work of the General Staff Department?"

"Should be," Li Zhongping responded in a low voice.

With a deep breath, Zhang Youjie deliberated before he ordered, "... Mission aborted, retreat."

Although it was unfortunate, the mission did fail already. Without surprise, the UA embassy in Shangjing would receive a letter from the Han Congress, then the UA will be denounced by Hua in a news conference.

The muscles on Zhang Youjie face twitched uncontrollably, his heart dripped blood.

"What about the pawn left there?" asked Li Zhongping, referring to Miao Jun who had defected.

His previous plan was if Hua put Jiang Chen under house arrest, they would use Miao Jun to take out Dagger and bring the imprisoned Jiang Chen out.

But the plan never seemed to be in their control. Hua seemed to have used Jiang Chen as bait to take out Team A and B by using the PLA army stationed nearby. Right afterward, Team C that kidnapped the hostage was ambushed by a sniper.

Was the mission leaked?

The CIB, fooled by the General Staff Department.

Zhang Youjie inhaled deeply, trying hard to calm himself down.

Since losing was inevitable, minimizing loss was what he needed to consider.

"Take him out, he saw my face. Also, before taking him out, get him to take out Dagger."

"Yes."

Zhang Youjie hung up the phone and rubbed his sore nose before he left the office.

...

Miao Jun had never thought that he would join the military. He had never thought that after graduation, he'd be a secret agent in the intelligence department and become a part of the General Staff Department.

As for his dream, he wanted to become a businessman like his uncle. Or more simply, he wanted to be rich.

But things didn’t go as planned.

His original plan was to attend the business department at Wanghai University, and then start his own company after graduation.

He worked hard and indeed achieved stellar results.

He could vaguely recall the joy on his parents’ face when they were checking his score.

However, when it came time to apply for schools, his parents were against it.

He'd never imagined that his parents would plead with him, asking him to give up on his dream and to, instead, attend the Shangjing National Defense University.

There was no reason other than a parents' concern for their son's future.

"Your grandpa's old comrade is now a General. With this connection, if you attended the National Defense University, you will have a glorious future in the army!"

"Business? Do you know how difficult it was for your uncle? He couldn't even afford to eat at times! Business is not as easy as you think?"

"This is for you..."

Finally, Miao Jun decided to become a soldier.

What's ironic was that with this route, the only way he could achieve his dream was to become a bodyguard for the rich after leaving the army.

It was not impossible to be rich by staying in the army. There were plenty of money to be found in the logistics department, and a non-combat position in the recruiting office also had some opportunities; however, as a personnel from the intelligence department... it would be dangerous if he became wealthy.

His parents' consideration made him step onto a path that he didn’t even like in the first place. He tried to make himself enjoy it, but he realized that despite how hard he tried or how many achievements he earned, everyone would attribute his success to his connection and would automatically ignore his hard work.

Indeed, with the help of his connection, he was promoted quickly and managed to be part of the General Staff Department at the age of 24. But on the dinner table, his parents would only exclaim that his grandpa’s comrade was someone who changed his life, and they ignored the fact that he had almost died at the special training camp!

"Having a rough time? Everything you do will be rough! That is a given."

If Miao Jun wanted to complain, his father would definitely "comfort" him like this.

No one mind having a rough time if it was a career that they were passionate about.

However, he only felt dread.

Reality has shown that no amount of forced love can substitute real love. The same is true for a career and country. Even though he had memorized to heart the idealogy of the army, even without truly accepting it, he still did not hesitate to speak the words he did not care about when he swore with everyone.

One million USD? The money was attractive, but that was not what attracted him the most.

A green card, a ticket to the free world... He was tempted.

Freedom.

Needless to say, the concept of it held a fatal attraction. Even if he would curse it because he couldn’t obtain it, he would still comfort himself that he had lived a fine life without it.

Even after dinner, he would always curse with his comrades about the despicable UA soldiers.

"Mr. Miao, I trust that you have completed our agreement." Li Zhongping smiled.

Miao Jun looked at the weed on the side of the road as his throat moved. "Dagger is dead."

"Is that so? Then congratulations." Li Zhongping was relieved and drew out a pistol from his pocket.

Because it was too sudden, Miao Jun didn’t manage to react.

He gulped and utter out with difficulty, "Why?"

"God will bring you eternal freedom. Okay, Mr. Miao, goodbye—"

Bang!

A bullet penetrated Li Zhongping's head, his blood splattering onto the car.

"Fu*k!" The CIB agents driving immediately pulled out his gun.

"What are you waiting for!" A thunderous roar came from the distance.

Miao Jun, surprised, unconsciously drew out his pistol.

Bang!

Before the driver could do anything, Miao Jun shot him.

Breathing heavily, within the short few seconds, his entire back was drenched in cold sweat.

At the end of the alley, a figure staggered forward.

When Miao Jun saw the wrinkled face, he smiled wryly. He threw away his pistol and didn't run. Instead, he raised both of his hands.

It was Dagger.

For some reason, seeing him still alive, Miao Jun felt relieved despite knowing that this meant that he'll be spending the rest of his life in prison.

"Sorry, I... plotted against you." Due to his guilt, Miao Jun didn’t dare to look at his master in the face.

"You really think you could plot against me?" Dagger scorned while he covered his bleeding wound and sat on the engine cover.

He paused before the dried lips spoke trembling.

"I took the two daggers on purpose. If you really could escape, you wouldn’t have been caught in the first place. If you truly did escape, there was really one possibility..." The old face flashed with a cunning look fitting for his age as he gazed at the rookie for a long time.

"I defected," Miao Jun said with a bitter expression.

"Learn." Dagger smile with his left hand still covering his wound, the right hand pressed against the engine cover.

"No need, there is no opportunity to use it even if I learn." Miao Jun sighed and took out Dagger’s phone to call General Liu.

He was planning to confess.

But suddenly, Dagger, with keen eyes, snatched the phone and hung up the phone yet to be dialed.

With a perplexed expression on Miao Jun’s face, Dagger grinned and threw the phone away.

"Dying due to a comrade’s defecting… even if you don’t think it is embarrassing, I still think it is. 'Dagger suffered an honorable death.' I’m more willing to have the last line written like this."

[Death?!]

Miao Jun was stunned as his eyes widened, "How is that possible, didn’t you purposely-"

"Although it is on purpose, they still hit the sweet spots," Dagger laughed, but he started to cough while laughing.

Blood stained Miao Jun’s clothes.

"Let me call an ambulance for you—"

"There is no need"—Dagger stopped Miao Jun—"I know my body."

"I..." Miao Jun’s finger trembled and froze there not knowing what to do.

The apology was stuck in between in throat, it could not be squeezed out.

He knew that even if he apologized, it was useless.

He had killed him.

Disregarding Miao Jun’s expression, Dagger muttered to himself:

"I’m old and can’t even beat the young guys. Five years, the organization brought me back to the country. I was supposed to retire that night. But Old Liu found me and wanted me to use my experience abroad to provide some guidance on anti-espionage activities and train a few more newcomers for the state... I agreed.

"Five years, there were a total of 27 young men that trained under me. You should be the last one." Dagger looked at Miao Jun pleasingly and nodded, "You are the most talented I have seen—for a new recruit."

"Sorry—"

"Don’t apologize." Dagger shook his head.

"27 people, only six stayed. My old superior wanted me to

convince those talented to stay, but I never did that. The melon forcefully grown isn't sweet."

His voice was filled with melancholy.

"If you want to be rich, don’t be a soldier. If you are reluctant, problems will arise, sooner or later."

Miao Jun lowered his head, his face covered in embarrassment.

The voice turned more feeble and Dagger continued to mutter to himself:

"I know that my country might not be the best... You guys can go on the internet, the things you see, I know too.

"But even like this, I still firmly believe that it will become better.

"Before that, please protect it for me, until that day is here.

"But don’t force yourself."

"Could... could I know your name?" Miao Jun asked while sobbing.

"My name? Haha." Dagger grinned as if he had regained his life back, and his voice was again filled with energy.

He took out the pistol that he had used for many years and threw it in Miao Jun’s hand while shaking.

"Once you have enough authority, you can just flip through my document. If you retire, there is no need to know anymore.

"Return this to Old Liu for me, I have fought for him for half of my life. Return this gun to its rightful owner."

Then, Dagger slowly closed his dried eyelids.

This time, he really stopped breathing.

Just like an aging shepherd finally welcoming its eternal peace.

"AHHHHHHH!"

Under the streetlight, on the empty road, a man kneeled on the ground howling in tears.

Chapter 259: The Reaction across the Pacific

A lot happened that night.

The error in judgment of Jiang Chen’s ability made the CIB pay a heavy price.

The error in judgment to Jiang Chen's reaction caused the General Staff Department to lose Jiang Chen’s whereabouts.

Who would have thought an ordinary person would suddenly become a fully equipped "Ironman" like a superhero in the Hollywood movie? Who would have thought the "obedient" individual would suddenly express anger, "Sorry, I’m not your subordinate"?

From God’s perspective, the focal point of the clues revolved around the man called Jiang Chen. But because of the blind spots of each party’s intelligence, as well as the context that the two sides would never sit around a table to exchange information, the CIB and the General Staff Department were both tricked in this one incident.

Regardless of how anxious the General Staff Department was about Jiang Chen’s disappearance, a person across the Pacific was also in a state of anxiety.

It was still midnight in Han, daylight on the other side of the

earth.

It was the Rainbow Mansion of UA.

Right now, John Brennan stood awkwardly in front of the President's table, but his previous aggressive stance was long gone. Normally, he would not put aside his pride and just stand here in front of the president of the UA because CIB was independent of the intelligence system. Even the Congress had no rights to ask for specific details. From this point alone, he lived a much better life than the current president who constantly receives pressure from the Congress.

Beside John, James Komi was gloating. Compared to the bald old man, the only 35 years old middle-aged man looked sharper. Nothing made him more delighted than his opposition suffering.

That's right, while they served the same government, the two organizations didn't have the best relationship.

Therefore, the past UA presidents had a love and hate relationship to the two hands that always fought each other.

Right now, the president wanted to throw his shoe at John's face.

"Ahem, before we start the meeting, lets first listen to a voice message." James coughed and signaled the two to look in his direction. Then he raised his eyebrows at the old opposition John before he put the smartphone on the president's desk.

It was a recorded interrogation.

The voice of the interrogator was low and slightly stiff. It was hard to make out the voice, but the person being interrogated was clear to distinguish.

Griss, CIB's elite agent. The president had personally awarded him an honorary emblem.

But the super warrior that survived through the chaos in Iraq had no life in his voice. Rather than wry, it was more accurate to describe as completely hollow.

What kind of torture did the General Staff Department use to force the tough man to confess the entire mission details in two short hours? Just be listening to the voice without any life in it, the three in the president office felt a horrific chill.

The recording ended.

John took a deep breath and loosened his tie in discomfort. The president's face looked gloomy.

Even though his legs remained on the desk, he did not say a single word.

Seeing the two didn't say anything, James smiled and spoke out.

"Kidnapping and threaten a lawful businessman is despicable and unconstitutional. Disregarding the fact that your people took the constitution seriously, with the severity of this mission, could I consider this as the biggest mistake that occurred in your history?"

"Please mind your words, Mr. James, I'm considering the interest of the nation," John argued back out of habit, but there was no confidence in his voice at all.

"Is that so? But what about now? There are more odds in our diplomatic relationship with Han and they caught us with our pants down. We could have used a mild method to drag the Hua businessman over to our side. Where do you think the CIB agent is conducting the mission, Syria? Iraq? God, that is Hua."

John looked awkward, so he diverted the topic.

"James, I don't think it is appropriate for you to demonstrate your cheerful attitude in this setting."

"No, who said I'm cheerful, I'm furious." James resisted the urge to laugh as he rubbed his upper lip.

"No, you are laughing."

"It is your illusion, Mr. John."

"Both of you, shut up," The president suddenly spoke out.

Like two chickens fighting, John looked at James aggressively, but James at an advantage only shrugged and looked at the president with a pleasant smile.

"Now, let’s discuss how we are going to fix this thing," The president deeply inhaled and said gloomily.

"First, we should think of a plan to rescue the twenty-something agents back. Since Griss was interrogated, then at least it meant that they didn’t die because of crossfire, but were rather captured," John tried his best to calm down and slowly explained the situation.

"But till this moment, Han didn’t comment on this incident. Should I call over and admit our mistake? And beg them to release the prisoner?" The President was instantly furious.

John’s expression suddenly turned awkward again as he shrugged with thick skin.

"Then write twenty-five copies of the honorary letters and send it to the family of the missing warriors."

The president rubbed his weary forehead before he sat up from the chair.

"James, where is the recording from?"

"The email appeared two hours ago in one of my subordinates' mailbox. Realizing the severity of the situation, he immediately sent the file to me," James said delightfully.

"What's the validity of the file?"

"We conducted voice analysis with Griss' voice, it matched perfectly.

"Mhmm." The President only nodded.

"Let's think how to take care of the aftermath. Since the conflict... already occurred," John rubbed his nose and said uncomfortably.

With the way John looked, the president almost wanted to curse at him.

[Fu*k, you don't tell me before you execute the mission, and now I have to wipe your butt when there is a problem.]

But he only said it in his mind and not out loud.

He deliberated for a while before the president spoke out.

"Immediately stop the interference with Dragon II; the mission failed."

John nodded. James who was primarily responsible for domestic intelligence shrugged as it didn’t concern him.

"If Han denounces us on this… we’ll send the delegation team. If Han doesn't comment on this… we likely won’t get them out. If we can, just send some more agents. Remember, don’t get caught again," The President said while massaging his forehead.

John was grateful for the fact that the President’s promised to visit Han. He nodded again.

A visit to Han meant pleading. As long as they could save the twenty-something people, John would face significantly less pressure.

As to the Han businessman, the President already forgot about him.

Compared to just a businessman, it was more important to wipe the butt of the CIB.

And it was just a Dragon II drone system, the talented UA didn’t need it at all.

Chapter 260: Escaping the Cage

Xiangjiang, the Peninsula.

In the elegantly designed grand hall, a young man sat at the corner with a foreign girl. They appreciated the gracefulness of the sunshine while quietly enjoying the afternoon.

The musicians played a melodious, but slow classical music. The server in British-style uniform courteously walked beside the two and put the three-story silver tray filled with desserts on the table, and then poured black tea for them.

To be honest, the British dessert didn't taste great. The taste of the chocolate ball and the cream puff didn't differ much with the ones sold at the bakery. The only thing unique about the afternoon tea here was the exquisite atmosphere and rich history.

The hotel started construction in 1922 before completed in 1926 and opened in 1928. It is one of the most renowned and luxurious hotels in Xiangjiang and the world.

Of course, Jiang Chen couldn't taste the atmosphere and the history. The only reason he was here was due to curiosity. Ayesha also was uninterested in those things as she was intrigued by the soft pudding on her plate.

Her slightly curled brown hair gently rested on her right shoulder. Her cute mouth and smooth skin bloomed into a beautiful image under the mild sunshine.

Jiang Chen could clearly sense that a lot of men were looking enviously at him. But he didn't mind at all as he just sluggishly looked onto the street outside of the window while enjoying the tranquil and warm rays.

As to why he would appear 800 kilometers away, it started two days ago.

Jiang Chen who wiped out an entire force of CIB and engaged in a small conflict with the General Staff Department didn't return to Hucheng. Instead, he drove all the way to Fujian.

On the car, Jiang Chen told Xia Shiyu about the incident from start to finish, including the meeting with Wang Linhua that night and then the specifics of the agreement with Zhongxin High Tech.

In the morning, he called his parents and told them that he had to return to Wanghai because of a temporary business emergency and not to worry before he turned off his phone.

With Robert's connection and Mr. Chen's help, Jiang Chen boarded a luxury cruise as a tourist between Xiangjiang and Egret Island before walking off on Xiangjiang.

Xia Shiyu stayed on Egret Island for one day before she boarded a flight from there to Wanghai.

When she got on the plane, the General Staff Department

naturally contacted Xia Shiyu inquiring about Jiang Chen's current location.

As part of Jiang Chen's plan, Xia Shiyu transferred over the USB loaded with smart drone system 1.0, at the same time restating Jiang Chen's original words. Jiang Chen's wording was reserved, but if it were expressed in monotone, it would definitely sound harsh.

"I'm extremely displeased with what occurred in Hucheng. I'm not your subordinate, I did my obligation by paying my tax, and even if I obliged to my duty, you asked to me think of the bigger picture. This is funny, so I left."

"Even if I have left, this doesn't mean that I abandoned the Han market, and it doesn't mean that my overseas team abandoned the Han market. Except that because of the deterioration in the investment environment, we are forced to reevaluate the focus of our business. Future Technology will become a subsidiary and controlled by the newly formed Future International."

"Of course, regarding the agreement on the smart drone system 1.0, our party has already completed its development. I sincerely hope that your party can honor the agreement and provide the advantageous policy to Future Technology."

"Yes, Future Technology has nearly three hundred million domestic users. But don't forget, we also have over four hundred million international users, as well as one billion in the undeveloped market."

"We don’t just have one choice-"

General Liu was silent for a long time when he heard Jiang Chen’s response, he didn’t say anything at the other end and just sent people to protect Xia Shiyu before he reported Jiang Chen’s response to the top.

As to how to treat Future Technology, the top discussed and weighed the pros and cons before making the decision to maintain friendly relationships and canceling Jiang Chen’s restriction to leave the country… although he left the border already.

A technical team capable of producing military technology meant that it indeed possessed the value to establish a friendly relationship. Jiang Chen really didn’t develop the software during this time, and from the time it would take to complete the development, the actual developer was indeed not Jiang Chen. The stipulation of Jiang Chen being the developer was indeed false.

From that perspective, it was pointless if they controlled Jiang Chen.

There was another story that happened as a result of that. As the perpetrator that forced Future Technology away, the Wang family were heavily criticized by their political oppositions. The formation of Future International meant that the separation of the domestic and international market would cause the Wanghai local government to give away five hundred million in foreign tax income.

While other forces were eager to take a bite of the juicy meat, the Wang family was the first to make a move. Therefore, they were heavily scrutinized by the central authority.

Of course, these were all after facts.

Since Jiang Chen left, at least he won't be back for awhile.

...

The Xiangjiang businessman that took him on board was someone he met before. When Jiang Chen colluded with Robert to sell gold, it was him that transported the gold to international waters before Robert's ship took it to South Africa.

When he saw Jiang Chen, he meticulously arranged everything for him. Not only did he send people to pick Jiang Chen up at the port, he even booked a room at the famous Peninsula.

To his friendly gesture, Jiang Chen gladly accepted and checked into the luxury sea view suite on the top floor with Ayesha.

Precisely speaking, it was considered smuggling. But when Jiang Chen got off the cruise, Robert prepared the necessary documents for him, so he was able to check in. As to Ayesha, because she possessed a green card, she could stay in Xiangjiang for a short period of time without any documents.

The program was transferred over, the General Staff Department no longer bothered him, and the CIB also had other issues to deal with.

Now that Jiang Chen was alone, he was free.

"Speaking of which, why did you suddenly kiss me," He asked nonchalantly while savoring the tea.

Ayesha buried her head upon hearing Jiang Chen’s question and stopped fondling with the pudding in her hand. Then she whispered quite embarrassedly.

"Because... I want to share with her, and not keep it hidden from her."

When Jiang Chen heard the naïve words, he really wanted to scoff that "If it is Xia Shiyu, she definitely can’t stand the existence of another woman," but it didn’t come out of his mouth in the end.

She was too greedy, even if Ayesha won’t be jealous.

Ayesha seemed to have seen through Jiang Chen’s thought and just smiled.

Being gazed upon by the gentle blue pupils, not a word could come out of Jiang Chen.

She gently put down the silvery fork in her hand and said.

"If she really left you because of this, that means she only has affection for you, and not love. If she really loved you, she would never leave because of this. At least, she will attempt to fight for you to come back."

[Fight for me? Not something that the thin-skinned Xia Shiyu would do.]

"Uh, it feels complicated now." Jiang Chen sighed while scratching the back of his head.

[Whatever, just follow the flow.]

It was already January. The food supplies to the wasteland would need to be solved. Hence, the next step was to take care of Pannu Islands.

Chapter 261: The Interference from an Unknown Channel

After the afternoon high tea, Jiang Chen took Ayesha to the renowned Disneyland in Xiangjiang. Although her childhood had no Mickey Mouse or Donald Duck, it didn't interfere with being touched by the happy atmosphere.

The mouth carved into a crescent moon was filled with joy and happiness.

She didn't have a lively childhood. The moment she was born, her country was in the midst of unrest. From the joy on her face, Jiang Chen felt as if his weariness was healed.

Although the loving smile was also beautiful, Jiang Chen hoped she could smile more for herself. It was the reason why whenever he has the opportunity, he will take her everywhere.

To make up for her.

Taking photos, going on rides.

By eight at night, the two stood in front of the castle of the sleeping beauty with their hands held and enjoying the colorful fireworks blossoming in the sky.

The light reflected on her happy face was so charming. Jiang

Chen was lost in the scene.

The happiness gradually turned into shyness under his direct sight.

She gently kissed his lips.

Fireworks lit up the sky and scattered.

Lips apart.

Ayesha slightly lowered her head, her face only flashed an attractive vibrancy.

"Thank you."

The lips murmured a timid gratitude.

Jiang Chen didn’t say anything, but she could clearly sense the reason why Jiang Chen choose to come here. It was mostly for her.

He didn’t reply and only smiled. Then he rubbed her soft hair.

"Do you feel happy?"

With a hand gently on top of Jiang Chen’s, Ayesha closed her eyes and softly said.

"Mhmm."

...

It was already nine before they left Disneyland, but they didn’t immediately return to the hotel. Instead, they went to Taigu Square.

After their last date in Veit, Ayesha became fascinated by all kinds of clothes. Within a short period, the two would not be able to return to Wanghai city, so the clothes in the mansion would have to stay there.

Thus, only when they carried a handful of bags back to the Peninsula did their day's itinerary finally end.

Jiang Chen locked the door behind him. Just when he had a smirk of a big bad wolf on and waiting for the little sheep to change clothes, the doorbell rang.

Surprising Jiang Chen, he wondered who would be visiting this late?

Although he was disappointed, Jiang Chen still tidied up his rumpled clothes, watched Ayesha go into the bedroom before he opened the door.

A heroic but beautiful face appeared in front of Jiang Chen.

"Hello, handsome." Natasha with one hand on the door looked at Jiang Chen half-smilingly.

Jiang Chen let out a sigh as he was planning to close the door.

Natasha’s eyebrows raised as she stepped one foot inside and dragged Jiang Chen by the collar and pressed him against the wall.

"What are you planning to do?" Jiang Chen shrugged as he glanced at her arm, "If I remember correctly when we were in Veit, you tried my ability before."

Natasha's expression froze for a moment as she suddenly recollected herself, remembering she was no match for him. The harmless looking man had an unbelievable amount of strength, one move and she would be on the ground.

But even then, she had no signs of backing down either.

She teasingly moved closer to Jiang Chen’s ear as she blew flirtatiously in his ear.

"Did Mr. Jiang forget what you did to me that day in the darkroom?"

"I only injected you with something..." Jiang Chen shrugged, but

his expression looked awkward, "Speaking of this, you seemed to be opposed to the idea of sleeping with me that day?"

"That was before, do you not have any naughty thoughts about me?" Natasha said seductively, her 36E breasts had drawn in Jiang Chen’s attention.

But just as she finished, a cold solid item was pressed against the back of her head.

She didn’t know when Ayesha appeared behind her.

The particularly cold expression had a vibe to kill.

The playful smile froze on her face, the corner of Natasha's lips twitched as she let go of Jiang Chen’s collar and raised both of her hands to surrender.

"Your little beauty is still not friendly," Natasha ridiculed as she maintained her position with her hands held high. "Could you get her to put the gun down?"

Ayesha looked at Jiang Chen.

After seeing Jiang Chen nod did she obediently put the gun away, but the cautious look on her face did not fade away.

"I have other intentions for finding you." Natasha put on a stern

face.

"Of course, I wouldn't think you would be here to hook up with me," Jiang Chen didn’t take her stern expression seriously as he said nonchalantly.

"Since you have left Han, why don’t you come to Russia?"

"Regarding this, I believe we have already discussed it."

As if Natasha had guessed what he would say, she was not surprised and only let out a sigh.

"Although I have expected this... Looks like I will go back empty handed."

"That’s right." Jiang Chen nodded.

"Okay, I thought making a trip personally would move you enough." Natasha shrugged as she walked to the door. "If you ever change your mind one day, Russia’s door will always be open for you."

"Thank you very much." Jiang Chen sent Natasha out the door.

After closing the door, seeing that Ayesha was looking at him, Jiang Chen rubbed her hair smiling.

"What are you thinking about?"

Ayesha looked away in shyness as she murmured.

"Are we... going to continue?"

As she finished saying this, her face became red.

Although they were interrupted, seeing Ayesha's timid look, Jiang Chen felt his thirst return.

"Of course." He softly spoke into her ear, "Do you want to shower first, or should I go?"

"I'll go."

Then, with a blushed face, Ayesha dashed into the washroom.

Not long, the glass blurred and water began to drip.

Sitting on the sofa in the living room while waiting for the beauty to come out, Jiang Chen began to play with his EP.

Due to boredom, Jiang Chen suddenly remembered Ayesha' coldblooded ability. Using it for an extended period of time could cause her to go into a coma which is a serious consequence.

When he first obtain his fury ability, he could only use medicine to control the activation and deactivation. With the help of medication, he could have been in an awkward position where he could activate but was unable to deactivate the ability.

Although Lin Lin definitely would have fallen asleep by now, Jiang Chen didn’t feel guilty about waking her up.

Indeed, Lin Lin with sleepy eyes appeared on the other side of the screen.

"Pervert, why are you not asleep this late, what do you need me for?"

"Mhmm, I have something to ask you..." Jiang Chen explained Ayesha situation to Lin Lin.

"Medicine for hidden genetic code? Although the coldblooded ability is uncommon, it probably could be purchased at the Sixth Street. Okay, I will tell Sun Jiao. Is that all?" Lin Lin yawned.

"Mhmm, sleep early." Seeing the drowsy Lin Lin in pajama, Jiang Chen couldn’t help but smile.

"I slept already-"

But then, the screen froze all the sudden.

Gradually, the middle of the screen turned into whiteness.

Jiang Chen was confused, he thought the EP or that chip was malfunctioning, so he knocked on the EP.

No reaction at all.

Just as Jiang Chen was about to restart the EP, the screen suddenly turned black.

Immediately, in the middle of the pitch black screen, a word appeared abruptly.

<Hello>

What surfaced after was a person with only an outline showing.

He had a hollow smile on and waved at him rhythmically.

Chapter 262: A Temporary Return

The next morning, while lying in bed, Jiang Chen hugged the cat-like Ayesha curled up in front of him and turned on the TV.

<... Recently, the authority had cracked a major case of foreign espionage activity. Two suspects were shot died during the arrest phase when they fired back, based on the evidence collected at the scene, the investigation has arrested 11 suspects, which include seven Zhongxin High Tech researchers as well four government officials. They will face espionage, treason, as well as seven counts of other charges.

Based on reliable information, the CIB may have been involved with this mission, suspect Zhang is currently hiding inside the UA consulate in Wanghai and refusing to accept the trial by law. Right now, the investigation team has sent in a request to the UA embassy, hoping the UA consulate in Wanghai can assist in the investigation. As to the specifics progress of the event, we'll pass it on to our reporter in Wanghai...>

[Suspect Zhang? Is that Zhang Jieyou?] Jiang Chen yawned as he disinterestedly turned off the TV.

He'll leave the trouble for "professionals" to solve. To the CIB and General Staff Department, it was definitely not the end. But to him, he can turn to the next page.

Even if everything started because of him.

"Dagger is good. Zhang Youjie shouldn't have left anything behind, but Dagger still found evidence?" After putting the remote on the nightstand, Jiang Chen touched Ayesha's nose as he fell into deep thought.

Three teams and one sniper. All the evidence was taken away by him into the apocalypse. In this case, the General Staff Department should have no reason nor evidence to determine the CIB planned this mission.

[Two agents shot, did a battle occur somewhere he didn't know about?

Whatever, there is no difference in conclusion.]

Jiang Chen shook his head as he decided not to be troubled by this anymore.

Compared to these things, what kept him up at night was the video he saw no his EP yesterday.

After restarting it, the EP returned to normal. If it were not that every communication would be automatically written in the memory, Jiang Chen would have thought it was his illusion.

Hello?

Was it saying hello to me?

Jiang Chen pondered for a moment as he scratched his chin, but he still didn’t reach any conclusions.

"Whatever, I’ll go back to the apocalypse and gave the video to Lin Lin." He muttered to himself as he put it aside for now.

After waking up, Jiang Chen called the front desk.

Not long after, the server pushed a cart full of breakfast to the door.

After paying plus tips, Jiang Chen put the tray with a sandwich and mocha on the counter. Seeing Ayesha curled up with her hands in front of her chest, he couldn’t help but smile as he leaned down to kiss her smooth forehead. As if she had sensed the warmness, her eyelashes shivered, and a subconscious smile appeared on her face. She seemed to be having a sweet dream.

Because they slept really late last night, he didn’t want to disturb her peaceful sleep. So Jiang Chen left a message on the nightstand only the two of them would understand before initiating travel.

...

When he opened his eyes, he was in the apocalypse.

He didn’t stay in the room for too long as he headed straight to

the gym on the third floor.

After quietly opening the door, Sun Jiao sensing the sound behind her and immediately turned around. When she saw it was Jiang Chen, surprised quickly spread across her face.

"You are back?" Putting the pistol away, Sun Jiao walked to him.

"Could you reaction be slower and let me give you a surprise?" Jiang Chen put his hand away from her waist as he said helplessly.

"Then why don’t you try again? I'll pretend I didn’t see you." Her beautiful pupils were filled with mischievousness.

"Ahem, I’ll pass. I have some important things to take care of this time."

Seeing that Jiang Chen had important tasks, Sun Jiao swiped away her naughty expression and waited for Jiang Chen to explain.

"How’s the production of the kinetic skeleton?"

Two months ago, Jiang Chen gave Jiang Lin the production goal of completing 50 kinetic skeletons a month, he was wondering what the progress was on this.

"We exceeded the goal," Sun Jiao had a proud smile on her face, "We have 110 kinetic skeletons in the armory, based on your order,

we have not equipped the forces yet."

"110 sets?!" Jiang Chen shockingly looked at Sun Jiao.

Seeing the shocked Jiang Chen, Sun Jiao smiled as she began explaining.

"Did you forget that the Sixth Street is our territory now? Based on the recommendation of your acting general Chu Nan, after taking consideration of Jiang Lin opinion, a portion of our parts requirement was outsourced to the Sixth Street to complete. We establish the standards, they are responsible for the production and improvement of the parts. In this case, not only could we decrease production cost, the production speed is also improved. Right now, the Fishbone base can produce up to 80 sets of kinetic skeletons a month which doubled our previous production!"

"Great!"

Jiang Chen was ecstatic as he hugged Sun Jiao and gave her a passionate kiss.

"No."

Although her mouth said no, her body was honest.

After escaping Jiang Chen’s hug, Sun Jiao rolled her eyes at him, organized her slightly messy hair, and returned to her previous seriousness.

Realizing the inappropriate timing of his action, Jiang Chen coughed and got back on track.

"Set aside 100 kinetic skeletons, I have other uses. The rest will be prioritized to the force stationed at Zhufeng Highway, I have a sense this is not the end of the mutated humans."

Sun Jiao also looked concerned as she cautiously said.

"I hold the same opinion. The mutated humans have not reacted which is abnormal. Once March comes, their advantage of cold resistance would no longer exist. Also, the Dusk Church has no reason to give up on <Project Garden of Eden>... And, Sun Xiaorou is still in our hands." When Sun Jiao mentioned her sister, she seemed to have deflated slightly.

Sun Jiao's depressed mood made Jiang Chen feel a strong sense of guilt.

"No, you don’t need to apologize, you didn’t make any mistakes. Or rather, the fact that you can forgive her being an assassin is already a way of repaying." After pecking on Jiang Chen’s lips, Sun Jiao said sternly while staring into his eyes.

[Is this the logic of the apocalypse?] When Jiang Chen committed the action while enraged, he was unable to forgive himself.

Since Sun Xiaorou was his sister-in-law.

He didn’t know if the apocalypse had this type of ethical concept or not.

"I will destroy the Dusk for you," Jiang Chen promised.

"Thank you." Sun Jiao smiled sincerely.

Chapter 263: Sixth Street Nuclear Nonproliferation

For the past few months, the development of the apocalypse was stable and consistent.

The streets of the Sixth Street no longer showed signs of the civil war. The radiation level in the Inner Circle also returned to normal. To prevent similar events from occurring, Chu Nan ordered the Sixth Street's soldiers to confiscate all tactical nukes at the Sixth Street.

Most of the tactical nukes were dug out from the ruins. Even with the possession of advanced technology, in an ever-changing battlefield, the normally never dysfunctional technology may not be entirely reliable.

While the World Alliance Organization did some recycling of these dangerous goods, a lot of nukes were still dispersed in the hands of ordinary survivors. Followed by the disbanding of the World Alliance Organization, this recycling plan was completely shut down.

The dysfunctional nukes only required some small modifications to take out the nuclear material before it can be made into a simple nuclear bomb.

Even in the ruins of the civilization caused by nukes, nuclear weapon remains an effective killing method.

Needless to say, Chu Nan has his ways in politics. After the nuclear non-proliferation was enacted, the force with detector did a carpet search of the entire Sixth Street. It only took three days to confiscate all tactical nukes.

For the people that handed in the weapon themselves, the Sixth Street military government compensated at them with a price equivalent to market value. For the people who went against the act, they were deported permanently.

Not that there was no resistance, but since only a few held nuclear weapons, the military government that stabilized the situation put out a strong attitude from the beginning to maintain the suppressive regime. Those resisting voices didn't manage to form into anything meaningful before they all vanished.

In the option of dying together versus compromise, almost none chose the former one.

On the other side, under the order of Jiang Chen, Fishbone base formed an aerospace department with Jiang Lin taking charge of development and enhancement of space technology. This gesture was to complete the promise Jiang Chen gave to Jiang Lin about investing in his space dream.

Of course, a dream must consider reality. For now, the aerospace department's primary task was not to design the who-knew-when-it-will-be-completed engine, but rather a missile capable of equipping nuclear material as a deterrence to the electromagnetic

cannon of Liuding.

According to what Sun Jiao said, Fishbone base has currently set up five missile launchers in Qingpu and also deployed five W-1 ballistic missiles with nuclear material. The nuclear material was confiscated, and Jiang Lin completed the design of the W-1 ballistic missile.

The missile’s power parts used the booster of small civil rockets while the surface of the missile was covered with an anti-laser painting.

From a technical perspective, compared to the Disaster-32 missile that represented the technology peak of the pre-war military industry, the W-1 designed and manufactured by the Fishbone base had quite a significant discrepancy in not only anti-interception and accuracy, but it was enough to deter Liuding town.

...

After listening to Sun Jiao’s report, Jiang Chen went to the community center in the base and found Wang Qin, he took out 100 sets of kinetic skeletons and four hundred rounds of reaper rifles using 7.62 bullets, as well hundreds of heat sensor grenades. He moved everything to the warehouse behind the mansion's garden.

These firearms will be transported back to the modern world where it will be used in the near future.

Other than these firearms, Jiang Chen also assigned Wang Qin the task to place an order to the Sixth Street military factory to manufacture 20 anti-tank RPGs as well as 500 more heat sensor grenades.

With these military supplies, he was a mobile armory.

After combining this with the 100 people mercenary base in Niger, without exaggeration, Jiang Chen was capable of starting a small scale modern warfare.

After the war preparation was completed, Jiang Chen went to Lin Lin's lab.

He had a lot of questions about the weird video.

...

"Oh, the pervert is back?" The door opened, and Lin Lin simply spoke out of habit.

Silver hair, red and black pupil, and the odd fashion sense of white shirt with the white lab coat. The adorable face was always ruined by the unrestrained comments.

Being used to her bad mouth, Jiang Chen ignored her greeting as she put the mango pudding on the table.

Seeing her favorite pudding, Lin Lin subconsciously began to slurp her saliva as her eyes shone with excitement.

Jiang Chen couldn’t help but smile at Lin Lin who was easily satisfied by a few puddings.

"Eat it later, I have something to ask you."

After rubbing the pudding box on her chest, she wiped the drool from her mouth, and reluctantly put the pudding aside.

"Speak your mind."

"When we video chatted yesterday, did you see something weird?"

"Something weird?" Lin Lin titled her head as she looked at Jiang Chen, puzzled, "I remember you hung up midway, then I went to sleep."

"Is that so."

Jiang Chen pressed the side of the EP as the memory chip popped out.

"I didn’t hang up... How should I explain this? It was as if the television program had some weird news being played in the middle of it."

Lin Lin was lost, she took the chip from Jiang Chen’s hand.

"That’s impossible? The fourth dimension messenger is based on the resonance of the Klein particles as the central design philosophy. Based on the theory, this type of special wave crossing the fourth dimension can only be passed along from the chip made out of the same crystal..."

Lin Lin mumbled some strange theory as she inserted the chip into the full sensory computer.

Light blue particles floated up as they instantly created a two-dimensional picture.

"The video is two dimensional, the picture quality is three dimensional, and the size is only 52 kilobytes... Did it get compressed?" After pressing a few times on the hologram screen, Lin Lin replayed the video Jiang Chen saw last night.

The hologram screen began to shake, and after a period of blurry whiteness, the strange figure appeared again.

<Hello>

For some reason, after seeing this "person" with only an outline, Jiang Chen felt an unnatural discomfort.

Suddenly, he realized where this feeling was coming from.

"Uncanny valley effect." Seeing the hand waving rhythmically, Jiang Chen mustered to himself.

Originated from the fear of death, humans would instinctively fear repulsive things similar to the human, but not the human.

"Uncanny valley effect? 100% humans are a bothersome creature." Lin Lin's digitalized eyes slightly contracted as she began to analyze the details of the video.

But as she analyzed, her expression became more and more stern.

Seeing Lin Lin repetitively playing the video, Jiang Chen was just about to ask why she was doing so, when Lin Lin closed the video.

She let out a long sigh, wiped off the sweat from her forehead and looked at Jiang Chen with a very rare and serious expression.

"I have finished analyzing the video... Before telling you the result, can I ask a question?"

"Go ahead."

"When did your world's history start to become weird?"

Chapter 264: Communication with the Past

It was an odd question to ask.

From Jiang Chen’s perspective, the history of this world was strange no matter how long he looked at it.

Hua reached an agreement with the surrounding countries to form the Pan-Pacific Alliance that included 60% of the world’s population. The resulting alliance would compete head-to-head with NATO and CCCP.

For someone like Jiang Chen who would occasionally read the news and keep an eye on current political events, it was a plausible scenario.

"Perhaps it was the Soviet’s collapse?" Jiang Chen thought for a moment, "I remember it was in 1991. In our world, the Soviet was only less than 70 years old."

Because of the short-lived two extreme opposites, it didn’t trigger the tension which caused the resulting Third World War. Jiang Chen was not a historian, it was his best guess of the situation.

"The Soviet collapsed? That’s hard to imagine..." Lin Lin pressed her chin as she frowned.

"Speaking of this, did we go off topic?" Jiang Chen coughed and said gently.

"No," Lin Lin shook her head, "Do you know how the crystal is formed?"

"The biological crystallization that formed in mutants and some zombies?" Jiang Chen didn’t know why her thought jumped to this common knowledge.

"That’s right; the crystal is a form of biological crystallization," Lin Lin nodded, "Based on the theory proposed by Doctor Klein in 2132 through his experiment, every conscious, carbon-based creature possess Klein particles in their body. But normally speaking, the energy level is usually stable and in meager quantity."

When Jiang Chen heard that every living creature possessed Klein particle, he subconsciously touched the back of his head.

"Don’t worry, not every creature would grow those kinds of "tumors". Unless it was an uncontrolled mutation which forces the area that stores the Klein particles to change, then crystals will not form. The stable energy must be agitated to become unstable. Under normal circumstance, creatures with crystals would more easily survive through natural selection. Therefore the mutants that walked out of the nuclear craters would normally possess crystals," Lin Lin looked at Jiang Chen’s action and mocked.

"Based on dissection experiments, Klein particles would normally be stored in the brain."

When she talked about this point, Lin Lin stopped and took a deep breath.

"Hypothetically... I am saying hypothetically if there is a person, the Klein particle concentration in the back of its head would be much higher than normal people. Although crystals had yet to form, the Klein particle concentration was infinitely approaching the threshold value that would create the crystal. Although the probability of this type of genetic mutation is extremely low, with the population base of billions, it could theoretically exist."

"Through a kind of induction effect, just like magnets could magnetize metal, this would allow his brain to receive a signal from other timelines. He would be like an old antenna. Although he didn't possess the ability to send out signals, he could passively receive signals from other broadcasting waves. Normally speaking, this signal could only come from the future!"

Jiang Chen's expression also became sterner, but then he quickly discovered something that didn't add up.

"Antenna? That's not right... The brain is not a decoder after all. Even if there is an antenna in the brain, the brain could not decode the electromagnetic wave into a video message."

Lin Lin shook her head.

"Theoretically it is possible. The area where the Klein particles are stored is part of the brain after all. If the person receiving the signal happened to be sleeping, this would allow the special wave

of Klein particles to be translated into a dream which would allow the person receiving the signal to 'see'."

"The broadcasting of high energy special waves to the past in the fourth dimension was something that was done in the past, but because it was impossible to pinpoint the fourth-dimensional coordinates, the broadcasting was meaningless...There was no point in sending the signal billions of years back. In the end, with the consideration of the butterfly effect that could cause an uncontrollable effect on the "present" the experiment was halted. The more advanced the technology, the more likely human play themselves to death."

When she spoke of this point, Lin Lin looked at Jiang Chen who was speechlessness.

"But by the looks now, the concern was extraneous."

The "ancient" Jiang Chen was standing in front her. The interfered "past" would not cause any effect on the "present" now, it was just from the time point where history interfered that a parallel timeline to the "present" evolved.

"Time travel, excluding you as an exception I can’t explain, without the help of wormhole, even with the entire effort of a civilization, it would still not be possible to send a single particle of sand from the present to the past."

Lin Lin took out the memory chip from the full sensory computer.

"The cost of sending tangible mass to another point on the timeline is too expensive. Also, what if intangible material without mass was being sent? The signal with only 52kb of information could have been done with the technology from before the war. Plus, there's also the trouble of pinpointing where the signal will be sent..."

As she spoke, Lin Lin put the EP chip back into Jiang Chen’s hand. She looked at him with a serious expression.

"What if, someone received the information from the "future", what would he do with it?"

...

What would someone do if they received the signal from the future?

When Jiang Chen left Lin Lin’s room, he had been thinking about this question.

But as to what someone would do, it would depend on the information sent from the future?

If it were the winning lottery number for the next day, then that person would obviously buy the lottery. But the people from the future would not be bored enough to remember the winning lottery of the particular date to send the information back with

such a tremendous cost.

"Change the future?" Jiang Chen mustered to himself as he went to his bedroom and lied down on the bed.

If CCCP and PAC didn't exist, could they have avoided the Third World War that occurred in 2171?

But from the looks of it now, the person that sent the signal back was doing futile work.

This world didn't change.

What changed was a parallel universe.

As Jiang Chen thought about this, he initiated interdimensional travel.

The scenery in front of his eyes changed. The sunshine outside of the window instantly became graceful.

It was noon already, Ayesha had already got up at this time.

Jiang Chen pushed open the bedroom door and walked into the living room.

Seeing Jiang Chen walk over, Ayesha who was flipping through

fashion magazines on the sofa got up and greeted him.

"Someone came to find you."

"Someone came to find me? Who?"

Jiang Chen said while he stretched his body.

"He referred to himself as Mr. Chen. He called our room from the front desk."

Mr. Chen?

Seemed to be Robert's business partner at Los Santos with some influence in Xiangjiang. On the way to Xiangjiang, Mr. Chen had helped him a lot.

Jiang Chen certainly had great impressions of him.

"What about now? Where is he?"

"I told him you were still sleeping. He asked to notify you after you woke up that he is waiting for you at the first-floor restaurant," Ayesha said gently.

Chapter 265: Mr. Chen

Jiang Chen had temporarily put aside the questions regarding the mysterious video. Regardless if the external circumstances, caused the history of his world to diverge from the wasteland's, the fact is, it already happened and had nothing to do with him.

Or rather, from his perspective, the history of the wasteland was more peculiar.

He walked out of the room alone and headed downstairs.

It was already noon. Most of the customers at the hotel were enjoying lunch at the Felix restaurant on the 28th floor. Before the three o'clock afternoon tea began, the first-floor hall was empty.

When he came to the grand hall, he immediately saw Mr. Chen, who was sitting at the restaurant.

Chen Wei, a renowned businessman of Xiangjiang, had a focus on the entertainment and real estate market. He was the majority shareholder of Nanfeng Real Estate and Nanfeng Entertainment companies, with a personal net worth of over ten billion.

In a black suit with a kind face, he had a slight dogmatic vibe, similar to that of a ruthless leader. Although he was well into his midlife, his dark hair had no signs of balding.

Just from his appearance, Mr. Chen looked like a decent

businessman. But Jiang Chen knew too well that anyone who did business with Robert was nowhere in being decent.

Standing behind him was a bodyguard also in a suit with a pair of shades over his eyes.

When he saw Jiang Chen walking over, Mr. Chen stood up courteously and greeted him with a smile.

"I have long heard Mr. Jiang's name. Now that I finally have the chance to meet you, Mr. Jiang is indeed a stellar individual."

"Mr. Chen is flattering me. Regarding the boat, I have to thank you for that," Jiang Chen humbly replied.

"Haha, that is nothing at all. Please sit down..."

After some brief small talk, Jiang Chen sat down with Chen Wei's warm welcome.

"Why did Mr. Chen want to see me?" Jiang Chen smiled at Mr. Chen as he comfortably sat on the chair.

"Haha, Mr. Jiang is certainly a businessman. Decisive and clear in your actions." Chen Wei leaned against his chair and laughed. "Then I will be straightforward as well. I heard that Mr. Jiang's Future Technology had some small conflicts with Wanghai's local government?"

When he asked this question, Jiang Chen clearly sensed that Chen Wei was testing him.

"Future Technology is only a normal tech company, how would we have conflicts with the local government," Jiang Chen replied without much emotion.

If word spreads on the streets, it certainly would negatively impact its reputations.

"Haha, I sometimes don’t think before I speak," Chen Wei realized that he was too direct and apologized while laughing.

"No problem."

"I heard rumors that Future Technology plans to relocate its headquarter. Did Mr. Jiang ever considered Xiangjiang as a destination?" Chen Wei asked.

Relocate to Xiangjiang?

Jiang Chen was somewhat skeptical. He looked at Chen Wei.

Although he certainly considered establishing Future Technology’s Greater Han headquarter in Xiangjiang before, he didn’t understand why Chen Wei would bring this up.

As if he had understood the confusion apparent on Jiang Chen’s face, Chen Wei smiled and waved his hand at his bodyguard/assistant. He took a piece of a document from his hands.

"Because of my relationship with the director of economic development bureau, Su Changyin, the reason for my disturbance this time is at the request of my old friend."

As Chen Wei spoke, he handed the document to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen briefly scanned the document as an interested expression surfaced on his face.

One year tax-free, three years tax of only half taxable. The generous offer was countless times better than the policy given by Wanghai’s local government. With the current profitability of Future Technology, the policy of one-year tax-free would save Jiang Chen four billion RMB in tax.

Also, with the consideration of the headquarter relocation, some of the employees would also need to be relocated. Xiangjiang government also provided a generous employee immigration policy to Future Technology. They provided one hundred allocations of mainland residency to convert to Xiangjiang residency to ease Future Technology’s employee's relocation.

Seeing the interest on Jiang Chen’s face, Chen Wei also had a smile on his face.

"Is the policy given by my old friend enough to please Mr. Jiang?"

"Extremely pleased. I just don’t know if the Xiangjiang government would maintain fair and just in policymaking?" Jiang Chen asked nonchalantly as he flipped through the document in his hands.

Chen Wei first paused for a moment as he heard the words before he started to laugh.

"Mr. Jiang, you are worrying too much. I can’t promise anything else. But on the point of being fair and just, that I can guarantee. Xiangjiang is not as complicated as Wanghai. Everything must follow the law here."

Fair and just? The law?

Although Jiang Chen's expression did not change, he had a differing opinion.

The world knew about Xiangjiang’s renowned gang presence. Chen Wei himself was probably not a law-abiding citizen. How many decent businessmen could open an entertainment company in Xiangjiang.

But even so, Jiang Chen was extremely pleased with Xiangjiang government’s attitude.

"Is that so? That’s perfect then." Jiang Chen grinned as he put

the document on the table, "Regarding this investment plan, I am pleased. If all the terms in the plan can be followed through, I can say with confidence that Future Technology's Greater Han headquarters will be located in Xiangjiang."

A trace of joy flashed across Chen Wei's face as he congratulated, "Haha, then on behalf of my old friend, I here welcome Mr. Jiang's presence in Xiangjiang."

To Chen Wei's words, Jiang Chen accepted with humility.

"Speaking of this, to relocate to Xiangjiang, does Mr. Jiang have any plans regarding the location of the new headquarter of Future Technology?"

When he recalled Chen Wei's identity, Jiang Chen finally understood the intention behind his visit.

"Currently no, does Mr. Chen have any good recommendations?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"Haha, then I will be straightforward." Chen Wei didn't hide his intention as he had seen from Jiang Chen's expression that he already guessed the reason for his visit. He took another document from his bodyguard's hands.

"Nanfeng Real Estate has a recently developed office building. It is located in Kowloon near the metro station and a comprehensive set of amenities are included. Is Mr. Jiang interested?" Chen Wei

smiled.

He took over the document from Chen Wei's hand as he flipped through the specifications.

All in all, he was pleased. Compared to the building in Wanghai, Nanfeng Real Estate's building was better in both appearance and amenities.

"What's the price?"

"Two billion HKD, or equivalent to 1.65 billion RMB," Chen Wei said.

Jiang Chen gave it a thought before nodding.

"This is a reasonable price and I am pleased with the building. As to the acquisition process, I will leave it to the professionals in the company to take care of."

Seeing Jiang Chen nod, Chen Wei felt relieved as he had a trace of gratitude in his expression.

"Thank you very much."

Chapter 266: Future International

The Xiangjiang real estate market was not too hot right now. Although the price remained elevated, the number of sales was gradually decreasing and has recently hit a new low of 17 per month. What made it even worse was that Li Jiacheng, who had single-handedly pushed the Xiangjiang real estate market to its peak, had begun to sell his real estate assets for cash.

The perpetrator of this has already smelled a dangerous signal. How would the other real estate developers not sense it?

Once the interest rate returns to normal, the Xiangjiang real estate market would face immense pressure, the possibility of the "freefall" in 1997 was not out of the realm of possibility.

The bubble created by the insane construction of buildings put the cash flow of all real estate developers in an extremely tight situation, Nanfeng real estate was no exception.

The office building located in Kowloon had a cost of 1.2 billion HKD, typically speaking, a fair price would be three billion. But for Chen Wei who needed the money to alleviate the pressure on cash flow, he could not wait any longer.

Granted, he was not a decent businessman, but with the legal system and its implementation becoming perfected by the day, most of his businesses have been transformed into legal ones.

Jiang Chen buying this building definitely gave him some

breathing room.

With the deal being successful, Chen Wei was naturally ecstatic as he warmly invited Jiang Chen for lunch.

Jiang Chen didn’t reject the proposal as they went along to the Felix restaurant on the 28th floor.

On the dinner table, the two chatted and joked about their encounters around the world.

"How is Robert doing?" As they chatted, the conversation turned to Robert.

"The same old. He has transitioned his business already. The way he described it was playing with Hollywood girls. Did he not tell you?" Jiang Chen laughed.

"I left the industry earlier than him and became legal five years ago. I didn’t imagine that the lunatic that dared to sell anything also left the game," Chen Wei exclaimed.

"Lunatic? Haha, a fitting name for that guy. Five months ago, he was caught by the IS in Iraq and almost had his head chopped off.

"Iraq. He certainly has the guts. Speaking of this, how did you two meet?" Chen Wei asked curiously.

Regardless of which perspective, Jiang Chen was a law-abiding businessman, he shouldn’t have the opportunity to meet the smuggling middlemen.

"We met in Iraq, I saved his life." Because there was nothing to hide, Jiang Chen shrugged.

Chen Wei was confused at first before he started laughing and raised his wine glass.

"How disrespectable of me. I thought Mr. Jiang was a law-abiding businessman, but Mr. Jiang has a secretive side too. Cheers."

To be able to save someone from the hands of the IS, he must have had some connections with the hidden international mercenary groups. The security companies on the surface would usually not take any tasks that would endanger their own lives.

When he thought about this, Chen Wei couldn’t help but exclaim in his mind, he underestimated this guy.

But he still underestimated Jiang Chen. He couldn’t fathom that it was not the mercenaries that saved Robert, but Jiang Chen alone.

"You are over complimenting me," Jiang Chen said humbly.

"Did he stop because of the IS?"

"Not exactly. Mostly because the FBA had an eye on him. He was rather unlucky because it was the FBA’s ploy that led to him being captured by the IS."

"FBA... True, if the government decided to intervene, then he must exit the industry," Chen Wei exclaimed.

"Is Mr. Chen’s transition also the result of the government?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"That’s right. But it was not the FBA. It was because of the mainland's General Staff Department." Chen Wei grinned.

General Staff Department? Jiang Chen’s expression was rather odd.

"Could the General Staff Department extend its influence here?’ Jiang Chen asked.

"No, as long as you are not too overzealous. However, I was in Guangzhou at that time." Chen Wei paused and looked at Jiang Chen. "Speaking of this, you had some conflicts with the Wang family in Wanghai?"

"It is not wrong to say that." Jiang Chen shrugged.

When Chen Wei heard this, he nodded.

"It is fine to get into conflict with the Wang family as most of their influence remains in Wanghai. But definitely don’t offend anyone above them, unless you plan to completely abandon your assets in Han." In the last sentence, Chen Wei’s tone began to sound melancholic.

Perhaps it was something he personally experienced, or experienced by his friends who didn't have the cleanest history.

To his words of advice, Jiang Chen only nodded and didn’t say anything else.

...

The two days of relaxing were over. Even Jiang Chen, who hasn't been involved with the company for awhile, began dealing with tasks related to the company.

Although with the help of Xia Shiyu, his workload was lighter. But there were quite a few things that he still must personally do.

First, Future International incorporated in New Zealand with Jiang Chen as the sole shareholder.

The advantage of an offshore company in New Zealand was that as long as the profit is not generated locally, the only fee that must be paid per year was the annual fee. It was legal to submit zero tax without the need for an audit, and the subsequent steps were much

more manageable. The only downside being the registration fee was a bit higher compared to registering in Xiangjiang, but the annual fee was similar for both areas.

As the parent company, Future International quickly gained control of 99% of the shares of Future Technology. From now on, Future Technology became a subsidiary of Future International with CEO Xia Shiyu leading the company.

At the same time, with Xia Shiyu's recommendation, Future Technology divided its market geographically to Greater Han, Southeast Asia, Russia, European Union, Arabic, North America and South America. A subsidiary was formed in each of the geographical areas to operate in each business market.

Of course, this business transition created a massive workload that caused a shortage of talent at Future Technology.

Jiang Chen's solution was simple, it was to buy with money.

High salary, great benefits, and hiring headhunters to search for talent all over the world and create a company of talent with money. With Future Technology's low cost and high profits, the investment was negligible to the company.

To the technical talents, working at Future Technology was an attractive option to begin with. The talent acquisition was completed without much hindrance.

After this was completed, Future Technology’s Greater Han headquarters was relocated to Xiangjiang under the direction of Xia Shiyu.

From this point on, Future Technology’s tax revenue of no less than two billion per year would say goodbye to Wanghai’s local government.

Although Wang Dehai had personally called Jiang Chen to reservedly but sincerely express his apology in the hopes of him staying, Jiang Chen’s attitude didn’t change at all.

The proverb goes, you only realize what’s valuable when it's gone.

The moment that the Wang family no longer viewed Future Technology as a partner but rather a piece of juicy meat, he should have considered that this day would come.

Chapter 267: The Angry Wang Dehai

In Wanghai hundreds of kilometers away, Wang Dehai sat behind the office table with a grave expression on his face.

There were two English newspapers on the table. One was a <New York Post>, the other was the <Time Digest>.

The two newspapers were both flipped to the business section. Although the two newspapers were completely different, the headlines printed almost identical information.

Future International Incorporated, the secret that led to its departure from Wanghai.

Although Jiang Chen had purposely avoided the reporters who swarmed him like flies with their cameras raised high during his time in Xiangjiang, nothing is kept hidden forever as major presses dug out leads from different channels to find the secret behind Future Technology's relocation.

Linhua Group attempted to use the local government's relationship, with the stake of suppressing its business in Han, to forcefully acquire a controlling stake in Future Technology. Future Technology earned the central government's support because of an undisclosed reason, but Jiang Chen who was already divided from the Wang family chose to leave because of the lack of trust in the Wanghai local government.

The domestic presses were okay as their mouths were naturally

shut due to the company's influence. Although the policy of official relatives not permitted to be in business was only limited to spouse and children, it would still reveal a negative image if the news were to be published.

While the domestic media could be controlled, Wang Dehai couldn’t do anything to the international press.

Fortunately, it was hard to listen to the buzz outside anyways.

Since it has almost become "politically correct" for western media to criticize the country's policy on certain issues, to the fact that Future Technology’s investment value had always drawn the craving of the Wall Street capitals, all the major international press conducted an extensive investigation on this event.

Particularly <New York Post>, the satire between the lines was especially evident. The lines of English almost gave the enraged Wang Dehai a heart attack.

Wang Linhua stood in front of his office, the old fox’s expression looked awkward.

A month ago, Wang Linhua had promised his brother Wang Dehai that as long as he pressured Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen without any background would immediately recognize the situation and obediently give up Future Technology’s share, allowing the Wang family's assets to successfully leave the real estate market.

But by the looks of it now, the promise fell through.

"How many times did I tell you, don't corner him to the wall. Now that he has left, what did you get out of it?" Wang Dehai's finger pressed forcefully on the newspapers as his lips trembled in anger.

Seeing that his brother was so furious, Wang Linhua's expression remained awkward.

"Ahem, Dehai, it was not me that pressured him too hard, that guy did not recognize the situation at all. He didn't understand that a shared interest would create a better business. To be honest, a market cap of ten billion, five billion for 50% of the shares was a generous offer. How many tech companies would kill to acquire venture capitals and equity infusions-"

"Bullsh*t!"

Perhaps because Wang Dehai had received pressured from the central government on this incident, Wang Dehai had lost his cool and he cursed at his younger brother.

"Market cap of ten billion? Future Technology's profit is above ten billion, with a P/E ratio of 20 times, calculate the market cap for me? Do you know what the old guy from the Liu family told me? I will gift these words to you, those embarrassing actions will be the end of us!"

It indeed didn’t sound eloquent at all. Wang Dehai’s emotion was also enraged when he said it as it made his chest pump violently.

"I am being considerate of the Wang family's assets. Especially since the tech company’s market cap can’t be calculated this way. Future Technology is highly profitable now, but they only managed to do so because they formed a monopoly. With the rapid pace of technological transformations, once a similar artificial intelligence system exists, or phone enhancement programs are introduced, it would be impossible to maintain their current profitability levels," Wang Linhua argued for his own perspective.

Wang Linhua’s perspective was certainly not without reason. People were willing to spend 10 RMB a month to upgrade to VIP1, which was for the phone enhancement function as well as a battery saver. Once a free replacement is introduced, even if the functionality was weaker compared to Future 1.0, it was not hard to believe some users would choose the free app.

With the rapidly changing landscape of technology, in his view, it was entirely possible.

But what he didn’t know as an outsider to the industry was that all the major tech companies had lost countless brain cells trying to crack the encryption technology of Future 1.0 and could not break a single function of Future 1.0.

Because of this, the investors were very interested in Future Technology.

To Wang Linhua's explanation, Wang Dehai was clearly not pleased. But since he already yelled at him, he let out some of his anger. And based on the consideration that Wang Linhua was not wholly to be blamed as he was the person who agreed to this, Wang Dehai took a deep breath and put that aside for now.

Seeing that Wang Dehai's expression became more relaxed, Wang Linhua also felt relieved.

Wang Dehai picked up the teacup from the table as he soothed his throat. "Let's not talk about this, for now. You mentioned the transitioning of Linhua Group, how is that going?"

Since the conflict had already occurred, it was pointless to be angry about it. Compared to Future Technology, Wang Dehai was more worried about the Wang family's assets. As the general secretary of Wanghai, he certainly knew the dire circumstance Linhua Group was in.

It was fair to say, the reason that Linhua Group could acquire bank loans was partially attributable to Wang Dehai's reputation.

When he heard Wang Dehai ask about Linhua Group, a proud expression appeared.

"Haha, I was about to bring some good news. We recently received a ten billion USD construction contract."

"Ten billion?!" Even to Wang Dehai who had seen the ups and

downs of life, he still exclaimed out of shock.

"That’s right, and it is a contract from overseas!" With an ecstatic expression, Wang Linhua continued, "The contract has been signed with an expected direct profit of over five billion! The 110 square kilometers of land on the main island as well as the 70 square kilometers on a nearby island used as payment for part of the contract, could double in value in five years based on the potential of Pannu Islands! Without exaggeration, once we finish the deal, Linhua Group’s value could break one hundred billion RMB!"

Wang Dehai finally nodded his head, pleased.

Misfortune may be an actual blessing.

Although the ten billion market cap of Future Technology had left Wanghai, it created a Linhua Group with a one hundred billion market cup.

The expansion into the international market had solved the dire situation the Wang family's assets had faced.

Wang Dehai’s mood became a lot lighter.

The only issue was if he could still laugh so brightly in a few months time.

Chapter 268: New Zealand Trip

Beach, waves, bright sunshine, palm trees.

And of course, the most important one, bikinis.

Lying on the recliner with a pair of shades over his eyes, Jiang Chen gazed at the lively figures along the sea coast from afar with a smile on his face.

When the saline wind breezed by, he felt all his weariness get blown away.

Just as he relaxingly gazed into the horizon, his face felt a cold sensation.

He turned his head as he saw a pair of crystal-like eyes staring at him cheerfully. Liu Yao stood beside him as she leaned forward and naughtily shook the cold orange juice in her hands.

"Are you checking out hot girls again?" Liu Yao passed the chilled orange juice to Jiang Chen as she coyly pouted her lips.

"I am checking one out right now." Jiang Chen laughed as he looked at Liu Yao.

In a light yellow bikini, her pale skin was decorated with droplets of water as it shined in the sunlight.

Blushing, the corners of her lips curled up as she said joyfully.

"That’s better."

Even if she knew they were flattering words, which woman actually disliked compliments?

She put her own orange juice on the table and combed the hair in front of her forehead that was previously disturbed by the sea wind. Then in graceful steps, she lied on the recliner beside Jiang Chen. Consciously and subconsciously, she showed off her body, at which Jiang Chen couldn't help but laugh.

However, speaking of this, Jiang Chen liked her for this very point.

Jealous but never drilled on one thing. It wouldn’t make people feel annoyed, but rather fulfill the vanity of men. There are a lot of intelligent women in the modern world, but Jiang Chen had never met anyone else like her, someone intelligent but knew her own boundaries.

Jiang Chen picked up the orange juice and took a sip with the straw.

The cold sensation in his throat instantly made the scorching heat fade away.

As to why it was summer?

The reason was simple. It was because they were in New Zealand in the southern hemisphere. New Zealand’s winter was between July and August, and right now it was the middle of January, the hottest time in New Zealand.

The reason why he was here? Because one, he needed to register the offshore company, and two, the tasks at Pannu Islands.

Because Xia Shiyu had already arrived in Xiangjiang, the General Staff Department was obviously no longer responsible for her safety. Therefore, Jiang Chen had sent Ayesha to act as her bodyguard. Although no one should be plotting against him now, it was better to be safe.

Because Ayesha couldn’t be with him, it was too lonely to travel abroad by himself. Therefore, Jiang Chen suddenly remembered that he still owed Liu Yao a vacation to Pannu Islands.

As to why he brought Liu Yao, it was to fulfill the promise of taking her on a vacation.

...

"How's the movie going?" Simultaneously enjoying the cold and delicious juice and her graceful figure, he asked nonchalantly.

"It’s going well, the filming will be done by March this year.

Then it will be in production before it is sent in for review. If without exception, you can see me in theatres by August this year." Liu Yao turned her head as she laughed playfully.

Like the movie <That Year> she stared in before, in this <Ma Dongmei’s Trouble>, she again played the role of the prom queen and the supporting actress. However, because Jiang Chen was the principal investor of the newest movie, the director forced the screenwriter to change the script to give her more screen time as the supporting actress but at the condition that it will not interfere with the movie's plot.

She didn’t say anything about this, but she was grateful for what Jiang Chen had done for her. He could clearly feel it from the intimate and passionate re-encounter last night at the hotel.

With a celebrity as a mistress, it was a dream come true.

"Is that so? Didn’t you play spoiler with me last night?" With Liu Yao impish look, Jiang Chen smirked.

Last time during their intimate moment, Liu Yao perfected her role of "prom queen." While with just words she "denounced" Jiang Chen’s "invasion", and whispered her lines from the movie into Jiang Chen’s ear.

All in all, the conquering feeling of a pure and innocent prom queen under him boosted his ego.

Liu Yao blushed at Jiang Chen’s tease while she rolled her eyes at him.

"It is a movie you invested in after all, are you not concerned about the box office?"

Jiang Chen began to laugh as he put the orange juice aside and lied down sluggishly.

"It is only one hundred million, I pay more than that a month in tax."

An investment of one hundred million. Even with one billion at the box office, after paying for the 5% specialty movie fund, 3.3% in tax, and 5% cut to other channels, and splitting the rest between the investors and the movie theatres, Jiang Chen would only be left with three hundred to four hundred million.

On top of that, it was rare for a domestic film to reach one billion at the box office.

Compared to the profitability of Future Technology, that profit was nothing at all. Jiang Chen considered this investment as one purely for his enjoyment.

Even if she knew Jiang Chen’s net worth, Liu Yao still couldn’t help but be shocked as she stuck out her tongue.

"What do you think the box office is going to be?" Jiang Chen

laughed.

"I think... at least two hundred million or above? Since Chen Yanxi is the lead actress in the film, she has quite a number of followers." Liu Yao put her finger on her chin as she gave a conservative response.

To one hundred million of investment, two hundred million of box office return was an acceptable result. Although Liu Yao had put her heart into shooting the film, and she certainly went through a lot of hardships to achieve her dream, the market doesn't believe in sweat and tears.

"Are you not confident?"

"What, two hundred million is a great result." Liu Yao pouted.

"I am not talking about the box office," Jiang Chen shook his head, smiled, and continued, "I am saying that are you not confident that you will overshadow the lead actress?"

With Jiang Chen's words, Liu Yao's face turned red. She picked up the orange juice on the table and took a sip with her red lips as she mumbled while biting her straw.

"It is hard. With movies, fans have a lot to do with it."

Although for someone like Jiang Chen who didn't have an idea who played in the movies until the end credits, he had to admit

with comedy films, the fans certainly have a significant impact on the box office.

"That’s only part of the reason. Promotions also can achieve the same result." Jiang Chen shook his finger.

With Future Technology’s user base, a simple promotion would instantly make her famous. As long as channels exist, fame was not a big problem at all.

Liu Yao’s eyes instantly lit up.

She turned around on her belly, with her hand pressed against her chin, and coyly looked at Jiang Chen with watery eyes.

Her deep cleavage and beautiful curves, even if a battle had occurred last night, made Jiang Chen’s stomach feel heated.

"Of course, it is a film I invested in after all," Jiang Chen looked away as he spoke.

He was in swimming trunk, it would be awkward if he went hard.

Jiang Chen’s reaction didn’t manage to escape Liu Yao’s sight. The little devil's lips proudly curled up as she maintained her position in the recliner and seductively untied her bikini from the back. Then with a sweet voice, "Honey~ I want to bathe under the sun, help me put on sunscreen."

This little devil!

As he cursed in his mind, Jiang Chen walked over with his body reacting honestly.

Chapter 269: Meeting the Oppositions

Xiangjiang. Shangyuan apartment building No. 5, on the 12th floor. This was Xia Shiyu’s new home.

Because Future Technology's headquarters was relocated to Xiangjiang, after she had taken care of the relocation, she naturally followed as the CEO. For someone that always rented, it was convenient for her to move.

It was eight at night.

Just like her usual routine, Xia Shiyu sat on the sofa watching TV, but her expression looked uncomfortable. Usually, she didn’t like to wear a whole lot when she was home alone.

But now, she was swearing as she had to wear her dress shirt and bothersome jeans.

As to the reason, it was because she was not home alone.

For Xia Shiyu’s safety, Jiang Chen had sent Ayesha to be her bodyguard.

Xia Shiyu had mixed emotions about Ayesha.

That night, when Ayesha suddenly kissed Jiang Chen, Xia Shiyu felt her mind turn blank.

Angry? Hard to say so because he was not her boyfriend. There was no reason for her to be angry. Frightened? Perhaps some. Jealous? Perhaps all the above.

She knew he was outstanding, outstanding men never lacked pursuers. As someone who was slow with relationships, she had consistently tried to avoid the problem and continuously ignored the emotion she felt in her heart and left it for another day to deal with.

But to the "enemy" Ayesha, she couldn’t hate her.

Since she did save her and also suffered an injury as the result of it.

Because of all the factors above, to the person that was living with her, she felt very conflicted.

But on the contrary, Ayesha was somewhat more relaxed.

Because the air conditioner was on, she wore a thin white shirt and her nicely shaped legs jogged on the treadmill.

[My presence… She doesn’t mind it at all?]

The picture on the TV began to blur as Xia Shiyu’s mind began to drift elsewhere.

[To her, I should be considered competition. If she didn’t come to save me or had purposely been late for a few minutes...]

While she maintained her expressionless face, Xia Shiyu unnaturally shivered.

"Do you feel cold?" Ayesha looked over.

"No, no," The sudden conversation had made Xia Shiyu jump as she hastily replied.

Ayesha nodded before she looked away.

There was no more exchange of words between the two.

Perhaps this is what it felt like when two people without a lot to say lived together. Ayesha would only speak more when she was alone with Jiang Chen, and Xia Shiyu would only communicate when it was necessary due to work.

[I wonder how Jiang Chen is doing on that side...] As her eyes blankly stared at the TV, Xia Shiyu muttered in her mind.

...

With a beautiful girl accompanying him, Jiang Chen had a relaxing two days.

Although Liu Yao was not the best choice as a wife, she was impeccable as a mistress.

Of course, although they were having fun, he didn’t forget the task he needed to complete. While he toured New Zealand with Liu Yao, he was also waiting for someone.

Without incidence, that person should have already arrived in New Zealand and would contact him very soon.

After they returned to hotel from the beach, Jiang Chen, who was teased for the entire day by Liu Yao couldn’t wait to lock the door behind him. Liu Yao immediately leaned her body against his and kissed him...

The action lasted from nine at night till midnight before Jiang Chen finally spared the "pleading Liu Yao" who fell asleep with her body in his arms.

The next morning, Jiang Chen woke up from a dream,

...

In the Old John coffee shop at the corner of a street in Auckland.

The old wooden interior filled the place with a historic vibe. However, the decor evidently did not bring about good business.

Compared to the Starbucks on the next street, this place was desolated.

But because of the quietness, Jiang Chen chose here as the meeting place.

The waitress at the front desk looked like an international student from the nearby university. Her looks were average, but her voice was sweet. When she saw her fellow countrymen Jiang Chen, she didn’t seem too surprised. There was a lot of Han citizens in Auckland, especially immigrants or tourists.

Jiang Chen ordered two mochas from her before he went to the deep corner of the coffee shop and began to play with his phone to kill time.

Not long after, a man wearing a simple T-shirt sat in front of him.

"Sorry for making you wait so long," the man who sat across him said with an apologetic tone.

"It’s okay, it is not easy for you." Jiang Chen put away his phone as he looked up at the man in front of him. He examined him from head to toe, "Han?"

"Mhmm. Zhang Yapin. I am meeting you as a representative of the Pannu Freedom Party." Zhang Yapin nodded and extended his right hand.

Pannu Islands' native only accounted for a small percentage of its population. The rest was made up by the initial European immigrants and the subsequent Asian immigrants. There was certainly some Han among the mix. With the consideration for Jiang Chen's identity, after an internal discussion, they sent Zhang Yapin. A person with Han heritage to discuss business with Jiang Chen.

"Jiang Chen. Although you already know my name." Jiang Chen shook his hand and smiled.

The Liberal party was the most significant opposing party of the Pannu Islands. Although they were considered the most significant opposing party, their actual situation was not too great, the primary reason was due to their lack of funding.

Pannu Islands was an impoverished nation. There was no oil in the surrounding central area. The economy was isolated with an outdated infrastructure, and the high cost of development meant that the small country, without a vote in the United Nations, was forgotten in the international society.

No one had any interest in it. Even if the Liberal party's political ideology was more pro-western than the Syrian opposition party, the UA clearly does not pay enough attention to the "poor little guy."

Only when the country meets UA's national interest would they intervene in other people's politics. This point alone was

demonstrated through the double standard with its policy in Syria and Veit.

Zhang Yapin nodded as he looked earnestly at Jiang Chen.

"Mr. Jiang is supportive of our cause right?"

"That’s right. In my perspective, any form of dictatorship is disdained. Whether it is a presidential dictatorship or corporate dictatorship, or a combination of the two," Jiang Chen simply improvised.

He was a person with the least credentials to say such things. He was the biggest dictator at the Sixth Street.

Zhang Yapin was ecstatic when he heard Jiang Chen’s attitude.

With the help of a businessman, it was much easier for the cause they support to come to fruition.

"Is Mr. Jiang willing to support our cause then?"

"Support?" Jiang Chen dubiously took a sip of the coffee.

"Of course, this is not without benefits. After our cause is successful, we’ll provide you with enough benefits," Zhang Yapin rushed to add.

Chapter 270: Military Resistance

There was no reason to wake up early unless there were benefits involved.

Zhang Yapin knew that without enough benefits, even if Jiang Chen recognized their cause, it would be more of a verbal support rather than financial aid.

Compared with the idealists within the organization, Zhang Yapin was a firm believer in the concept of there is no free lunch in the world.

Only with enough potential gain could they tie the businessman onto their ship.

Only if he knew that Johnny International was funded by Jiang Chen and a puppet created by Robert.

"Benefits? For example?" Jiang Chen pretended to be interested. He put the coffee down and waited for Zhang Yapin to continue.

"I heard that Mr. Jiang has 7000 square meters of warehouses on Pannu Islands, as well as an export company right?" Zhang Yapin took a deep breath as his fingers crossed. He spoke quite calmly and collectedly.

"That’s right, it is not a secret." Jiang Chen smiled.

After he had acquired Xinlong Food Processing Plant, he urged Zheng Hongjie to acquire the rights for export and import. Then Jiang Chen created a shell company with only five employees at Pannu Islands and purchased warehouses totaling 7000 square meters to store goods.

By moving goods from his left hand to his right hand, the company massively purchased canned food from Xinlong. At the same time ordering dairy and grain products from the farms in New Zealand and Australia. Parts of these goods were sold locally while other items were stored waiting for Jiang Chen to transport them back to the apocalypse.

In Pannu Islands, Jiang Chen owned around one million USD in assets.

"Since Mr. Jiang has invested in Pannu Islands, then it must mean you have confidence in Pannu Islands' future, am I right?" Zhang Yapin gradually advanced his narrative.

"That's right. Perhaps you can get to your point," Jiang Chen leaned on his chair and said.

Zhang Yapin scanned the coffee shop. When he saw that other than the two of them, there was only the waitress at the front desk playing with her phone, he proceeded with a mysterious tone.

"We need around one million USD in support. This amount of money will be returned in the form of land to you after we successfully fulfill our political cause."

"How big is the land?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"One square kilometer of land located on the Coro main island," Zhang Yapin said in pain.

One square kilometer of land with a cost of one million? It was the equivalent of one dollar per square meter. It was beyond cheap. Almost to the point of being a form of reparation payment.

But to this suggestion, Jiang Chen was still not pleased.

"Unfortunately, although I feel sympathetic to the Pannu people’s situation, I am not interested in your proposal." Jiang Chen shook his head.

"What! One dollar per square kilometer, this price is not-" Zhang Yapin stood up with his eyes widened.

Jiang Chen raised his hand and quietly pointed to the front desk.

The waitress at the front desk already stopped playing with her phone as she looked in their direction curiously.

Realizing he was too emotional, Zhang Yapin immediately closed his mouth, took a deep breath and sat back down in his chair.

Although they were in New Zealand, and not Pannu, it was better

to keep sensitive political movements quiet.

Seeing that Zhang Yapin had calmed down, Jiang Chen nodded, rather pleased.

While the Liberal party was probably an organization formed by a few university students fighting passionately for the citizens, it was considered an amateur group both in size and professionalism. However, it indeed possessed investment value.

Being young was okay. The founding father of China, Sun Zhongshan, was also young and he still managed to accomplish greater deeds before it benefited Yuan Shikai.

"What is Mr. Jiang not pleased about? We can discuss," Zhang Yapin said sincerely.

The waitress not far away saw that there was no more drama to watch, so she looked back down at the table and began to play with her phone again out of boredom.

"First, my total investment value in Pannu Islands is only one million USD, and I am only prepared to invest this amount." Jiang Chen leaned in his chair as he smiled. "If Johnny International completes the development of Pannu Islands, the value of land would exponentially raise. Therefore, I don’t mind the profitability of my assets. I don’t know if you have noticed or not, but all my assets in Pannu Islands are operating at a loss."

The average income of Pannu Islands was low. Therefore, buying power was limited. While they have a wealth of tourism, it would be an endless pit to develop all those resources.

"That UA citizen is a scumbag. He is the bloodsucker riding on top of the Pannu people," Zhang Yapin cursed in a low voice.

"That’s right, but regardless if he is a scumbag or not, he is indeed rich, and spending for Pannu Islands." Jiang Chen smiled at Zhang Yapin and then paused before he continued, " Have you considered one problem?"

"What problem?"

"If Johnny International didn’t spend money investing in basic infrastructure and developing tourist resources, do you think the 7000 square meters of land has any upsides?" Jiang Chen said expressionlessly.

Zhang Yapin was shocked as his face began to sour.

If Jiang Chen was waiting for his land to appreciate, there was no reason for him to fund them to get rid of that American.

From the start, Jiang Chen only said that he was compassionate of their cause, but he never suggested he would fund them for their cause.

There was a difference between ideology and reality. Jiang Chen

was only an outsider, he had no reason to pay the bills for Pannu's suffering.

"Then... we don't have anything we can talk about." Zhang Yapin struggled to say. The smile on his face was bitter.

The trip to New Zealand was futile.

But just as he felt disappointed with the uncertain future, Jiang Chen lit up another lamp named hope in front of his eyes.

"It is the complete opposite." Jiang Chen shook his head and smiled. "I think we have a lot more we can talk about."

Zhang Yapin's eyes widened as he looked at Jiang Chen in disbelief.

"But didn't you say-"

Jiang Chen took a sip of the already cooled coffee and said.

"I am only saying your plan is not enough to attract me, but I never rejected the possibility of a partnership between us. For example, you can tell me, if you had one million in support, what would you do with it?"

When he heard Jiang Chen ask about the specific plan of the Freedom party, Zhang Yapin realized that there may still be a

turning point for this as he immediately raised his chest and spoke with confidence.

"We will use this one million to develop members in the Pannu army. At the same time, we will organize citizens unjustly treated as well as farmers with their lands taken away from them to launch a strike and protest to force the current regime to compromise, punish the corrupted officials, and drive away the reckless Johnny International..." To the last bit, Zhang Yapin awkwardly stopped.

If they drove away Johnny International, it didn't seem to fit Jiang Chen's interest.

"If you get rid of Johnny International, then what?" Jiang Chen laughed. "Continue to live the poor life? Wait to find a new investor?"

Zhang Yapin shifted his gaze before he promised, "We can transfer Johnny International's interest to you."

When he heard the naïve response, Jiang Chen laughed and shook his head.

"Who do you think you are? The current regime? One million USD? Johnny International probably bribed the president more than just that amount! And you are thinking of buying the army? Stop dreaming. Your promise is only an empty promise, it can never be fulfilled.

Jiang Chen was cut throat.

Zhang Yapin held his breath.

He lowered his head as he slowly said.

"Then in your opinion, what kind of partnership would you be satisfied with?"

A smile appeared on Jiang Chen’s face. He was waiting for this sentence.

"Strike? Protest? Those things won’t solve any problems, only the elected government would be fearful of public opinion. I can say with confidence that if the Freedom party still holds the unrealistic thought of solving problems politically, then only cruel suppression awaits you!"

"Our president is elected," Zhang Yapin tried to rebuke.

"But he has been corrupted!" Jiang Chen stared into his eyes as he used a manipulative tone.

"He is not the president you elected from before."

"If he, the scum called Edward, is in an election now, would you vote for him?"

"Or, do you think he is willing to give up the interest in his hand now and participate in an election?"

"Presidential republic? Face reality, it is a dictatorship right now!"

"Vote, protest, those won't save you. The only thing that will save you are bullets!"

Jiang Chen's words were like hammers as it swung directly into Zhang Yapin's heart and shattered any remaining hope for the current regime. Before he joined the Liberal party, he was a top student who graduated from New Zealand's Auckland University, the few that were educated on the Pannu Islands.

When he saw that the current regime had compromised with the foreign capital and worked together to suppress his fellow countrymen, he was furious.

With passion, a few young people with different education backgrounds but the same ideology formed together to create the Pannu Liberal party. The goal was to protect the rights and interests of the citizen and eliminate the current situation where the government and the foreign capital worked together.

It was difficult to fight for their cause, but a lot of Pannu people stood by their side. Because of this, he saw the hope of resolving the problem peacefully.

But as Jiang Chen said, this route was unsuccessful to begin with.

"Military uprising?" Zhang Yapin mustered to himself as another kind of flame lit up in his eyes.

"That’s right, the only solution to change the current circumstance is military resistance. From the opposing party to the anti-government force," Jiang Chen continued to spread this dangerous thought to the young man.

"But, this is unconstitutional-"

"Your president is unconstitutional, don’t tell me accepting bribes is within the constitution of Pannu."

"But, people will die in a civil war," Zhang Yapin gulped as he said with difficulty.

"There is no revolution without bleeding; there is no peace without sacrifice," Jiang Chen stared straight into his eyes as he said decisively.

"But-"

"There is not but," Jiang Chen interrupted him.

"You only have one choice. Blood in exchange for freedom, or bleed dry in compromise."

Chapter 271: The Millionaire in the Slum

It was impossible to say he didn't feel guilty.

The reckless UA citizen named Johnny in Pannu Islands was a puppet placed by Jiang Chen at the cost of two hundred million USD.

But Jiang Chen didn't regret anything.

The secrets in his hands meant that he could not cooperate with any country or organization. If he wants to expand and grow freely, controlling a small state as his base was the only option.

As to the people that may lose their lives because of this, Jiang Chen could regrettably say that he will treat their decedents nicely. He is confident under his reign, Pannu Islands would be much wealthier than now.

To acquire Pannu islands as a base, Jiang Chen had bet everything.

Since Pannu is a country part of the United Nations, it was not as simple as sending one hundred well-equipped infantries to wipe out the military force on the island. If Jiang Chen used this simple yet brute force to take over Pannu Islands, it won't be long before the United Nation Peacekeeping force lands on Pannu Islands and then search the entire world for him for his crime against humanity.

The 21st century was not like the Victorian era. Sovereignty was not a joke. The regime established through illegally occupying a country could not be considered a country. They were pirates or terrorists. Only when the shift of power was completed under the boundary of international law could the regime be considered legal.

When outsiders with guns enter one’s yard, it’s invasion, but when people inside raise their weapons in protest, it is only considered a civil war! Based on the consideration that the Liberal's ideology is similar to the UA's, the UA wouldn’t intervene in their civil war.

Since the Liberal party raised the flag of democracy to end the evil reign of the corrupted presidential dictatorship, it was almost a replica of what happened in Syria. If the UA doesn’t recognize the legality of the Pannu Liberal party, they would be contradicting themselves.

...

Zhang Yapin didn’t give a direct response, but he said he would immediately return to Pannu Islands and exchange opinions with other Freedom party members before he provides Jiang Chen with a clear answer.

For this, Jiang Chen expressed his understanding. But he only gave them a week's time to consider. An indecisive government was not worthy of an investment.

Before he left, Zhang Yapin asked Jiang Chen a question.

"If we end up in charge, we will still prosecute Johnny for the crimes he committed in Pannu and get rid of the evil bloodsucker, Johnny International. With such a result, do you still have anything to gain from it?"

To be able to ask this question, Zhang Yapin was certainly thinking.

But for Jiang Chen who came prepared from the beginning, he was still too naïve.

"Pannu's current regime is too corrupt and therefore the cost of investment is too low. But if a rather calm government is in place, I think Pannu Islands has a higher investment value." Although he had prepared this reason beforehand, Jiang Chen didn't lie.

If Pannu Islands became his backyard, he would naturally spend money to take care of it.

Jiang Chen's response made Zhang Yapin ecstatic.

He suppressed the joy on his face and bowed to Jiang Chen before hastily leaving.

He was previously worried about the severe effect on the

economy once Johnny International left. But with Jiang Chen's promise, he felt more assured.

Jiang Chen, feeling pleased, smiled, and left the coffee shop.

Now that the stage was set, it was time for the actors to debut.

...

On Coro Island, a few hundred kilometers away from New Zealand, the sun was also bright.

Coro City was here. The capital of Pannu Republic.

Although it was the capital, other than the beautifully constructed mansion, there was not a single luxury building in the vicinity.

The European style architecture, the green vegetation, the swimming pool the size of fifteen hundred square meters. Everything stood out of the place in the not-so-prosperous city center... Just like a millionaire in the slum.

Johnny lied on the recliner on the balcony of the mansion as he enjoyed the subtropical climate and the beauty who was giving him a massage. A few fishing boats drifted in the sea not far away. Although one sentence from him could get rid of those poor suckers from his private territory, he decided not to.

He enjoyed this kind of feeling. The feeling of being on top, the feeling of looking at the poor people below him.

A few months ago, he was only a poor guy in the Los Santos ghetto. He and a few Irish guys wandered in dark bars and sold weed they bought from the Mexicans. Because of turf disputes, they would shoot the thugs from the Crips gang, and then die one day in a dark alley... If without this surprising opportunity, his life was supposed to end like that.

But life is always filled with surprises.

He still remembers the day his life changed.

That day, he was arrested for armed robbery. Just as he was prepared to rot in jail, a man named Robert bailed him out and "genuinely" invited him to be in a Hollywood movie.

In the underworld of Los Santos, Robert was quite renowned, or else he wouldn’t have made the FBA list. Although he had exited the industry and became a director, Johnny still heard about his "reputation".

Johnny remembered he was confused at the time as he didn’t even know he had the talent to act. But since there was a fool willing to pay for his terrible life, he accepted Robert’s arrangement.

Now that he thought about, he was glad he made the decision.

The life of a millionaire, the life here was like heaven. However, he was still confused about the purpose behind everything Robert has done as he didn't see a single camera for the movie.

Instinct told him that the old fox Robert didn't just plan a movie.

The iPad on the table suddenly flashed and interrupted his thoughts.

"Boss, someone is looking for you." A full-bearded face wearing a pair of shades appeared on the screen.

Aubrey, previously part of the Australian special forces, now the head of security for Johnny.

Since he has a lot more assets now, Johnny had to consider his own safety. The natives always looked at him with eyes of hatred. If it were not for the fully equipped bodyguards, it would be hard for him to sleep at night.

"Who is it?"

"Wang Tianfeng, Han."

Wang Tianfeng. Eyes narrowed, Johnny thought for a moment before he remembered the name.

Seemed to the representative sent by Linhua Group that Robert had contacted.

To be honest, Johnny no longer listened to Robert's commands anymore. He was the president of Johnny International, the sole shareholder with two hundred million USD in hand. There was no need to listen to Robert.

He was the king of Pannu Islands, a noble at least. President Edward had recently passed a policy to permit him to maintain a private force of fewer than fifteen people to protect his safety. Any trespassers could be shot without repercussion.

It was a ridiculous order, but in front of money, any ridiculousness would become within the boundary of law.

Ten billion USD construction project, Johnny International didn't have the money at all. But Robert told him not to worry about it, he said that two gold mines in South Africa could be used as collateral, there was no need to worry about the money.

Since he didn't need to worry about the money, Johnny didn't ask any more questions.

He didn't spend money following Robert's orders anymore, although Robert rarely ordered him as he gave him free reign to do anything. Since someone was willing to improve the basic infrastructure of Pannu, why would he reject?

If this place becomes prosperous, his assets would become more valuable. By that time, he could be independent financially and utterly break free from Robert’s manipulation.

"Let him in." As Johnny said this, he signaled the bikini beauty to go back into the room.

"Yes." Audrey nodded and opened the metal gates to the mansion.

Chapter 272: The Prepartion to the Ocean Venture

After ending the meeting with Zhang Yapin, Jiang Chen didn't stay any longer. He left the coffee shop and returned to the Sheraton Hotel in Auckland.

When he returned to the hotel, it was almost noon.

Liu Yao had woken up already as she swung her smooth legs and lied relaxingly on the bed scrolling through her Weibo.

When she saw Jiang Chen return, Liu Yao smiled and said coyly.

"You are finally back! I am so hungry."

"Just call the front desk to order room service." As Jiang Chen sat relaxingly beside the bed, he smiled at the sluggish Liu Yao.

Her slightly blushed face still had a hint of the intimate battle that happened last night.

She combed her slightly messy hair as she sat up and seductively stretched out her body.

"Did something good happen?"

"That’s right, how did you know?" Jiang Chen was rather surprised.

"Haha, it is written all over your face." She playfully winked as she jumped off the bed.

Her feet stepped onto the cold wooden floor as she grabbed the white shirt on the hanger and covered her attractive figure.

She knew how she attracted people, and she was great at displaying her charm, a mix of purity and flirtation.

"Oh? Then guess. What good thing happened?" Jiang Chen said.

"Do I get a reward if I am right?" Liu Yao pouted.

"Of course."

"Ummm..." With a finger on her bottom lip, Liu Yao’s eyes turned before she nodded affirmatively, "You must have signed a big deal?"

"Haha, that’s right! How did you guess that?"

He walked beside Liu Yao as he put his hands around her slim waist.

"Last time in Sanya, when you were with me, you also made a deal." Liu Yao giggled.

"So you really are my lucky star," Jiang Chen, pretending to be serious, said.

"How are you planning to reward me?" Liu Yao said sweetly.

"Is a kiss enough?" Jiang Chen with a smirk grabbed her waist.

"Screw you!"

...

Because it was lunchtime already, the two got dressed up before heading to the restaurant inside the hotel.

The portions were not big, but it was surprisingly delicious.

There were oysters produced locally and Boston lobsters air-shipped and covered in ice. Other than specialty seafood on the menu, there was also spiced lamb and Australian steak.

The thing that left the deepest impression on Jiang Chen was the traditional Maoi stone barbeque.

Jiang Chen had never seen such a unique way of eating. The chef

would first heat up the thin stone before wrapping it in food. Then, it would be put in a heated hole in the ground before it is smoked ready. With the way it was cooked, it was similar to the hobo chicken in China. But one is covered in aluminum foil and stone while the other is covered with lotus leaves and mud.

Jiang Chen almost bit his own tongue as this was the first time he ate such delicacies.

Liu Yao was more delicate when she ate. She only tried all the dishes before stopping. Now that she was a somewhat famous celebrity, without the genetic vaccine to maintain her figure, she would need to control her diet.

But Jiang Chen need not be bothered. Other than the delicacies, he ate two steaks before he was full.

The waitress looked at the empty plates on the table in shock. She then caringly left a box of stomach medicine.

With how Liu Yao giggled, Jiang Chen rubbed his head out of awkwardness.

Needless to say, five-star hotels indeed offered exceptional service as they took care of everything for you. But sometimes, it can be too much that it causes some minor awkwardness. Jiang Chen stuffed the stomach medicine in his pocket as he asked for the bill.

"Are you not afraid of becoming fat." Liu Yao mocked as she looked at the pile of stacked plates.

"Not afraid at all. It is not bad for a man to have a belly," Jiang Chen joked.

Although that's what he said, he was still far away from being fat.

Liu Yao glanced at Jiang Chen's flat stomach and exclaimed in bewilderment.

"How do you do it?"

"Do you want to know?" Jiang Chen smiled mysteriously.

Liu Yao nodded, as her eyes filled with excitement.

To be able to maintain his figure without the need to diet. To the women that always debated if they should eat cake or not, the temptation was lethal. With how excited Liu Yao looked, Jiang Chen daydreamed in his mind. If Lin Lin managed to create a weight control pill, the wallet of the 3.5 billion women around the world would open for him.

He almost wanted to return to the apocalypse immediately.

"I will tell you later." Jiang Chen laughed.

The waitress with blonde hair and blue eyes passed the bill and machine to him, smiled, and courteously looked away.

The tipping culture in New Zealand was not as popular as in the UA, but it certainly exists. However, what differs is that the waitress would not directly ask you for tips and would look away when customer typed in the tip amount as to make it less awkward for the customers unwilling to pay the tip and press that zero button.

Because he was in a great mood, Jiang Chen didn't let the beautiful waitress' expectation down as he typed in 100% in the tip option and then swiped his card.

When the receipt was printed, the waitress opened her mouth in shock as he looked at Jiang Chen in disbelief.

It was her first time seeing such a generous customer. If it were not for the stunning beauty who sat across him, she would have suspected that the young eastern man was interested in her.

Including tips, the meal cost 500 USD. It was almost half the price for a day in their presidential suite.

Liu Yao pouted her mouth as she watched the waitress leave. She stared at the table as she moped in jealousy.

"Are you interested in her?"

"Of course not." Jiang Chen laughed.

He was not a human hookup machine, he didn’t think of doing things every day.

"Haha, good." Liu Yao smiled as she said happily, "Where should we go next?"

Women who are always jealousy would push men away, but women who are not jealous at all wouldn’t make men aware of their presence. Jealous but never persistent on one issue. Against this type of intelligence, Xia Shiyu and Ayesha added together were no competition for Liu Yao.

And because of this, Jiang Chen wanted Liu Yao to be his mistress.

She knew this point and she didn’t demand more. Because even as a mistress, Jiang Chen gave her, her respect.

A title is only a title after all.

"I heard scuba diving is quite fun here, do you want to go check it out?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"Yes! Also, I want to head out into the sea!" Liu Yao said energetically.

"No problem."

Jiang Chen stretched, held onto her hand, and strolled out of the hotel.

Chapter 273: The Renting Fiascal

Auckland is the largest city in New Zealand. It is comprised of over fifty varying-sized islands. Half of the city was built on land and half was built on the sea. It was like a garden on an ocean.

Other than the beautiful scenery, the other unique trait of Auckland was the ease of transportation.

Within half an hour, you could arrive anywhere. Whether it was taking a boat to the islands, or a hike through the rainforest, or having a picnic by the volcano, or surfing in the ocean.

Moments later, Jiang Chen and Liu Yao got off at the port.

The port called fisherman’s wharf was a place he saw on their local website. The owner was a British man named John with a friendly attitude towards tourists. Because of this, the place was extremely popular with a lot of people coming to this port and renting a boat to head out to the sea.

Based on other people's comments, he served in the Australian army before and was a master in diving.

There was a full line of amenities at the port and the cost to rent was not high.

Holding onto Liu Yao’s hand, Jiang Chen walked to the office of the port and began to ask about renting a boat and diving.

The British guy with a red nose was delighted that Jiang Chen asked about diving as he started to introduce all the scuba diving gear he has collected and carefully explained the cautionary notes in diving.

"... It is critical to be aware of the depth. For beginners, I recommend a depth no more than six meters."

"Six meters, what's the fun in that?" Jiang Chen had to ask.

"Within shallow sea, six meters would allow you to see beautiful scenery under the sea. If you plan to scuba dive, I don't recommend you rent a boat that goes too far away. When you enter deep water, you might not see anything even after twenty meters, there is also the danger of encountering sharks." Although John was talking about dangerous things, there was a hint of humor in his tone.

"Sh...Sharks?" Liu Yao shivered as she looked at Jiang Chen, frightened. "Let's not dive anymore."

Although her English was mediocre at best, Liu Yao still made out the word shark.

When he saw the tourist shiver in fear, John smiled assuringly and began to explain using his hands.

"There is no need to worry too much. Most of the sharks don't

attack people. More people are being killed by coconuts landing on their heads than being attacked by sharks. Only Great White Sharks or Tiger Sharks would attack people. In some places, they organize scuba divers to feed the sharks."

Jiang Chen was not that afraid of sharks.

Since he fought head to head with the fearsome Death Claw, there was no way he would be afraid of something that only used its teeth.

"This is the first time I met a merchant that tells its customers not to buy its service." With how serious John looked, Jiang Chen shrugged with an expression he couldn’t be helped.

"I have to be responsible for the safety of the tourists." John shrugged, "Only when safely protected could one enjoy the beauty of the sea."

"Looks like you have your own perspective on the beauty of the sea." Jiang Chen laughed.

"I love scuba diving." John grinned as a set of white teeth appeared from his thick beard.

"But I still want to the rent a boat, as well as a set of diving gear. I will worry about my own safety." Jiang Chen shook his head.

John still wanted to persuade Jiang Chen, but an unharmonious

voice came from behind them.

"Could the people in the front hurry up? If you can’t afford it stop wasting time." A man in sunglasses complained out of annoyance, and a girl in light clothes stood beside him as she intimately wrapped her hands around his arm.

To be honest, Dai Zhengming was absolutely annoyed by his fellow countrymen who traveled to New Zealand. Every December, New Zealand’s fresh and free atmosphere would be mixed with gloom. The garbage on the streets would also increase. The situation would only be alleviated by late January because, by that time, his fellow countrymen would head home for New Year.

No need to suspect. Although he has yellow skin, he had a heart that shined with whiteness. After working at Microsoft for a few years, with his excellent track record, he finally gained an opportunity to immigrate. Although he personally preferred Australia more, New Zealand was not a bad choice.

Just like a monkey who leaped onto a tree branch, he thirstily breathed the air of the free world as he looked at the envious people watching him. Arrogance often sprouted from other people’s adoration, and bias is infinitely magnified by arrogance.

He had perfectly settled into his role of a "local" as he disdained foreigners more than the actual locals.

As if all of the actions of his fellow countrymen lacked courtesy and manner.

Because he spoke Han, John didn’t understand what he said. As he thought that Jiang Chen met his fellow countrymen, he shrugged and left them alone.

[I can’t afford it?]

Jiang Chen’s expression was peculiar as he didn’t know what to say. Liu Yao covered her mouth, she tried hard to not laugh and turned her face to scan the man in sunglasses.

When he saw Liu Yao’s face, Dai Zhengming held his breath.

[Damn, what a hottie.]

Although he had seen a lot of beautiful girls before, it was his first time seeing one this stunning. Especially when she turned her head and smiled, it almost made his heart pause.

Of course, perhaps it was because of the shades, he didn’t manage to read the mockery in Liu Yao’s eyes.

"Zhengming, they might not know English, why don’t you go help them." The girl holding onto his arm blinked her bright eyes as she coyly shook his arm.

She looked above average. Based on her looks, she should be in university, most likely an international student in Auckland? The

man was in his mid-thirties, although not old, but definitely not as young as Jiang Chen.

"You are right." Dai Zhengming let out a sigh and walked towards Jiang Chen.

Although he looked down on him, he must maintain his gentlemen appearance in front of the beauty.

"I am Dai Zhengming."

"I am Jiang... Jianguo." He was going to say his own name, but from the way Dai Zhengming looked, he seemed to have something to say and therefore Jiang Chen gave his dad’s name in the last second instead.

Liu Yao tried hard not to laugh as she charmingly rolled her eyes at the naughty Jiang Chen.

"In New Zealand, it is extremely uncourteous to occupy public resources for a long time. I don’t know if people taught you this in Han, but overseas, it is better to save some face for your own country."

"Rather than 'occupying public resources', I like to refer to my actions as asking about the services available, especially since it has been less than three minutes-" With how serious he looked, Jiang Chen "argued" and couldn’t help but laugh.

Dai Zhengming "courteously" interrupted Jiang Chen’s words and spoke to him with an educating tone.

"And people are lining up behind you, right? Let me give you a simple example. An event that left a deep impression on me living in New Zealand all these years. I saw a Han grandma and her grandson ordering at the St. Heliers coffee shop. They spent so long at the register before ordering a mocha with a sandwich and a kids meal."

[Uhh, is he implying something?]

Jiang Chen purposely looked behind him, other than them, there was no one waiting in line.

"Is that a problem?" Jiang Chen was lost.

"It’s courtesy." Dai Zhengming looked seriously at Jiang Chen’s eyes as he said with a straight face.

"So you are saying... that grandma and grandson wasted time of all the people waiting in line?" Jiang Chen had a peculiar expression on his face.

[Wow, you remember such a minuscule event, and it left a deep impression on you? You’re quite a special snowflake.]

"That’s right. If you want to order, please think about what you want to order before lining up, or don’t occupy the space at the

register, that would bring trouble to the people waiting to order."

"Okay... I agree it is rude to occupy the stall and not take a sh*t." Jiang Chen shrugged.

"And you are doing exactly this right now," Dai Zhengming said sternly. "And watch your language. It represents the image of the country behind you, please don't use the word sh*t. if this is the UA, you may face lawsuits for using offensive language to strangers."

Jiang Chen's expression couldn't be more peculiar.

Unfortunately, he knew a UA citizen who used the word sh*t every day. (Robert in the far away Los Santos sneezed and woke up the Hollywood girl that slept beside him.)

When he saw Jiang Chen didn't say anything, he thought Jiang Chen was so embarrassed that he was speechless, so he continued.

"Even if you have some money, please don't bring your uncourteous habits out of the country."

"Let me clarify, I don't have some money," Jiang Chen corrected him feeling rather awkward.

"Then you have to be more aware of your manners, or people will consider you as both uncourteous and poor." His eyes were flashing with a trace of contempt as he educated.

As he finished, he nobly turned to Liu Yao as he took out a business card from his pocket.

"Beautiful lady, this is my business card. I currently have a house in Auckland and I am working in the Microsoft division here as the chief engineer. I am pretty familiar with the area. So if you are interested, you can find me at the address on the business card, I am happy to take you around to enjoy the beauty of New Zealand.

Then, Dai Zhengming ignored Liu Yao’s reaction and left with a smile he considered charming and a "cool" retreating silhouette.

He walked around Jiang Chen, used a British accent more standard than British people, and spoke with Johnny before he swiped his card.

Then, he triumphantly walked towards the boats with the girl that held onto his arm with her face full of idolization. Jiang Chen was dumbfounded.

"Honey, you’re being looked down upon," Liu Yao walked beside Jiang Chen with a grin, held onto his arm, and said coyly.

"Seems like that's the case," Jiang Chen said helplessly.

"Do you need me to help you to seek revenge?" Liu Yao’s eyes flashed as her red lips curled up.

"It’s okay, he already said let’s not lose face in front of foreigners," Jiang Chen mocked,

Liu Yao burst out laughing as she closed her mouth.

"I didn’t know you liked cold humor." She threw the business card into the garbage can.

"No, I am serious." Although that was what he said, Jiang Chen didn’t look serious at all.

...

When Jiang Chen thought about it, that guy seemed to have cut him in line. But Jiang Chen wasn't interested in being bothered by him. He could give up a few minutes of his life.

"What were you talking about?" John didn’t mind that Jiang Chen just left him hanging and asked curiously.

"Not much... Just talked about some hometown stuff."

"Great then, to meet a fellow countryman overseas, it is important to chat for a moment. But in Auckland, you will have plenty of opportunities to see them," John said with a smile.

"Is that so... Speaking of this, what do you think about the Han in Auckland?" After he swiped his card, Jiang Chen signed the receipt

and asked nonchalantly.

"They make delicious cuisine. I really enjoy Han food, just that it’s a bit expensive." John laughed.

"Anything else?"

"That’s all." John shrugged.

Because of Jiang Chen’s insistence, John didn’t try to talk him out of it as he just urged him to be extra safe and that he must dive with the captain accompanying him.

It was not cheap to rent a boat, the cheapest one cost two thousand NZD a day, which was equivalent to eight thousand RMB. Therefore, it was more economical to rent by the hour, but other than the small boats, the boats that you could live on were not available for hourly rental.

Because it was a rare opportunity, it was not thrilling enough to just rent a small boat. Jiang Chen rented a ten something meter long medium-sized luxury boat with a spacious living space and gladly paid eight thousand NZD per day for it.

"Also, do New Zealanders just straight up pay for their boat when they rent here?" After he signed the agreement, Jiang Chen asked.

John paused for a moment as he didn’t know why Jiang Chen would ask such a question. He shook his head and said, "Other than

the customers who often come, the new customers without knowledge of the price and the type of boat would have to ask."

"You are right." Jiang Chen smiled.

...

Su Wei stood on the dock beside the boat and asked Dai Zhengming curiously.

"What did you say to that girl? I saw you give her something."

"Nothing, it is only a business card. In the outside world, it is a habit to hand out a business card as it represents courtesy." Dai Zhengming made up a lie out of embarrassment.

At the same time, Jiang Chen and Liu Yao walked in their direction.

When he saw the beauty was still sweetly holding onto Jiang Chen’s hand, Dai Zhengming’s eyebrows jumped but he didn’t react any further.

When he passed by Dai Zhengming, Jiang Chen seemed to have suddenly remembered something and stopped.

"Oh, I heard that there is a custom of returning business cards, then I will give you a business card as well." Jiang Chen took out

his business card and purposely hesitated for a moment before he passed it to his female companion. "I don’t travel abroad a lot and haven't learned as much about the western culture as you, so I will learn from you."

When saw Jiang Chen hand his girlfriend, Su Wei, his business card, he frowned unnaturally. But then he realized that Jiang Chen seemed to have ignored him and passed the business card to the beauty beside him, he swallowed the criticism.

"Wenwen, accept it for me."

"Oh."

Jiang Chen stuffed the business card into the girl’s hands as he laughed like he just pulled off a prank and continued to walk without turning his head.

"It is ready. Should we depart now?"

The captain working in the small boat raised his head and smiled at Dai Zhengming.

"Mhmm, let’s leave now. Wenwen, let’ go... Wenwen?" When Dai Zhengming saw that Su Wen didn’t react, he slightly frowned and turned his head.

Su Wen, holding onto the gold gilded business card, had her eyes wide open and was utterly astonished.

"What’s going on?" Dai Zhengming asked confusedly.

Su Wen seemed to have recollected her thoughts as she looked at her boyfriend in excitement.

"It’s… It’s Jiang Chen!"

"Jiang Chen? Which Jiang-" Suddenly, Dai Zhengming stopped.

Jiang Chen? President of Future Technology? But isn’t his name Jiang Jianguo?"

He grabbed the card from his girlfriend’s hand as he widened his eyes in disbelief. Then he looked up into the not so far distance.

The man stating "he didn’t have some money" was on top of a luxury boat and smiling at him.

But the bright smile, in Dai Zhengming’s eyes, looked piercing.

Mockery.

When he remembered that he lectured him, the humiliation immediately overwhelmed him. His bloated face turned red as he wanted to dig a hole for himself.

Especially when he saw his girlfriend looking enviously at the luxury boat, his expression looked like he just ate a fly.

"Are you guys going on the boat or not? Can I start timing?"

The captain on the boat saw that the two had no reaction and yawned as he complained.

When he heard the captain complain, Dai Zhengming immediately recollected his thought as he apologized to the captain. Then he dragged the still envious girlfriend onto the boat.

On the top deck of the boat, Jiang Chen looked at the dock disappearing with a grin.

"You are not a nice person. But that person is hideous, it makes me feel good to see him suffer like this." Liu Yao held onto his arm as she giggled.

"I only smiled at him, but he would think I am mocking him. Saves me my own expression," Jiang Chen shrugged and mocked.

After they left the small incident behind, Jiang Chen looked into the distance.

He gazed at the waves at the point where the sky and the ocean met. As he experienced the ocean wind breeze by his face, he felt all his annoyances quietly settle down.

Just as he was zoning out, the EP on his arm undetectably flashed.

As if it foretold something unexpected was about to occur.

Chapter 274: The Signal from under the Ocean

The captain of the boat was John's daughter. Her name was Bernie.

Just like her father, she was also someone that loved the sea. Because of this, while she had blonde hair unique to Caucasian people, her skin was tanned.

The boat was moving quickly, at 50 knots, in the Hauraki Bay towards the Great Barrier Island.

When Jiang Chen looked back, the outline of the port had already disappeared from the sea, only a few black dots soaring on the horizon could be seen.

"Woah-!"

Intoxicated by the fresh air, Liu Yao excitedly took off her white shirt as she stood on the edge of the deck and shouted into the distance.

Of course, she changed into a bikini when she was at the hotel.

"Careful don't fall off." Jiang Chen looked at her liveliness and smiled.

"If I fall off, will you save me?" Liu Yao asked playfully.

"Of course," Jiang Chen had a smirk on his face, "But I heard there are sharks in this area, how much I can save would be questionable."

Liu Yao shivered exaggeratedly as she jumped from the edge of the deck and rolled her eyes.

"There are typically no sharks in the Hauraki Bay, but there are actually quite a few dolphins here. If we are lucky we might be able to see whales. If we head north of the Lesser Barrier Island, that will change," Bernie who sat in the captain's room heard their conversation and explained.

Surprisingly, this foreigner, Bernie, spoke Han. Although not fluently, it was enough to maintain a conversation.

As if Bernie had read the question in Jiang Chen's eyes, she explained with a smile, "My boyfriend is Han, he taught me the language. There are a lot of Han tourists here. Usually, if Han tourists head out to the sea, I will be their captain and guide."

"Where are we now?" Liu Yao extended her neck. With one hand covering the sunlight, she watched the distance in excitement.

"We have arrived Northwest of the Jackson port already, around 16 nautical miles from the Great Barrier Island. It is a good place to view the undersea corals."

"How much longer?" Liu Yao couldn't wait any longer.

"With our current speed, around 20 minutes." Bernie smiled.

"I am really looking forward to it," Liu Yao looked afar before grabbing onto Jiang Chen's arm, she said coyly, "Could you take photos for me? I want pictures with the clownfish."

"Of course." He felt the softness of her 36D and laughed.

"Honey you are the best, muaa." Liu Yao naughtily winked.

Jiang Chen was just about to tease her when he felt the arm of his other hand vibrate.

The vibration came from his EP.

Communication? Did something urgent happen in the apocalypse?

"What is this?" Liu Yao looked curiously at Jiang Chen's arm.

"A special kind of electronic watch... I need to go to the washroom," Jiang Chen gave a brief explanation before he walked inside.

Although still confused, Liu Yao didn't ask more as she stayed outside.

After going inside, Jiang Chen immediately opened the EP and started the communication channel.

"Strange," Looking at the static white screen, Jiang Chen muttered to himself.

It was not from the apocalypse.

The fourth-dimensional messenger received Klein particle waves, but the wave could not be decoded into a video message.

"Could it be because of the poor signal?"

The signal began to fade.

Looking at the blurry whiteness that began to fade, Jiang Chen suddenly realized something as he rushed out the door.

"Bernie, stop the boat, quickly," Jiang Chen pushed open the control room as he hastily said.

"What happened?" His rushed voice made Bernie sitting in the control room jump as she slowed the boat down out of instinct.

"What happened?" Seeing Jiang Chen panic, Liu Yao who stood outside also stared at Jiang Chen in confusion.

Jiang Chen didn't explain anything, he looked at the screen with the GPS tracker and glanced at the route they passed through.

"First, go back around one nautical mile."

"Go back?" Bernie puzzledly looked at Jiang Chen, "But there is nothing there."

Jiang Chen immediately calmed down when he heard her question.

He was certain that something was hidden inside the sea. Although he didn't know what it was, it had to do with Klein particles.

Crystals? But how would this world have that?

Regardless of what was hidden, he could not let anyone know.

When he thought about this, Jiang Chen glanced at the screen with the GPS coordinates again as he memorized the approximate location. Then, he changed into a casual voice.

"Nothing, I just saw a dolphin, but he must have swum away already by now."

"A dolphin?" When Bernie heard Jiang Chen's' words, she paused for a moment before she let out a breath of relief. "Once we reach the Great Barrier Island, you'll see a lot of cute little ones in the area."

When she saw Jiang Chen rush into the control room, she thought there was a problem with the boat.

But it was only a dolphin.

"Is that so? I am looking forward to it then." Jiang Chen also smiled as he left the control room.

Seeing Jiang Chen come out, Liu Yao walked towards him worriedly and caringly asked.

"What happened? I, I saw you were really rushed..."

"Nothing, I only saw a few dolphins."

Although she acutely sensed that Jiang Chen wasn't telling the truth, she didn't persist on the topic any further.

If Jiang Chen were willing to tell her, then he would do so. If he was unwilling, then persisting would only make him feel annoyed.

"Is that so? Then that's disappointing, I wanted to take a photo

with the dolphins." After hugging onto Jiang Chen right arm, Liu Yao playfully pouted her mouth.

The 16 nautical miles quickly came to an end.

The waves splashed white, at the apex where the sea and sky connected, a beautiful outline gradually appeared.

When she saw the thick green vegetation, as well as the soaring seagulls, Liu Yao cheered again in excitement.

The two spent the entire afternoon diving in the water near the Great Barrier Island and taking pictures with the cute dolphins, fishing for fishes, teasing the clownfish hidden amongst the sea anemone, and chasing each other between the beautiful corals.

Time flew by quickly as if it had instantly turned to dusk.

After watching the sunset on the deck, Jiang Chen told Bernie to return to port.

Although he still wanted to stay a bit longer by the sea, because of his unsettled mind, he didn't choose to stay longer but rather asked Bernie to send them back to the hotel.

With the help of the hotel workers, Bernie docked the boat.

"Are you not going to stay a bit longer? You rented the boat for a

day. It is a great experience to stay on the boat overnight," Looking at the two people saying goodbye, Bernie asked them.

"It's okay, I remembered I have something to take care of," Jiang Chen declined her proposal as Jiang Chen held Liu Yao's hand and they went back to the hotel.

He desperately wanted to know, when they passed by the water northwest of Jackson port, what was actually hidden there.

He had a premonition that that thing might have something to do with the video.

Chapter 275: K1 Kinetic Skeleton Amphibious

After returning to his room, Jiang Chen closed the door.

Graceful hands circled his waist.

When he felt the coolness, Jiang Chen smiled and gently squeezed Liu Yao's hand.

"Don't want to do it?"

"Can you withstand it?" Looking at her bright eyes, Jiang Chen smirked.

When she recollected her desperate pleading last night, Liu Yao's face turned red, but she acted calmly.

"I can withstand-"

"But rather than withstanding it, I enjoy it more when you are also enjoying it."

A glimpse of emotion appeared and quickly faded on her face. She lowered her head and pouted her mouth.

"Thank you."

"Rest early tonight, it has been a long day." Jiang Chen combed the hair in front of Liu Yao's forehead with a smile.

"Mhmm." Her eyes turned teary for a second and she nodded.

Half because of his money, half because of his character. Regardless, she loved him. Although she knew Jiang Chen would only treat her as a mistress, she didn't mind.

She knew, him accepting her perhaps had nothing to do with love, or maybe even as a reminiscence to what didn't happen in the past, a recollection of his time. By the lake at Wanghai University, when she wore that white dress and appeared in front of him like a student. His lost eyes made her read the meaning behind them.

But none of those things mattered. Even if she was just a mistress, she could still feel his gentleness.

The only thing that made her afraid was, at the bottom of her heart, she wondered if she was just a tool to unleash his desire.

But fortunately, he is not like that...

...

After a shower, the two slept.

It was around midnight when Jiang Chen opened his eyes.

The breathing beside his ear was rhythmic. Due to spending too much energy during the day, Liu Yao was sleeping deeply.

After sneaking out of bed, Jiang Chen put on his shirt, went into the washroom, and locked the door before commencing interdimensional travel.

It was quiet in the mansion. Sun Jiao should already be sleeping.

Jiang Chen didn't go wake them up as he took a thick winter suit and covered himself up. He stood beside the living room, getting used to the drastic change in temperature. Then he opened the door of the mansion and walked into the snowy night.

Although it was already late into the night, the base still remained bright and noisy.

The heavy snow could not cover the orange flame shining from the factory window. The roaring sound inside the building diffused around the base. With the outdated production equipment, they could only make up the lack of speed through labor. The lack of sophisticated equipment meant that they had to operate through an around the clock shift schedule to reach the necessary volume.

But no one complained because this place was the wasteland. Being full and warm with the opportunity to work was almost a luxury.

The unmanned highly sophisticated factories from before the war had almost all turned into shambles during the nuclear explosions. Although Jiang Chen had thought about sending people to the ruins to dig through some "garbage", given that it was around ten something years into the apocalypse, he gave up on the thought.

Anything good was probably raided.

The snow removing vehicle modified out of a truck would occasionally drive by. The fully equipped soldiers patrolled the base.

When they saw Jiang Chen, the leading patrol immediately stood straight and saluted to the general.

"Don't mind me, you guys continue to patrol." Looking at the young man with a red nose, Jiang Chen smile.

"Yes, sir!" The young man raised his head with rosy cheeks and saluted again before telling the soldiers behind him to walk forward.

At the young man's chest, Jiang Chen saw a golden emblem.

He just remembered that he seemed to have canonized two hundred something knights at the base. These knights were absolutely loyal to him and were the first batch of slaves he bought

from the Sixth Street. They were the pioneers that dug the first shovel among the ruins. Now, these pioneers all have been promoted as the central force of the base, acting as management or mid to high-level military leaders.

The person following the young knight was an upper citizen. Although he was not implanted with the slavery chip, Jiang Chen still saw deep respect and worship from his eyes.

"The size of the base is beginning to grow?" Standing in the snow, Jiang Chen scanned the territory he ruled and a smile emerged on his face.

With the Fishbone base gradually growing in size, with the base as the core foundation, it began to expand into its fourth newly plotted area. New residential area meant that they could intake new immigrants. Combined with the survivors from Shenxiang town, Fishbone had over 1000 in population.

But the growth on this side was stagnating. The materials gathered by the scavenger team could not satisfy the appetite of this industrial monster. Only if he managed to obtain his own land in the modern world could he move tons of aluminum, steel, or even rare earth metals to the apocalypse.

After staying a bit longer, Jiang Chen began to walk to the aerospace laboratory at the corner of the base.

He pressed the doorbell as he put his face closer to the camera and said concisely.

"It's me."

Shortly after, the lock made a "clang" sound.

Pushing open the door, he carried with him the chilly wind and snowflakes. But the snowflakes on the carpet were soon melted into droplets of water by the heat inside.

He closed the door behind him and put his winter suit on the hook by the door before he walked inside.

"So late. I almost thought the kinetic skeleton production line had an accident." Jiang Lin in pajamas yawned as he came to the door with messy hair.

Parts were thrown everywhere, making the first-floor living room challenging to find a place to place one's feet. But the still sleepy guy managed to quickly walk through the pile of spare parts and didn't step on a single bolt.

By this alone, this guy spent too much time inside.

"This is?" Jiang Chen pointed at the parts and diagrams on the ground feeling puzzled.

Jiang Lin grabbed a chair for Jiang Chen and then sat on the other one before he replied, "You asked to research the K1-b type

kinetic skeleton... For real, is this thing really necessary?"

K1-b kinetic skeleton is the amphibious version of the K1 model. Maintaining the current defense ability, it adds a resistant layer against water pressure, while modifying the back to allow for water booster and an air storage cylinder.

Of course, this model would not be used in the apocalypse, but Jiang Chen didn't want to explain to him as he started to ask about the research progress.

"Is this thing functional?"

"Probably not. Considering that most waters possess a radiation level exceeding normal levels. I still need to add a layer of heavy organic metal within the pressure resistant layer-" Jiang Lin was prepared to explain to Jiang Chen the technicals, but Jiang Chen who didn't understand at all interrupted him mercilessly.

"Let's put the radiation problem aside for now. Other than that, what else is needed? Is this thing done?" The water in the modern world has no radiation, it would be useless to add anti-radiation material.

"The design is complete. Sample parts have been created, it only needs to be assembled together before it can be used." After hesitating for a moment, Jiang Lin nodded.

"Then assemble a sample for me, that shouldn't be a problem

right?"

"There is no problem, but the performance data has yet to be collected, it may not be good to use it right away-"

"Battle is the best way to test the equipment." Jiang Chen smiled.

"Okay." Jiang Lin didn't try to convince Jiang Chen. He shrugged before he walked towards the workbench.

The K1-b type kinetic skeleton was much heavier compared to the original K1 model. Considering that the amphibious equipment would mostly be used underwater, the removable polyethylene board was sealed shut to avoid water leakage.

Other than that, Jiang Lin also designed a full helmet for this kinetic skeleton.

Just from the appearance alone, this kinetic skeleton covered every single part of the body with the pressure resistant material. Other than the fact that it didn't have a turbine engine, steel armor, nerve connected computer, as well as other high tech equipment, this set of armor was similar to the power armor. On the other hand, it could be classified as something between "light infantry armor" to "heavy knight armor". The cost was three times more than the original K1 model.

"The booster equipment is in the back. The air storage can be charged by allowing the opening to come into contact with air. It

takes around an hour to charge to full and can be used up to three hours." Jiang Lin pushed up his glasses as he began to explain to Jiang Chen the equipment he designed.

[Automatically replenishing oxygen, what, how insane is that?]

As he listened to Jiang Lin, Jiang Chen was shocked.

"When engaging in a crossfire, avoid getting the breathing apparatus in the back of the neck damaged... Of course, that would not be much different than if you were shot in the head."

"The helmet is not bulletproof?" Jiang Chen knocked on the helmet as he felt the special organic material.

"It is underwater equipment. I have to control the overall density, the majority of the bulletproof ability is focused on the front chest and stomach area. Of course, the helmet can defend against one or two bullets, but I don't recommend you try it. With the kinetic power of the reaper assault rifle, even if the helmet could deflect a shot, most people's neck would not be able to withstand that kind of force. This is not the power armor after all." Jiang Lin shrugged.

"What about this? Pistol?" Jiang Chen picked up an odd-looking weapon.

"That's alright. But it can't be used in water."

"Is the Type-11 pistol not good? I remember the power of that thing is pretty high." Jiang Chen held onto the gun as he played with it, the feeling couldn't be more strange.

Jiang Lin paused for a second as he looked at Jiang Chen strangely.

"The bullet with a higher initial velocity would travel a shorter distance in the water. Even if the bullet in the base has a steel core, while it would not be crushed by the water pressure, it will begin to roll in a few meters."

The higher the velocity, the shorter the distance? How is that possible?!

"But I saw in movies-" Jiang Chen said dumbfoundedly.

In his memory, the images of machines guns weaving a net made by bullets were common in war movies.

"It is a movie after all." Jiang Lin laughed as he put a box of elongated bullets into Jiang Chen's hand, "If you use Type-11, you are better off using a laser weapon. Although the optical density of laser beams also degrade quickly in water, it will still shoot further than conventional weapons."

Chapter 276: Below the Ocean

After taking the equipment from Jiang Lin, Jiang Chen returned to the mansion. He snuck into his own bedroom before traveling back.

When he looked at the time coming out of the washroom, it was already two in the morning.

After quietly getting into bed again, Jiang Chen looked at the tranquil face and rhythmically pumping chest before lying down beside her and closing his eyes.

The next morning.

Although he slept late last night, when the first ray of sunshine cast into the room, He was the first one up.

As he got out of bed, he didn't wake Liu Yao up as he only left a message on the table before putting on a shirt and leaving.

After taking a taxi to the rural area east of Auckland, Jiang Chen walked along the coast before he found the fishing farm on the map.

He dragged the owner of the fish farm out and without wasting a single word he directly pointed at the boat parked on the dock and asked for the price.

Although the New Zealander first insisted that he was not willing to sell, when he heard Jiang Chen raise the price to ten thousand NZD and pretended to leave, the brown-skinned old fisherman dragged onto him signaling it was a deal.

Ten thousand NZD was enough for two boats, especially since his boat has already been used for over a year.

After completing the transaction, that guy gave all the documents and keys to Jiang Chen.

As to if Jiang Chen had the proper license, he didn't ask. He only taught Jiang Chen for 30 minutes on how to drive.

It was simple to maneuver the boat. Under the directions of the old fisherman, they took a ride into the nearby sea as Jiang Chen learned how to drive.

However, when the old fisherman got out, his eyes were full of concern. But Jiang Chen was unbothered. He opened the GPS, pushed the speed of the boat to its maximum and headed for the waters northwest of Jackson Port.

The Hauraki Bay today was still pleasant.

Because he didn't encounter any big waves, with Jiang Chen's brute way of pressing on the gas, he managed to arrive without flipping the boat.

When the boat passed through the same area as yesterday, without any surprise, the EP with the fourth-dimensional messenger received the same mysterious signal.

Seeing this, Jiang Chen immediately slowed down. With one hand firmly on the wheel, he stared at the changing signal intensity on the EP.

After wandering nearby for a while, Jiang Chen finally chose three points with the same signal and drew it on the map.

What happened next was much more straightforward.

Through triangulation, Jiang Chen quickly confirmed the approximate coordinates of the signal's source.

"Done!"

Jiang Chen wiped the sweat from his forehead, threw the pencil to the side as he memorized the coordinates.

"H?" Jiang Chen stared at the EP screen as he barely made out a blurred out word.

But because it was too blurred out, he could only recognize the initial letter.

"Is it that hello?"

As he muttered to himself, Jiang Chen shut off the gas.

He took out the K1-b kinetic skeleton from the storage dimension and put it on.

<Oxygen: 100%

Structural damage: None

Airtight: Normal>

He glanced at the panel on his right arm. After confirming all stats were normal, he walked to the edge of the boat.

"I hope there is no wind."

He took a deep breath and dove into the water.

...

Pooch.

Followed by the rising air bubbles, Jiang Chen gradually descended to the deep sea.

It was the first time he attempted diving away from the shore. When they were scuba diving near the Great Barrier Island, they saw the corals on the seabed two to three meters down. But now, the only thing below him was vast darkness.

The light and sound surrounding him began to fade. The deepness and silence, only unique to below the sea, gradually spread around him.

<Current elevation: -20m

Distance from the sea floor: 71m>

"So fu*king deep." Jiang Chen looked at the panel and cursed.

To push away the claustrophobic sense swirling around him, he tapped the screen on his right arm as he opened the detection light on his helmet and feet.

The sudden appearance of light made the little things peacefully swimming by him flee away.

Only after two minutes of descending did Jiang Chen finally approach the sea floor.

The colorful coral reefs and fishes, as well as the water plants swaying with the flow of the sea, were magnificent under the ray of light.

But because he had already observed the beautiful feast underneath the sea, Jiang Chen didn't stop and observe the stunning scenery. He pressed the screen on his arm some more as he initiated the data transfer between the EP and kinetic skeleton computer.

The static whiteness appeared again, but the hidden letters were much more clear compared to what he saw on the surface of the sea.

"H...Help? Is the signal asking for help?" Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows as he scanned around.

Since there were no irregular items, clearly there was an error in triangulation. That was to be expected. Jiang Chen didn't have a measurement device, it was a crude calculation with pencil and paper.

Jiang Chen waved the flaps under his feet as he tilted his body downward. He circled around the area before he followed the direction in which the signal was gradually increasing.

The bottom of the sea was not smooth. Twenty meters into his journey, a pitch black valley appeared in front of Jiang Chen.

He shined the light in but couldn't see the bottom.

Jiang Chen looked at the deep abyss as he glanced at the screen

on his arm.

<Current elevation: -101m

Distance from seafloor: unknown>

210m

243m

332m

…

It could not detect the bottom anymore? Or could the bottom be molten lava which would scatter the laser causing the information not to be relayed back?

Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows. Whatever it may be, it was not a good thing.

Based on what Jiang Lin had said, the K1-b was designed for amphibious battle, not for deep sea diving. So a safe depth to go was only 150 meters.

Jiang Chen hesitated for a moment. Then he took a deep breath of air as he swam into the trench with an unknown depth.

Just like he expected, with his continuous descend, the signal from the EP was getting stronger and stronger.

210m.

243m.

332m, the world record for scuba diving has been broken by Jiang Chen.

...

As he felt the immense pressure from all sides, Jiang Chen clenched his teeth as he struggled to breathe in the air being pressured to the limit.

The good thing was that the compressed air in the cylinder was helium-oxygen. If it were nitrogen oxygen, once the nitrogen dissolved into his body, it would render him unconscious.

420m!

Finally, the signal began to decrease.

A delightedness flashed across Jiang Chen's eyes as he swam up two to three meters, and then began to search along the dark rock surface.

If it were not for his genetic vaccine, an ordinary person would begin to bleed due to the water pressure.

Finally, beside a jagged rock pillar, Jiang Chen saw something peculiar protruding out.

He suppressed the excitement in his head and sped up the paddling of his feet as he moved towards that pillar.

As his finger touched the cold pillar, he slightly used some force against it. With the momentum, Jiang Chen drifted behind the pillar.

Light shed onto the black metal that hasn't seen sunlight for ages.

Sea plants swayed as if the light had disturbed its peace.

"My God..."

Jiang Chen dumbfoundedly looked at the scenery in front of his eyes as he almost forgot the breath.

Just like a breeze of wind carrying Klein particles, it swept by the hidden history.

The truth gradually revealed itself.

The buried secret will once again see the light of day.

Chapter 277: U-235

"U-235?"

It was a submarine.

Around 90 meters long, he couldn't tell how much it weighed, but it must be above a thousand tons.

Just like a needle, it pierced right into the jagged rocky cliff.

The majority of its surface was covered by unknown algae. The remaining cracks were filled by the remains of mollusks. Rust stained the entire metal surface, but it didn't fade away the white paint that revealed its identity.

Jiang Chen extended his hand and touched the cold metal surface with his glove.

He gently swayed along with the soft and silky seaweed and muttered the grave symbols.

"U-235?"

If he remembered correctly, a submarine with U as the initial letter, there was only one type in the entire world - the German U boat.

Jiang Chen was not a military fanatic as his understanding of this came entirely from a British World War Two documentary as well as a few Hollywood movies.

They were like ghosts below the sea surface, lingering around the allies' minds like nightmares. They disturbed the commercial fleets and transportation boats across the Atlantic Ocean. They ripped the supply line from the free world to the British Isles and cornered the allies' military power.

It was not until 1945, when the Germans surrendered, did these submarines sunk.

"The heritage of the Third Reich? Is the signal from inside here?"

Jiang Chen pushed on the surface of the submarine as he used the opposing force to gain a bit of distance. With the light on his head, he examined the full view of the intact submarine.

Since it has been in the water for so many years, the rust on the surface of the submarine was severe. But fortunately, the main structure of the submarine remained intact as it didn't look like it would disassemble during internal exploration.

When it crashed into the trenches, the submarine must have experienced strong impact. Just from the surface, a few dents and cracks were visible.

Jiang Chen followed along the outskirts of the submarine as he

swam onto the deck.

The 88mm cannon was twisted and bent from impact. Inside the cannon resided creatures similar to shrimps.

Jiang Chen didn't disturb those small things as he circled around the rusted cannon and headed into the exit.

Unfortunately, the iron door was welded shut.

Jiang Chen without any welding equipment had to give up on the door and search for another entrance.

Lady luck once again was on his side. Five meters away from the torpedo launcher, Jiang Chen managed to find a crack fitting of a person.

He looked at the pitch black interior and gulped. He threw a luminescent water bomb from his waistband inside.

The orange light brightened the interior of the submarine. After confirming there was no dangerous creature inside, Jiang Chen finally swam in.

"What are these things?" Jiang Chen looked at the pitch black containers while speaking to himself.

Instinct told him that there must be something unusual inside.

Other than the containers with unknown content, Jiang Chen also saw a few skeletons in the Nazi uniform. These skeletons lied quietly at the corner of the ship cabin. Their body had withered away and the hollowness of the skeletons was filled with seaweed. It looked gross.

Due to safety consideration, Jiang Chen didn't immediately open the containers, but instead searched for the signal and explored further into the cabin

Fortunately, when the submarine sunk, the cabin doors were not shut. If they rusted, it would be difficult to open them again.

"It's in the front?"

The image on his screen was clear. Jiang Chen locked his sight on the signal strength indicator and used the small signal differences to ensure that he was moving towards the source of the signal.

"What is this submarine exactly used for? For transportation?" Jiang Chen scanned the containers placed along the way as he asked himself.

Just then, his left arm began to shake; it was from the EP underneath the kinetic skeleton.

Jiang Chen pressed on the screen outside of the kinetic skeleton as the interface shifted to the EP.

<Radiation level: 5>

Radiation? Where did the radiation come from?

Jiang Chen brows furrowed, but he wasn't too bothered by it. Even if this kinetic skeleton did not have anti-radiation material, the iodine stored in the EP was more than enough to withstand this level of radiation. Especially compared to the radiation level of the apocalypse, this type of low radiation could be categorized as almost nothing.

But what confused him was, why would he detect radiation on the German U boat.

He passed through one more open cabin door as this must be the room where the signal was from.

Jiang Chen took another luminescent bomb out and threw in the middle of the room. The entire room turned to an orange-red color.

There were two wooden boxes in the room. The surface of the boxes had withered away already, and one of them was even wide open.

Jiang Chen decreased the light on his helmet as he approached it.

Inside the wooden box lied five-cylinders made out of unknown materials. They were also labeled with "Japanese Army". Behind the wooden box, there were transparent eggs attached to it. They looked like octopus' eggs, but something looked odd from its shape and size. Though it must have been affected by the minor radiation.

"Enriched uranium? No... German in history didn't manage to create the nuclear bomb. In this case, it should just be uranium? Or maybe uranium yet to reach the purity of weapon-grade?" Jiang Chen floated beside the cylinder and muttered.

Jiang Chen gave a bit more thought before he threw the cylinders into his storage dimension.

With rough estimation, these nuclear materials weighed at least five hundred kilograms. Since it possessed radiation, then it must have been enriched to a certain extent already. Although he didn't know the market price of these things, on the black market, it would not be too far-fetched to sell for a few hundred million USD.

Of course, Jiang Chen would not sell these things.

After destroying the mutated octopus eggs, Jiang Chen continued to search the room.

At the corner, he finally found the source of the signal.

But suddenly, a black shadow appeared on the wall in front of

Jiang Chen.

As he was suddenly alerted, Jiang Chen immediately activated the booster device on his back.

The high-pressure gas instantly burst out, with a strong thrust produced by tiny bubbles, he dashed into the other corner of the room.

Boom!

Like a hammer, a tentacle fiercely slammed into the cabin wall as it left a daunting dent on the metal surface.

It was a giant octopus!

It's massive body squeezed into the door as it blocked the exit.

Jiang Chen finally realized why this creature was so furious. He remembered he destroyed those octopus eggs.

The mutated octopus must be the mother of those weird eggs.

"Fu*k."

Jiang Chen cursed and immediately pulled out the underwater pistol.

But before he could shoot, four tentacles swam to him like pythons and locked in his limbs.

Jiang Chen's face was bloated red as he used his muscles to try and escape, but the thick tentacles didn't budge one bit. While being strangled by a living creature, he was afraid to take the risk of interdimensional travel. As the size of the octopus was much bigger than the lead mutated human. It would take an immense amount of energy to destroy all its cells. He didn't want to take the risk of the interdimensional bracelet overheating again by using such a risky move.

The poisonous ink splashed out, but it did nothing to Jiang Chen who didn't breath through his fins.

Fury!

Menacing light flashed out of Jiang Chen's eyes; his body was tightened to the limit.

Jiang Chen clenched the gun as he managed to outpower the tentacles. Just as the octopus was about to put its razor-sharp mouth on him, he pressed the trigger.

Bang-!

Following the dampened gunshot was a series of small air bubbles.

The special bullets pierced through the head of the octopus.

Blue blood began to flow out. Under the orange light, it turned a shade of purple.

Jiang Chen wasn't in the most pleasant mood while viewing this scene. He pressed the trigger to express the desire to kill in his heart.

The tentacles tightly clamped onto his limbs slowly began to lose its grasp.

It took almost an entire clip of bullets before the fearsome creature finally stopped moving.

Chapter 278: The Secret of World War Two

"Uranium? Where did you get it from?"

Lin Lin scanned the barrel thrown to the corner by Jiang Chen with disdain. It looked as if she had seen something gross.

When he was "arm wrestling" with that mutated octopus, the kinetic system of the kinetic skeleton received minor damage when Jiang Chen activated fury. To avoid the possibility of the entire skeleton breaking down during his return to the surface, after taking care of the mutated octopus, he brought the briefcase back to the apocalypse.

After throwing the equipment for Jiang Lin to fix, Jiang Chen went to find Lin Lin.

"Although the technology on our side is outdated, we still have things like the atomic bomb."

"Is that so? Your technology's progression is surprisingly quick, already in the atomic era." Lin Lin swayed her silver-white hair and sat on the chair. "And then? Why did you bring this thing to my lab?"

"I want to ask, with five hundred kilograms of Uranium, how many nuclear bombs can you create?"

When Lin Lin heard Jiang Chen's words, she paused for a

moment, touched her chin, and replied after contemplating.

"Nuclear bombs? It will depend on the type. If it is Uranium 235, it can only be used to create the most primal fissure bomb. Also, it has to depend on the enrichment level of the Uranium 235. If hypothetically this batch can extract one hundred kilograms of enriched Uranium. Then with the technology level before the war, twelve nuclear bombs with ten thousand ton TNT can be created. If you're using technology from the early atomic era, out of 50 kilograms of enriched uranium, about 1 kilogram can complete the chain reaction, so approximately two bombs can be made."

"I see." Jiang Chen nodded his head as he continued to think.

"Do you want me to create nuclear bombs for you?"

"I have such a plan. Can you do it?"

The tactical nukes confiscated from the Sixth Street had been deployed to the corners of Qingpu on the W-1 ballistic missile. On the wasteland where resources were scarce, every time a nuclear weapon was used, it means there will be less and less of them on the apocalypse.

"One hundred lemon flavored puddings!" Lin Lin said without any hesitation.

"Deal," Jiang Chen said delightedly.

[That's cheap.]

Surprisingly, when Lin Lin heard Jiang Chen's promise, she didn't have her usual cheerful expression, but instead, she stared at Jiang Chen for a long time.

"I have to say something, this thing is poisonous."

Jiang Chen paused and then was silent.

After a brief moment, he said.

"I will be cautious with this."

"Mhmm, that's good." Lin Lin nodded. The porcelain doll-like face displayed a smile. "If possible, I want to keep eating the pudding you bring."

The unnatural light passing through the window for some reason made her gorgeous face carry a hint of poignancy.

This world was destroyed by nuclear weapons.

Jiang Chen looked away. He took out the black briefcase from the storage dimension and changed topics.

"Could you look at this for me?"

"This is?" Lin Lin looked at the briefcase on the table as she had a curious expression on her face.

"I found it on the German U boat... During the Second World War, the submarine from the axis countries, a unique piece of artifact."

"Oh? The Second World War? That's far back in history." Lin Lin took over the briefcase, her digitalized eyes slightly contracted as it scanned and examined the surface. She then asked, "What's unique about it?"

"It can send out Klein particle waves."

"That's impossible," Lin Lin immediately negated him as she opened the fourth-dimensional messenger on the table, "People in the atomic era can't even observe that dimension, how would they realize the existence of Klein particle-"

But before she could finish, her voice stopped.

No voice, just four letters.

[Help]

<Help>

"This, this is impossible... Wait, it is a half-finished product. No, even if it is a half-finished product, it is impossible for the technological level in the atomic era to achieve this," Lin Lin's eyes widened as she said in disbelief.

Looking at the shocked Lin Lin, Jiang Chen looked puzzled.

"Half-finished product? Could you explain it to me?"

When she heard Jiang Chen's question, Lin Lin glanced at him.

"Think carefully, when you use the fourth-dimensional messenger to communicate with me, would the strength of the signal change with location?"

"I don't think so."

"This is the problem." Lin Lin pointed at the briefcase, "The Klein particle transmitting in the fourth dimension would not have its signal changed because of the shift in three-dimensional coordinates. Or rather, it doesn't possess the physics properties such as energy or speed. It is only a hypothetical wave. It would receive a certain signal at a certain time, it is that simple."

"Could it be received in any corner of the universe?" Jiang Chen was stunned.

"It can. So it is also referred to as communication particle in the intergalactic era. Since with electromagnetic wave, there is a delay

of one second from earth to the moon, it would take over half a year to get to the Oort cloud at the edge of the solar system. Without the restriction of the third dimension, as long as it is broadcasted to the same time coordinate, the signal can be received in any corner of the universe. And even before the war, it was a project at the frontier of science. However, even for me now, I could only do this with two crystals with the same origin and communicate in the form of resonance," Lin Lin said.

Because it was too magical. Compared to the Klein particles, the electromagnetic wave was more similar to sending a message on a pigeon.

"Then why would the signal from this thing decrease with increasing distance?" Jiang Chen asked, confused.

"This is why it is a half-finished product. Or rather, the person producing it never understood the principle behind it. The person probably only followed a diagram to create something similar."

Lin Lin sighed, paused, and provided a rather simple analogy.

"For example, I have a phone, and I passed the phone back to the stone age and told him he can use this to call me. He never saw this before as they always used messenger pigeons to communicate and have no concept of communicating with a phone. So he used a dumb method, that is carving the letters onto the phone, and then relaying the message to me by tieing the phone to the messenger pigeon."

Jiang Chen had a funny expression on his face, but he suddenly realized something.

"Could it be the message from the future sent the diagram to create the fourth-dimensional messenger back. Someone used the diagram to create the communication device but didn't how to "call," so the person used electromagnetic waves to send it and broadcasted Klein particle waves into the third dimension.

"That's a possibility." Lin Lin didn't disagree with Jiang Chen's perspective. "Let's hypothetically say the video you showed me last time was a mature phase of the Klein particle communication technology. The friendly hello was the greeting from the people in the "future" or the "primal." At the same time of the greeting, it also brought you advanced technology. Along with the message would include the manufacturing method to create a Klein particle communication device."

"Those incredible technologies?"

Jiang Chen recollected the incredible technology the Third Reich brought out during the Second World war as Jiang Chen had a strange expression on his face.

"That's right." Lin Lin nodded. "Do you remember what I told you last night? Some people can interpret these signals in the form of dream with this special wave effect. But, these special brains could only passively receive information. Just like a deaf person on the phone, you would not know if the other side is listening to you speak. To be able to confirm if the people in the past received the information or not, what you need to do is simple, it is to send the

method of communication as well as coordinate along with it."

"Then did this "help" ever get heard by the people in the future?"

"Obviously not." Lin Lin sighed, she closed the fourth-dimensional messenger. "That person clearly overestimated the "primitive" ability to understand. Even the strongest pigeon would not fly through the distance of time."

Until its collapse, the Third Reich didn't manage to communicate with the voice in the future.

Jiang Chen didn't say anything as he quietly looked at the briefcase thinking about something else.

"Can I open this briefcase?" Lin Lin pointed at it.

"Of course, but I didn't manage to find the key to open it, so I am not sure if there is a trap mine inside." Jiang Chen shrugged.

"That is simple." Lin Lin had a prideful smile emerge on her face as she put the briefcase on her experiment table. "I am not that dumb to be tricked by the primal's trap."

There was no mine inside, it was easily opened.

A black metallic ball slightly bigger than a baseball along with a notebook was inside.

"This is..." Jiang Chen picked up the black ball and carefully observed its surface.

There was no opening on it as it didn't look like it could be opened. Jiang Chen managed to find a neat line of small letters on it.

"German?"

Jiang Chen was troubled as he knew only one foreign language.

"Use this." Lin Lin threw a translucent carbon graphene card into Jiang Chen's hand, "As long as the writing is not too messy, this thing can easily translate it into any common language."

"Woah, this is amazing!" Jiang Chen was stunned.

Looking at Jiang Chen's shocked expression, a glimpse of proudness appeared on the tip of Lin Lin's lips.

She enjoyed viewing his "primal" reaction. It made her feel like a God, any "offering" would gain the worship of her "believers."

However, she didn't make it as it was the scavenger team who managed to pick it up. She only fixed it up.

Usually, things like this would be thrown into the extraction

tank and recycled for useful material, since the apocalypse didn't require translation. But the reason why she fixed it was due to Yao Yao's request since as a digitalized human, Lin Lin herself didn't need it.

"The Golden Apple?" After attaching the translation card to the line of small writing, Jiang Chen read out loud.

It was a pure black metallic ball, why would it be called the Golden Apple?

"Let me look at it, you can go read that notebook." Lin Lin took the golden apple from Jiang Chen's hand as she couldn't wait to work on an experimental apparatus.

Jiang Chen understood why she couldn't wait another second.

This feeling was as if a cell phone was found in a grave dated back to the Han dynasty.

Jiang Chen picked up the notebook and opened the cover.

A diary.

Perhaps the secret is hidden inside his diary.

Chapter 279: The Golden Apple

April 13, 1945, rain.

It was raining in Berlin.

The expression on everyone's face was gloomy, just like the clouds above the Berlin sky.

There was tragic news from afar. After a few days of intense battle on the streets, Vienna had finally fallen to the hands of the Soviets. At the same time, Koenigsberg had also fallen, those polar bears have finally achieved the dream they didn't manage to accomplish for a few centuries - claim the capital of East Prussia.

There has been no good news from the east line for a long time. The same was happening to the west line.

Anyone knew it was the end of the Reich.

As a soldier, excuse me for making too many comments on the fate of the Reich, but from a husband, a father perspective, I would rather the Americans arrive in Berlin first.

God, what am I even saying?

April 14, fog.

It was foggy. Perhaps it is going to turn sunny soon.

There was good news. Whether the east line or the west line, they didn't send back any worse news.

There was no better news than this. But everyone knew, this was the quietness before the storm.

In the morning, I received an order for a position change.

Should I say the moment finally came? Even though I took on an office role, this is the moment I have to carry a rifle and shed my last blood for the Reich?

Things didn't go as I had planned, you would never guess who I saw.

In the Berlin presidential building's basement, I saw the glorious leader!

I could not describe the excitement in my heart. I haven't heard his inspiring speech for a long time. A lot of people said that he ran away with his mistress, but at that moment, all the rumors were wrong. He was still in Berlin! He still stood with us.

Although his face looked wrier compared to the last time he

appeared in public, his voice still remained inspiring.

He chatted with me for half an hour and asked me a lot of things. It was hard to believe a nobody like me deserved a meeting with him. I sat face to face with the magnificent him and talked about the history of Berlin.

When the topic came to an end, he asked me about my loyalty.

I said, "If you need me, I can carry my gun to fight for you to the death now. Whether it is the east side or the west side."

He said, "Rather than death, I have a more important mission to give you."

Hard to believe, the great leader personally granted me the iron cross emblem.

I was anxious. I didn't achieve anything in the army, and I am not even a soldier in the frontline. What do I have in me to receive such an honor?

But his words eliminated all of my concerns.

"If you can complete the mission I am about to give you, your contribution to the Third Reich will be deserving of this emblem."

I took the locked briefcase he gave to me.

Then, I was taken out of the basement.

I didn't even get to see my wife and daughter for the last time. I got on the Me262B booster jet and flew to Norway.

To be honest, I didn't want to see them for the last time. Because I already have the feeling that this might be a one-way trip.

...

April 15, sunny.

Perhaps, this will be my last time recording the weather in this diary, at least in the upcoming few months.

We headed out from the depth of the sea along with the U-234 in different directions while aiming for the same destination - far east, Japan.

The moment when I boarded the submarine, I realized the critical nature of the circumstance.

There were 14 people including me. All of them were important people, with the lowest level being a Sargent. If it was not for the iron cross emblem, I don't even know if they would even look at me as a person. But funny enough, no one paid attention to the emblem in front of me, but instead seemed to be more interested in

the briefcase in my hand.

Based on etiquette, everyone introduced themselves. Air force commander, land force colonel, vessel cannon specialist... I was just a communication soldier.

God, they are the elites of the Reich, why would they be here? Sitting with a nobody like me, taking the U boat to execute a mission to send a "message"?

...

April 20.

Based on what the captain said, we are navigating in the north Atlantic ocean heading to the south Atlantic ocean.

Because we were in the sea, someone finally stood up to describe the mission details.

This submarine contained the peek of the Third Reich military technology, such as the diagrams and parts of the V2 rockets, "Junke " jet engine, Tiger tank drawings, Me-262 fighter's all parts and design prints.

These military technologies and weapon samples will be taken to Tokyo.

As to the ten barrels, the captain didn't really know either. He just categorized them as a raw material used for some kind of weapon.

The atmosphere in the submarine was silent. People whispered amongst each other, or rather spend the time sleeping to decrease the time awake. The only person willing to speak to me was a nuclear physicist named Fabian. Although I didn't understand what nuclear physics exactly is, it didn't interfere with our friendship.

He said, in this environment, only when people chat with people could they maintain a healthy mind. I agree with his perspective. When I am not writing in the diary, we will talk about other things.

...

April 22.

Today we talked about nuclear physics, although I have absolutely no idea what it is.

U-235. Based on what Fabian said, it is an ominous set of letter and numbers. It was the code for this U boat, as well as the shortened form of Uranium 235.

I didn't know what Uranium 235 stood for, and I only heard him say it. This thing can be used to create a powerful bomb. He told

me mysteriously if we could bring this ten barrels of uranium to Japan, we can change history.

I scoffed at the comment, even without going on the battlefield, I knew that a few bombs would not change the victor of the battle. If it could, we already would have done it. We sent at least ten thousand rounds of shells to London.

"But this bomb is different compared to the other ones."

"Is that so? What about the V2 rocket?"

Fabian laughed contemptuously.

"It is comparable to the combined total of all V1, and V2 rockets launched to London."

Okay, I think he is a little insane now.

...

May 4.

The situation is becoming worse.

The Goliath signal station responsible for providing direction for us suddenly lost communication. Immediately, the main navy

signal station in Berlin Nahn had also lost contact.

With the intermittent reception of telegrams, the most worrisome thing we feared still happened.

Germany already announced its surrendering, the Reich's navy commander Dunnitz had ordered all U boats to immediately surface, put out the white flag and surrender to the Ally force.

Everyone was silent.

Someone suggested this may be a conspiracy set up by the allies' intelligence department. But someone pointed out, it may be the cause, since the moment when they boarded the submarine, Berlin was already in a dire situation.

The co-captain suggested opening radio silence to confirm the validity of the information. But the captain didn't accept his proposal as he ordered to continue.

U-235 is not part of the force as it directly listened to the order of the leader, there was no need to listen to Dunnitz. The destination is Tokyo.

Regardless, the submarine continued to cruise. But I could clearly sense, not everyone was pleased with the order, including the captain himself.

...

May 10.

We just sailed by Argentina as we entered the Pacific ocean from the most southern tip of South America.

By now, we should finally escape the allies fleet chasing us.

But no one feels happy about this good news.

Germany already surrendered, but we are the soldiers of Germany, is there a point for us to continue fighting?

Perhaps we should surrender to the nearby ally force, as long as we are careful not to meet the British, the Americans should let us go home. Since we didn't commit any crimes, the U boat since its departure didn't even fire a single torpedo.

...

May 11.

Another unfortunate thing happened, but it was not from outside the submarine, it was from inside the submarine.

Someone died. It was Lieutenant Colonel Bertrand. He overdosed on sleeping pills. It was a suicide.

...

May 14.

When I was writing this diary, Fabian had gone insane. He was muttering something repeatedly

I didn't understand his insane words. "This is not physics. We made a mistake since the start." "It is not a particle, no, it is not even tangible." "It is not that the current technology can't detect it, it doesn't exist in the first place."

He found me and confessed to me that he is the owner of the key, he pleaded me to take out that briefcase.

I rejected him, the leader's mission for me is to take it to Tokyo, before that, no one can open this briefcase.

Seeing my firm attitude, he didn't insist.

...

June 1.

We should have arrived in Okinawa ten days ago, and then on route to Tokyo in safe territory

But an accident occurred.

When we arrived in South Pacific ocean, we opened radio silence, but what welcome us was not the Japanese navy, but rather the fault of the American.

The side of the submarine was hit, but fortunately, we escaped.

It looks like Japan lost to the US in the Pacific war. Pessistimicly, Okinawa may have shifted hands already.

...

June 2.

The captain found Fabian.

"If we can send this 520 kilograms of Uranium to Tokyo, would it change the outcome of the war?"

Fabian didn't answer directly.

"Even if the US lost New York in a month, would that change the outcome of the war?"

The captain was silent. Anyone knew that by this point in the

war, the conclusion could not be changed by a city.

"What about that briefcase?"

Fabian shook his head.

"It is too late."

...

June 4.

To avoid the search of anti-submarine reconnaissance aircrafts, we had to change course to New Zealand.

Someone said there are ample amount of supplies on the boat. Perhaps we should find a small island to spend the rest of our lives.

But someone rebutted that point. Not everyone committed war crimes, a lot of people still have family desperately wanting to know about their safety.

Finally, the Allied forces made a decision for us.

At the Small Barrier Island, we were surrounded by three vessels.

Should we surrender or fight to the death?

Surprisingly, the captain asked for my opinion, he didn't talk to me since I boarded the submarine.

To be honest, I have a beautiful wife and an adorable daughter. I don't want to die, I felt ashamed to the iron cross emblem in front of me, but I chose to surrender.

When he heard my thoughts, the captain let out a breath of relief.

As if the heavy weight on his shoulders had finally been lifted, he even said thank you to me.

...

June 5.

An unsuspected rebellion.

The captain died, due to a gunshot.

Fabian died, he killed himself.

Only seven people remained on the boat. Other than me, all of them are war criminals. Someone suggested to execute me because I betrayed the will of the leader. But someone suggested, no need to execute me, I only needed to be locked up.

The people against the surrendering suggested driving the submarine into the Hauraki Bay, going the opposite way to escape the search.

Fortunately, we found a trench near the Jackson port. As long as we hide there, no one will find us.

The supplies are enough to hide until the end of the year, once the period of time has passed, we'll land in Australia and spend the rest our life in anonymous.

...

That was the end of the diary.

On the last page, there was a sketch of the iron cross emblem drawn in pencil, the final note on the diary was neatly written in cursive, which was primarily used at the time. With the help of the translator, Jiang Chen read the final line of the journey.

<In honor of my past country - Elias>

The U-235 that contained the lost hope of the Third Reich ended up sinking in the trench for eternity, the diary didn't record the reason why the submarine sank. But what Jiang Chen knew was, the person named Elias definitely opened the briefcase.

Or else this diary wouldn't have appeared in this briefcase.

Based on the content of the diary, Jiang Chen could have guessed that perhaps he knew it was the end of him. Hitler put all the hope to the uncooperative ally in the far east. He threw the peak of German military technologies into the submarine and even the briefcase that could "communicate with aliens".

But this U-235 didn't manage to turn the wheel of history.

Two months later, the US ended the war with two nuclear bombs.

"Do you know what this ball is?" Lin Lin let out a long breath as she finished analyzing the metallic ball inside the briefcase.

"What is it?" Jiang Chen could sense that this thing probably has something to do with the incredible technology the German has introduced.

And that "help," probably was the plead for help to the people from the "future."

"A Klein particle messenger." Lin Lin pointed at the small words engraved on the ball, "Although it was crudely made, it could send out Klein particle waves, but it is doing futile work by broadcasting it into space."

"What's special about it?"

"Did you remember what I told you before? Every carbon-based creature possesses trace amount of Klein particle and it is usually stored in the back of its head."

"Therefore?" Jiang Chen seemed to have realized something as his body began to feel cold.

Lin Lin inhaled..

"An entire metallic ball worth of brain extract, this is an artificially created crystal... using ten thousand people's brains."

Ten thousand people...

To only send out the "help" that will never be heard.

"This is insane."

"And what shocked me the most is not the ten thousand lives." Lin Lin paused. "The destination coordinate for the message is from the void."

"What is the void?"

"To put it simply, it is a place behind the wormhole, where space, time, and all physic principles are non-existent."

"Therefore?"

"Do you remember the story I told you about the six space colonization ships? Three of them headed into the wormhole."

Chapter 280: Whoever begs is a puppy

Behind the wormhole is the void, and the void has no concept of time. Regardless how long the three space colonization ships have been lost for, as long as they can finally escape, then to the outside world, from the moment they entered to their escape was only a glimpse.

But what was sent to Jiang Chen's world was only a message, not three space colonization ships from the future.

Based on that fact, Lin Lin only had one hypothesis.

The three space colonization ships have been trapped in the void for eternity, they have become relative to the wormhole outside the universe, the quantum state of the general existence - not alive, nor died.

As to the messages sent, it would be easy to understand sending the technology from the future back.

The purpose was to change the history after World War Two to avoid the Third World War from happening.

Based on what Lin Lin has said, in the history of the apocalypse, they entered the atomic era after the Second World War. The Americans ended the war, not because of the two nuclear bombs, but rather executing "Mission Olympics" they landed on Japan's southernmost island of Kyushu, and then pushed to the main island.

It was an amphibious landing that was even larger than the Normandy Landing. With 15 Army divisions and 63 Air Force brigades from the European theater, in addition to the Pacific theater forces. With the air and ocean advantage, the Allied force indeed bulldozed through Japan.

However, in Japan's crazy "local decisive battle" strategy, the Western countries paid a heavy price. It laid the foundation for the Soviet Union's vitality and the rise of the Pan-Asian Cooperation (PAC).

But in Jiang Chen's world history, that battle never occurred.

Regardless, that message did change history.

Unfortunately, this world didn't change the slightest. The effort of the three space colonization ships has all been based on the premise of MWi theory (parallel cosmic theory) which is not valid.

But unfortunately, Jiang Chen's existence happened to provide evidence for the validity of the MWi theory.

The three space colonization ships exiled to the wormhole only changed the history of another parallel timeline.

The two worlds were two never intercepting parallels.

If Jiang Chen didn't appear here, the people in this world (Lin Lin) wouldn't even have known someone attempted to change history.

...

The golden apple was temporarily kept by Lin Lin.

Although it was a crude form of work, it was the technology from the void. Although the "primitive" could not understand the intricacy of the technology, Lin Lin could.

This Golden Apple was like an advanced blueprint engraved on a stone wall. If Lin Lin could absorb the technology here, she would make great progress in the field of Klein particle.

Jiang Chen followed Lin Lin's command to bring the uranium to the basement of the mansion. The uranium will be used to create nuclear bombs, manufactured into ballistic missiles by Jiang Lin, then taken by Jiang Chen to the modern world and deployed in Pannu Islands.

After taking care of the uranium, Jiang Chen went back to Jiang Lin's lab as he picked up the fixed kinetic skeleton.

Putting on the suit, Jiang Chen lied on the bed and started to travel.

The immense pressure of the deep sea returned.

After he resisted the initial discomfort, he gradually got used to the feeling.

He pushed away the giant octopus body floating in water, he passed through the cabin door and swam towards the direction of the exit. The containers along the way must be the parts of the booster jet and V2 rocket. In the Second World War era, the technologies were deserving of the recognition as incredible. But now, they could only be considered artifacts.

And artifacts that could bring trouble.

Based on this layer of consideration, Jiang Chen didn't bring these artifacts. He had a feeling there were a lot of people still searching for the lost Golden Apple. Only the Third Reich received the information from the future.

It was better for these things to stay here eternally.

At the crack of the submarine, Jiang Chen saw the skeleton again.

In front of the uniform hanged an iron cross emblem.

He must be the Elias, the Third Reich communication soldier given the last mission.

After hesitating for a moment, Jiang Chen took off the already rusted emblem.

"Rest in peace."

He muttered to himself before he turned around.

After swimming out of the submarine, Jiang Chen adjusted his body position, pressed the button on his right arm, and activated the booster on his back.

A large quantity of small but dense bubbles burst out. With the high-pressure thrust, Jiang Chen's elevation quickly increased as he headed for the surface.

The pressure surrounding him began to decrease before finally disappearing.

"Phew!"

After returning to the sea surface, Jiang Chen opened his helmet as he breathed the fresh air with his mouth wide open.

It was already approaching dusk.

Without noticing, he spent almost an entire day under the sea.

After looking around, Jiang Chen had a bitter smile on his face.

The boat he just bought this morning was nowhere to be seen.

...

It was not a wise decision to head to the sea by himself. Without anyone watching the boat, the boat would be pushed away by the waves in no time.

But fortunately, he was not too far away from the Jackson port.

He maintained a depth of two meters and opened the booster before he swimming to the nearest land.

Before it was dark, Jiang Chen landed on a quiet beach.

After putting the kinetic skeleton into the storage dimension and changing into dry clothes, Jiang Chen took out his phone to confirm his location. Then he walked to the direction of Jackson bay.

He took a ferry back to Auckland.

When Jiang Chen arrived at the Sheraton hotel, it was already seven at night.

"Why are you back so late? I had spent the entire day in the hotel, so boring," Seeing Jiang Chen return, Liu Yao on the bed pouted her mouth and said coyly.

"I was dealing with something, but I am done. You can't have spent the entire day staying inside the hotel scrolling through Weibo right?" Jiang Chen sat down by the bed as he slapped her curvy butt.

"No, I also played some <New Era>." Liu Yao shook the phone screen while giggling. "I only just wanted to try, but it is actually entertaining. How did you think of such a fun game?"

"The intelligence of a team," Jiang Chen laughed and answered ambiguously.

Liu Yao laughed and covered her mouth, but she pouted again.

She sluggishly adjusted to a different position. Her luscious black hair had spread out on the bed from her shoulder. Then she put her face beside Jiang Chen's.

"So annoying, I have to go back tomorrow. I want to spend more time with you."

"Oh? Then stay here." Jiang Chen laughed nonchalantly.

"What about the movie?" Liu Yao rolled her eyes at Jiang Chen cutely.

"Skip it."

With a blushing face, Liu Yao was tempted for one moment before she shook her head.

"Nah, I'll go back. If I stay, I feel like I might delay your important tasks."

Jiang Chen paused, he looked at the moonlight in her crystal clear eyes.

"Thank you."

Jiang Chen said softly into Liu Yao's ear.

"No need to thank me." Liu Yao naughtily bit Jiang Chen's ear, "Compensate me."

The warm air that breezed by his ear lit up an intimate fire.

A smirk appeared on Jiang Chen's face.

"Compensate? Can your body handle it?" While he said that, his hand slipped down to her waist.

"What would you know without trying?" Liu Yao glanced at Jiang

Chen seductively as she pouted.

"If you beg, you are a puppy," Jiang Chen said with a smirk.

"Fine..." Liu Yao said in defense.

...

Two hours later.

The "bark bark" sound mixed with embarrassment and intimacy diffused through the bedroom. The melodious and sweet voice lingered.

Chapter 281: Fuse

The next morning, Jiang Chen sent Liu Yao on the plane.

Along the way, other than when they were in the taxi, Liu Yao held onto Jiang Chen’s arm with her body almost dangling onto his.

Their "intimate" stance made all those passing by, glance at them.

The reason why Liu Yao was this clingy was not due to some impure reason, but because Jiang Chen made her too tired last night.

Till now, her legs were still quivering.

"Didn’t we agree that if I barked, I surrender?" Liu Yao almost tripped as she pinched Jiang Chen’s waist out of embarrassment.

Whenever she remembered she had to pretend to be a puppy and bark, she felt flustered and ashamed.

"Haha, sorry, that voice was too attractive." Jiang Chen let the hand pinch freely around his waist as he smirked, "Also, did I say even if you surrender, I will let you go?"

"Pervert." Liu Yao rolled her eyes at the grinning Jiang Chen as

she stopped in front of the boarding gate.

She combed her hair to the side, used all the power in her body to stand up straight, tipped her toe, and pecked on Jiang Chen’s lips.

"Remember to miss me."

"Mhmm."

It was not a long goodbye; there was no need for words.

Liu Yao picked up her small luggage. She left, but her heart remained.

Jiang Chen looked at the flight depart; he smiled at the clouds in the distance before the smile gradually returned to calmness.

"Now that the vacation is over, time to work."

Jiang Chen shook his head as he left the airport.

He didn’t return to the hotel but took a taxi to the rural area.

In a park, Jiang Chen spotted Zhang Yapin in a black tee, looking around on the bench.

"Why did you choose to meet in the park? I rather sit in a coffee

shop and chat slowly with a cup of coffee." Sitting on the other side of the bench, Jiang Chen sat nonchalantly.

"Because of privacy," Zhang Yapin's expression looked tense, but his voice was calm.

"You are overthinking things. This is New Zealand, not Pannu." Looking at his anxiousness, Jiang Chen sighed.

He originally thought the Pannu opposing party would take a week to give him a response, but from the looks of it, they couldn't wait anymore.

"It is always better to be careful."

Jiang Chen shrugged without denying. Then he dove right into the topic.

"Since you are here, then your response must be yes. Am I correct?"

"Yes, we don't have any other choices," Zhang Yapin nodded as he squeezed those words out with difficulty.

"Before we discuss the support agreement. Can I know what caused you to decide so quickly?" Jiang Chen smiled.

When he heard Jiang Chen's words, Zhang Yapin fell into

silence.

"It is blood."

He slowly told Jiang Chen the story.

Two days ago, just when he returned to the Pannu Island, the political situation began to deteriorate.

Everything was because of a Han's arrival.

Wang Tianfeng, Linhua Group. The business representative stationed on Pannu Islands. This Han businessman seemed to have a great conversation with Johnny as they appeared in multiple important occasions standing side by side while investigating the investment environment, and finally signed an agreement known as the fuse.

President Edward sold the area along the sea of Coro Island as well as the majority of the island on the second biggest island Edgar Island at a price of 5 USD per square meter to Johnny International. Linhua Group will be responsible for building the tourism area and necessary infrastructure. The one hundred million USD in land sales, only half of it flowed into the treasury, while the other fifty million USD flowed into Edward’s account in New Zealand.

The confiscation of land caused a large number of farmers and fishers to lose their homes. The compensation of 2 USD per square

meter was not enough to cover their loss.

The dissatisfaction caused unrest, and the war hawk of the Liberal party saw this as an opportunity as they stood up in such a dangerous moment. They called for the farmers and fishers who lost their land to protest in front of the presidential palace.

But would Edward care? In the position where there was no hope. His status being lower than a city official in New Zealand, he still managed to gain almost one hundred million. It was worth it for him.

God, the GDP of Pannu Island was barely one hundred million USD a year; the tax income was less than one hundred million.

With the amount of money he has received, he could easily go to any corner of the world and become a wealthy man after the end of his term. He wanted to go to Britain. Although he had an English heritage, he has never been there before.

Just as he pretended to persuade the public to remain calm, an unlucky young man threw a soggy banana at his face.

Edward was enraged.

Especially when listening to those "natives'" outrageous laughter while they worshipped the young man like a warrior.

The next second that young man was lying in a pool of blood.

Seeing the smoke coming from the muzzle of the soldier beside the president, everyone was shocked.

No one expected a peaceful protest would turn into violence.

The flat-headed "chief" military tank was a gift given by Britain to the Pannu Island government, the only heavy military equipment on the island. During the eighties, Britain finally remembered the fallen behind little brother as they engaged in negotiations for them to join the British Commonwealth. The talk happened to occur when the British army was replacing its arms. Thus the challenger I replaced the "chief" from the sixties, so the scrapped tank was given as a gift to the Pannu Island government.

Although the talk to join the British Commonwealth ultimately failed.

The Pannu Island people didn’t think that the enraged Edward would use violence against the protestors.

Blood stained the street.

Guns and cannons drove the protestors away.

15 died, 57 were injured. As the leader of the protest Pannu Liberal Party also experienced bloody suppression and arrest.

As to the promised compensation, Edward didn’t pay a single cent.

"He is a devil." Zhang Yapin was shaking from anger.

Jiang Chen paused for a moment as he thought with his eyes closed.

"What’s your plan?"

"We need five million USD to buy rifles, anti-tank weapons, and ammunition." Zhang Yapin took a deep breath as the words slowly came out of his mouth.

"No problem. Do you have the channels to purchase the weapons?" Jiang Chen asked in a low voice.

"We contacted a UA citizen; his name is Robert-"

"No no no. It is better for you not to disclose these names, including mine. I don’t want to see you telling everyone that "Jiang Chen funded us, the president of Future Technology", Jiang Chen immediately interrupted Zhang Yapin’s words.

After pausing for a moment, he nodded in realization as he said apologetically.

"Sorry, I didn’t consider things properly. I hope you..."

"I will keep this a secret, when do you plan to start?" Jiang Chen asked.

Everything was within his control.

"Once the fund is in place," Zhang Yapin said in an undertone.

"Do you have a plan?" Jiang Chen asked in a light voice.

"We organized 400 civil soldiers. Once we are equipped with weapons, we will attack the military camp on Coro Island. Once we capture the armory, we will use the equipment in the armory to equip more citizens. That bastard Edward must face the anger of the Pannu people!" Zhang Yapin said gritting his teeth.

It was obvious it was the first time for him to rebel. Who would so easily disclose their plan?

Even with the investor.

After listening to his plan, Jiang Chen nodded. Then he took out his phone.

"The money has arrived, you can start."

Zhang Yaping was shocked, he didn’t think Jiang Chen would be so decisive.

"Is there no need to sign a contract-"

"No." Jiang Chen shook his head. "You can discuss things with me after you win. I believe you will keep your promise. For the freedom of humanity, go, young man."

Jiang Chen patted him on the shoulder.

Zhang Yapin looked graciously at Jiang Chen as he nodded sincerely.

"I will keep my promise. Pannu's new government will not forget the people that helped them."

"That's enough, go on." Jiang Chen waved his hand.

Agreement? To a government still in its infancy, it was no different than a verbal agreement. Especially since Jiang Chen didn't care for the benefits the new Pannu government would bring him, but rather the benefits he would gain from the civil war.

Once Zhang Yapin's taxi was far enough, Jiang Chen stood up from the bench.

He didn't put the phone way. Instead, he called Robert.

Chapter 282: We are an Army

After calling Robert and notifying him to begin the next steps, Jiang Chen called the mercenary base in Niger and asked Ivan to take a few of his comrades to meet him in Pannu Islands.

After finishing the two calls, Jiang Chen returned to the hotel and booked a plane ticket to Pannu Islands.

Before the Liberal Party's official uprise, he still had some preparations to do.

...

The Pannu Islands airport was still as empty as usual. Although a deepwater port had recently been built, which brought some noise to the island far away from international affairs, the outdated infrastructure, as well as the small population, made it hard to see unfamiliar faces on the island.

Especially since the political situation had deteriorated as of late, the investment prospect for this place had significantly decreased.

Although the ten billion USD development plan drew the attention of many capitalists, the project had just begun. Additionally, if the political unrest resulting from the confiscation of land could be solved through peaceful measures was still unknown.

If they followed the investment, once the protest escalated to military conflict, not only would the project go down the drain, the agreement they signed with the old political regime would also become scrap paper.

Before the situation clears up, the cunning international capitals would not make a rushed decision. Only when the opposing party or current regime was at an advantageous position would it be the best opportunity to bet.

Despite all the negative influences, there were still a few people in the airport.

They were mostly reporters from the "Free World." Although they have never heard of this secluded island, it didn't stop them from commenting on the human rights and corruption problem on the island.

But something was odd inside the airport today.

Approximately fifteen strange faces with luggage walked through the empty airport terminal. They stood up among the rest of the people.

Their muscular bodies, sharp steps, grimacing vibe, from these points alone, their identity were not ordinary.

Future Security Company was their identity. The person leading was the chief trainer Ivan, the other fourteen were "outstanding"

employees.

To the not-so-friendly looking group, the staff at the airport began to focus their attention on them. However, none of them went up to question the group. After checking their documents procedurally, the staff let them pass through customs.

The only two security guards at the airport were given pistols to keep peace on the streets. Regardless of the intentions of these people, the country's situation couldn't get worse.

In front of the airport parked five Senators.

Pannu Islands' transportation was terrible. No metro, no public transit, there weren't even taxis. To exaggerate, it was hard to see a single car on the road.

After seeing the oriental face leaning against the car, Ivan's aged face smiled.

"Buddy, we meet again." Jiang Chen extended his right hand and laughed.

"Long time no see, boss. Haha." The Slavic soldier shook Jiang Chen's hand furiously as he grinned.

In only four months, he was a shade darker. His entire body smelled of sand.

As well as chaos.

"Let's talk on the car." Jiang Chen waved his hand and signaled the soldiers behind him to head to the cars.

Precisely speaking, they were all guards from Future Security.

Because of the deterioration of the Pannu Islands' current regime, Jiang Chen used this excuse and submitted a request to hire foreign securities to the Pannu government to prevent damage to his asset. The reason was not relevant. They used the usual routine of stuffing a bag full of money before the visa was approved in the same afternoon.

16 people; five cars. Although it was a bit tight, everyone still managed to fit.

Behind Jiang Chen's car, the others cars lined up together and headed towards Jiang Chen's import and export company in Coro Island.

"How was your stay in Nigeria?" Jiang Chen held on the steering wheel as he asked Ivan, the head trainer.

"Not bad. Those little guys finally had their claws sharpened. I remember when they first came, they couldn't even hold their gun steady. But now, they have learned how to kill people." With proudness on his face, Ivan lowered the car window as he lit up a

cigarette.

"Did they head onto the battlefield?" Jiang Chen asked in surprise.

"Mhmm, we engaged in battle with the guerrillas." Ivan blew out the smoke ring as he grinned, "Do you still remember the Tuareg Clan?"

"Of course, Robert and I had a friendly visit with them." Jiang Chen shrugged.

AK, camels, and the disgusting camel milk. It was the only impressions Jiang Chen had to that poor and outdated clan.

"But they are not friendly." Ivan dusted the cigarette outside the window as he continued, "A month ago, they were asking us for money, fresh water, and bullets, but I rejected them. That night, the guerrillas pretended to be Al Queda raiding us."

"And then?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"They left twenty bodies." Jiang Chen cracked a smile. "I have to say, boss, the rifle you provided is great. Even if it was in a sandstorm, it didn't malfunction once, and the penetration power was insane."

"Of course, it is a customized weapon." Jiang Chen said. He also added in his mind, it is the rifle from the future after all.

Ivan shrugged as he didn't continue the conversation about the weapon. He knew his boss has a mysterious background, so he didn't ask more.

"What about the Niger side? Did they express anything?"

"Nothing. Their soldiers are a bunch of cowards and are afraid to bother the uneducated citizens in the deserts. The Barkary guy you hired reported to the minister of commerce about this, but the Niger government suggested that they restrain their military force within their jurisdiction. They ended up not taking a side as they sent a representative in an attempt to negotiate peace. Offending us would be saying no to the dollar, offending that uncivilized tribe would be going against the security of the country." Ivan narrowed his eyes as he looked at the subtropical sceneary outside the window.

"In the end? Did the Tuareg natives compromise?"

"Obviously not." Ivan burst out laughing, "But they were smarter. They knew they couldn't win alone, so they dragged the terrorists in with an extremely ambiguous relationship. RPG, Toyota pickup truck, machine guns... But their attempts were useless. In firepower, we wouldn't lose to them.

"Were there casualties?"

"Of course." As Ivan said this, he eyes remained squinted into the distance.

Jiang Chen didn't expect casualties to occur.

Jiang Chen glanced at him but didn't blame this on him.

Although people died, a group of warriors who have been through the flames of war came out of it, it was the fortunate situation out of the unfortunate event.

"What about the family of the casualties?" Jiang Chen asked lightly.

"In the base. Since they just lost their husband, if we force them away-" Hearing Jiang Chen ask about the families, Ivan was afraid that Jiang Chen would be displeased with his treatment as he rushed to explain.

"No, you did a great job," Jiang Chen interrupted his words.

Ivan let out a breath of relief when he heard Jiang Chen say that.

Although he looked down on the refugees that always complained about everything they did, after months of training, it would be unfair to say he didn't develop a relationship with them. Especially when they were attacked by the guerrillas, they fought together.

"To be honest, I was worried that you would kick them out from

the base. Since from a company's point of view, they are extraneous." Ivan smiled bitterly.

"Don't be mistaken, Ivan. I never said Future Security is a company." Jiang Chen smiled, he looked at Ivan and said seriously, "We are an army."

Chapter 283: Celestial Trade

Coro Island was the main island located on the southernmost tip of the Pannu Islands. Northwest of the island was Country F, and southwest of it was Australia and New Guinea. Finally, to the direct south was New Zealand.

The only airport in the country was situated on Coro Island. On the southernmost tip of this island was also the only deep water harbor of the country-built by Johnny International at the cost of over a million USD.

Typically speaking, these massive deepwater harbors would have a ring of factories surrounding it. But with the pillar industries of Pannu Islands being fishery and farming, the commonality didn't seem to apply.

Beside the deepwater harbor was only three warehouses.

A brown-skinned local was chewing on a sugarcane as he sat outside the outermost warehouse, guarding the door.

His name is Cassan, a native of the Pannu Islands. He wasn't well educated, but he could do the job of a security guard very well. His daily task was to sit in front of the warehouse, guard the phone, help when goods need to be offloaded, and chew on sugarcane when there was nothing to do.

When the five Senatas stopped in front of the gate, the young man glanced enviously at the cars a few times before throwing

away the sugarcane in his mouth and walking towards them.

"Celestial Trade, this is my company here," Jiang Chen introduced to Ivan as they got off the car.

Though it was only a shell company with a security guard. All the business was outsourced to elsewhere.

"Celestial? That's a weird name," Looking at the letters on the giant warehouse, Ivan exclaimed.

As they chit-chatted, the security guard Cassan walked in front of them and smiled at Jiang Chen.

"Boss, why are you here?"

Jiang Chen arrived in the Pannu Islands two days ago but he had been busy with other things, so it was his first time here. Seeing the boss here personally, Cassan was very surprised.

"Nothing, just open the door for me."

"Which one?"

"Warehouse three."

"Okay, okay!" Cassan nodded as he immediately took out the key

and ran to open the metal gate.

After sending Cassan outside, Jiang Chen signaled Ivan and the crew to walk into the warehouse and stand in front of a container.

After dragging the container open, there was a row of automatic rifles inside.

It was not the reaper rifles he brought back from the apocalypse, they were the standard M series assault rifles common on the black market, and also the civilian type.

"Mission?" Ivan immediately put on a serious expression.

The 14 people behind him also lined up waiting for Jiang Chen's order.

"Don't be anxious, there is still some time before the show really starts. This mission is only a warm-up." Jiang Chen signaled them not to be too tense.

Jiang Chen cleared his throat and pointed at the weapons in the container.

"Considering the deterioration of the Pannu Islands' political situation, for the time being, the security of these warehouses will depend on you. There are 15 gun licenses in the container. I requested it through a special channel from the current regime. You can use them once you write your name on the licenses. To

people attempting to break into the warehouses, first time fire a warning shot, second time shooting is permitted.

"Yes!" Ivan answered affirmatively.

As to Jiang Chen's mission, he had no other questions, as was the same for the soldiers behind him.

Jiang Chen nodded. He was delighted by the veteran's attitude.

"There are materials here to construct a temporary camp. All in all, the security here will be up to you."

"Leave it to us." Ivan smiled.

He then cleanly turned around, looked at his comrades, and shouted at the top of his lungs.

"Did you understand the mission!"

"Understood!" 14 uniform responses roared thunderously.

"Get moving!"

"Yes! Sir!"

...

After seeing Jiang Chen come out, Cassan strolled over in fearful steps.

"Boss, who are they?"

He heard all the noise inside the warehouse.

"The security company I hired. You don't need to mind them, just do your usual routine. Don't peek at things you shouldn't peek at and don't say things you shouldn't say. Just remember these two points and you are good to go."

Cassan gulped and fiercely nodded. Then he replied with unease.

"Mhmm."

He only wanted to find a comfortable job; he didn't want any trouble. He could receive a wage of 10 USD per day by being bored and chewing on sugarcane while sitting in front of the warehouse's door, it was like a dream come true.

Knowing that the young man wouldn't find trouble for himself, Jiang Chen didn't say too much about confidentiality.

"Give me the spare key to the warehouse."

Cassan immediately took off a set of keys from his waist and

handed them to Jiang Chen.

"You can go home early today." Jiang Chen took the key as he patted him on the shoulder.

"Yes." Cassan nodded as he was smart enough to not ask about anything more. He picked up the sugarcane he didn't finish before heading home.

Seeing Cassan walk away, Jiang Chen walked to warehouse one.

Jiang Chen dragged open the metal door and looked at the goods inside. A smile surfaced on his face.

Five hundred square meters of space was stuffed by all kinds of containers.

There were dairy products from Australia, airtight-sealed meat, and canned food manufactured by Xinlong Food Processing Plant. Pork, lamb, and other kinds of fresh meat were stuffed in ten giant freezers. The bags of rice piled into a small mountain.

"Woah, with the average height being two meters, this is at least over one thousand tons of food." Jiang Chen looked at the mountain-high pile of food and was shocked.

Estimating one pound of food a day, one thousand tons of food could last half a million people for one month. Compared to the population on Sixth Street of less than fifty thousand, Fishbone

base could barely break the one thousand mark even with the increase in population.

Not only would the daily consumption for over half a year be solved, but this quantity would also be enough to supply their trading needs.

The good thing was Jiang Chen is overseas. If this batch of food disappeared in Han, there would definitely be some problems.

Jiang Chen didn't immediately start transporting. Instead, he went out and opened warehouse two.

Warehouse two stored the equally scarce salt on the wasteland.

The salt need for Wanghai mostly depended on the survival camps such as Liuding near the coast, but the production quantity was low. Because of the limitation in production, the quality of salt was also not high. It was against the law to store salt on a large scale, but on the volatile Pannu Islands, it was not a big deal.

Other than containers full of salt, there were beers, fruits, and fish produced locally.

These products were custom made. There was no package on them at all.

These products would be hard to pass through customs in other countries, but it was not an issue in Pannu. Jiang Chen just stuffed

a few hundred dollar bills to solve the problem that was not even a problem.

After verifying the goods, all there was left to do was making round trips to move the supplies.

As Jiang Chen looked the piles of supplies, he had a troubled smile on his face.

"How long would moving these take..."

Chapter 284: New Year

It was night time already when Jiang Chen finished moving the two warehouses of stuff.

The good thing was the size of the storage dimension had been expanded to twenty-something cubic meters. If the storage dimension remained one cubic meter big, he would die of exhaustion before transporting the thousand tons of supplies.

"My god, did you rob the granary?" After seeing the supplies piled mountain high in the backyard, Sun Jiao was utterly shocked.

Although the base never lacked food, it was the first time she saw so much food.

"Do I need to rob such a little amount of food? On our side, this whole pile only costs seven hundred thousand USD." Looking at Sun Jiao's expression, a smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face as he used a slightly proud tone.

Out of the seven hundred thousand USD, a decent portion was spent on transportation. Pannu Islands were surrounded by agricultural powerhouses, it was cheap to export from Australia and New Zealand.

"But this is too much..." Looking at the small mountain, Sun Jiao's mouth remained wide open as she said blankly.

Watching the rare expression on Sun Jiao's face, Jiang Chen smiled joyfully as he patted on her waist.

"Okay, stop staring at it so blankly. Get people to move it to the warehouse."

With a red face, Sun Jiao seemed to have realized her gaffe. She gave him a dirty look before running to the community center to find Wang Qin.

Jiang Chen watched Sun Jiao ran out before he turned to gaze into the dark night sky.

It was already February. After this month passes, the snow will stop.

On the wasteland, spring was hunting season.

Whether it was the mutants who just finished hibernating or the bandits that stayed dormant for an entire winter, they were all hungrily waiting for the snow to melt, waiting for the two legged or four legged preys to come from under the shambles.

"A lot of things happened this winter." Jiang Chen shook his head, tightened his coat, and walked inside the mansion.

...

1302 tons of supplies. Counting and recording of each item didn't finish until noon of the next day. Additionally, everything had to be stored properly.

300 tons of food was left in the base as supplies and for daily consumption. The other 1002 tons were transported to the Sixth Street warehouses using the underground sewerage. Half of them would be sold locally while the other half would be transported to the nearby Su City and Hang City with the transport fleet formed by the Zhao Corporation in exchange for crystals and other limited supplies.

Although they didn't know how the food was transported to the base, it didn't prevent the survivors in the base from smiling at the filled warehouse. Although not everyone could eat in the cafeteria, as long as they continued to work hard, one day they will become an upper citizen and enjoy the unlimited amount of food.

It was New Year.

Because of Jiang Chen's sudden thought, the survivors put up a row of tents on the square in front of the community center for the "New Year Dinner".

Just this one night, regardless of status or position, as long as one is interested, anyone could request for a tent to cook their favorite food and share their food with other people.

The food in the warehouse would not be limited, the base's administration would provide food and fuel for all tents.

The only strict rule that must be followed was no waste! Any waste of food would be strictly punished.

But the facts soon proved Jiang Chen was worrying too much.

These people who never saw this much food would never waste food! They all ate till their stomachs were about the blow-up. They only regretted they were not born with two mouths.

Considering the base had no stomach medicine, after some thought, Jiang Chen had to add in an additional rule - "No vomiting in the next 24 hours or you have to eat everything you puke out!"

This rule was to ensure people were more rationale when it came to enjoying the food.

Of course, food was not the only thing. The survivors started a bonfire in the middle of the square as people began to perform.

They might not sing great sounding songs and the dances might not be the most elegant, but it was cheerful indeed.

People held their steamy bowls and circled around the square. They drank soup while eating barbequed meat. It was a great time.

Although the radiation dust in the sky was still depressing, and

the ashen white snowflake was still cold, but the flames above the bonfire burned away the gloom in people's heart.

Standing on the top of the community center with Sun Jiao by his side was Jiang Chen smiling as he watched the joyful and happy faces.

"Are you happy?" Sun Jiao looked at the side of Jiang Chen's face.

"Of course."

Half a year ago, this place was a mansion area half in shambles. While there were no people here, zombies visited this place.

Who would have thought that just in half a year, this place would be transformed into such prosperity?

Looking at the smile on Jiang Chen's face, Sun Jiao blushed as she also smiled.

Not because of the base's growth, but because of the person she loves' growth.

Half a year ago, she wouldn't have thought that he who couldn't even beat a chicken would grow to achieve many feats.

"How much food would we consume today?" Although she complained, she didn't show any signs of bitterness on her face. It

was a loving banter between couples.

"Now that we have met their basic needs, it is also important to meet their spiritual needs. Spending energy on outdoor activity is better than drinking and doing drugs." Jiang Chen laughed.

"That's true." Starring at the cheerful atmosphere on the square, Sun Jiao had a reminiscent expression on her face.

"What are you thinking about?"

"Something far away."

Sun Jiao used a reminiscent tone. "During my days in the fallout shelter, although I wouldn't feel the temperature difference in the weather, during this special occasion every year, people would gather together to celebrate. I still faintly remember the day my father would tell us stories about what happened on the ground above. He said it would snow up there and people had firecrackers, enjoying the delicious New Year dinner... Although when the fallout shelter opened did I realize everything was false, everything was just a fairytale.

During the period of lockdown in the fallout shelter, it was like a secluded island. While it isolated the radiation, it also isolated any electromagnetic waves. No external messages could come in.

But people still firmly believed that the moment the metal gates opened, everything would be beautiful. Since the image left in

these people's eyes were the flash before the nuclear explosion and not the cruelty of the shockwave sweeping through the crowd.

"Do you think... your father lied to you?" Jiang Chen asked gently.

"I thought that way before, but then I grew to understand." Sun Jiao shook her head. A perplexed expression appeared on her face as she gazed at the bonfire in the distance. "Human is a fragile creature, without hope, we will not survive."

Chapter 285: An Unexpected Guest

Even if they knew that the moment the doors opened, only shambles awaited them, if they didn't optimistically believe in the 1% possibility, then they may not even have the courage to wait till the doors opened.

"It's New Year, let's not talk about something so depressing," Jiang Chen hugged her around the waist and said gently.

"Mhmm." Sun Jiao buried her head embarrassedly to cover her blushed face as the sternness in her eyes were washed away.

"Speaking of this, what would you do during New Year on your side?" To get rid of the somber atmosphere, she forcibly changed the topic.

"I would usually spend it with my parents." When Jiang Chen said that, he felt melancholic.

Unfortunately, he didn't know what kind of identity he would use when he heads home now. At least this New Year, he probably wouldn't have the opportunity to visit them.

"Do you miss home?" Sun Jiao detected the strangeness in Jiang Chen's eyes as she asked caringly.

"I went back just not long ago. I wouldn't say I miss it too much. My parents' health is good and they are living a happy life. As long

as they are happy, I don't have much to worry about."

"I see... Your family are all there, that's good," Sun Jiao murmured to herself.

"What about your sister?" Jiang Chen felt awkward when he talked about Sun Xiaorou, but he still pushed the words out of his mouth.

"Her...body is not doing too well."

"What happened?" Jiang Chen hastily asked.

"Lin Lin... Although Tingting destroyed the chip that blocked her memory in the hippocampus, it still affected the nerve in her lower body. Now, she can only sit in a wheelchair." Sun Jiao was feeling down.

Jiang Chen felt perplexed. A part of him was glad that he wasn't the one that made Sun Xiaorou sit in the wheelchair, the other part was feeling sympathetic for her sister.

"A rare opportunity. You should take her around."

"Eh? But-" Sun Jiao looked shockingly at Jiang Chen.

"Although the base knew that an assassin attempted to assassinate me, they don't know who the assassin was, and no one

saw her face. It is better to spend New Year with the family if you still have a family."

Jiang Chen paused. He had a comforting smile on his face as he continued, "Maybe if you take her around this cheerful atmosphere, the trauma in her mind will be healed. Go now."

"Mhmm..." Sun Jiao hid her reddened face before heading downstairs.

Watching Sun Jiao leave, Jiang Chen looked back at the square again.

People shouted, chatted.

A young man was strumming a guitar made out of wood as he played an unknown but peaceful melody.

"Family," Jiang Chen muttered to himself as he suddenly thought of a cute girl.

She doesn't have a family anymore.

...

Without surprise, Yao Yao still stayed in her room.

She didn't play with her computer or other electronic devices as usual. Right now, she was sitting in front of the table while dangling her feet, unable to touch the ground. Her hands were placed against her chin as she zoned out.

In the years before, people would play electronic fireworks to celebrate New Year's Eve. But after she woke up, everything changed, if she didn't meet her big brother...

Yao Yao was too afraid to think what would have happened.

She really liked this place. No need to face the cold winter; no need to face the repressing radiation dust.

Just, a bit too lonely.

"What are you thinking about?" Jiang Chen put his hand on her shoulder.

"Wa-" The voice from behind her scared her a little.

After Yao Yao realized it was Jiang Chen, she let out a sigh of relief. She pouted her mouth as she threw a small tantrum.

"It is not fun bullying a small animal."

"Then what's fun?" Jiang Chen rubbed her soft hair as he smiled.

"Wo-, just like this." Yao Yao enjoyably raised her head as she had an expression similar to a cat being petted.

"Do you not need me to take you out?" Jiang Chen said gently as he felt the temperature mixed with the sweet scent of the girl.

"Take me out?" Yao Yao tilted her head as she responded, slightly confused.

"Mhmm, they are celebrating New Year outside. People are performing and cooking. Do you not want to see? You will feel too stuffy staying in your room for too long."

"But...But... Do you not need to stay with sister Sun Jiao?"

"Eh?" Jiang Chen was confused as he didn't know Yao Yao would suddenly ask this.

"Everytime brother Jiang Chen comes back, you will always go play with sister Sun Jiao." She blew her cheeks up as she looked away throwing a tantrum. "Although boys like ... bigger boobs, but, but I..."

She mumbled, but because it was too embarrassing, Yao Yao couldn't finish the next sentence.

But just as she was about to throw away her humiliation and force all her thoughts out, her tiny lips were blocked.

Her eyes trembled, then opened wide before closing peacefully.

Those lips were soft as marshmallows, sweet as honey.

Long after, Jiang Chen moved his lips away with longing and guilt.

The silver wire made the pure but misty kiss carry a hint of seduction.

"Yao Yao..."

She seemed to have sensed Jiang Chen's emotion as a soft smile blossomed on her face.

"You can."

...

The legs covered in white stockings stopped shaking as it anxiously closed and rubbed against itself.

Feeling the intimate moment, Yao Yao closed her adorable, large eyes again, waiting for the moment she has been longing for.

Jiang Chen couldn't control himself anymore.

Just as he was about to throw away all sense of guilt and become an animal again, his EP began to ring at an untimely moment again.

The intimate atmosphere instantly faded.

Yao Yao's face changed to a dark red as she was so flustered that she wanted to dig a hole in the ground and hide inside...

...

At the door of the base, Cheng Weiguo was in a jacket standing with an odd person wearing a blue onesie.

Seeing Jiang Chen walk over, his eyes light up as he immediately went up to greet him.

"Boss, you are finally here." But when he saw the unfriendly expression on Jiang Chen's face, he was confused.

"Uh, did I do something wrong..."

"No, you did a great job," Jiang Chen said with a straight face.

If it was not for the call, he might have been doing some animalistic acts.

Even Liu Yao couldn't withstand it, let alone Yao Yao who has never been injected with the genetic vaccine. The growth of her body was suppressed.

Therefore, Cheng Weiguo's phone was too timely.

But for some reason, Jiang Chen still didn't feel too hot!

"But you-"

"Don't worry, let's talk about the important things."

"Okay." Cheng Weiguo nodded his head and then led Jiang Chen to the weird person in a blue onesie.

He seemed to be wearing the uniform from a fallout shelter.

"This is the fallout shelter-" Cheng Weiguo cleared his throat as he introduced.

"Hello, leader of the Fishbone base. Nice to meet you." The person cleared his throat and extended his right hand. "My name is Shi Yongtian. For your outstanding contribution in rebuilding the apocalypse, the PAC government would like to recognize you for your outstanding work."

Chapter 286: We need your help

[Recognize? Did you get kicked in the head by a donkey?]

"Who is he?" Jiang Chen ignored the Shi Yongtian guy, but rather glanced at Cheng Weiguo.

"From his description, he is from Fallout Shelter 027, he seems to be an officer from before the war." Cheng Weiguo let out a sigh as a hint of mockery appeared on his face. "Every once in a while, there will be fallout shelters that open and then a bunch people who have no clue what is going on would return to the surface. They are quite fortunate it is winter right now."

During the winter, the bandits and raiders were mostly dormant. If the fallout shelter opened in the spring, there would be a higher probability that either fully equipped bandits or slave merchants were waiting for them.

"Did you say anything to him?"

"No." Cheng Weiguo shook his head and used a voice the middle-aged Shi Zhongtian couldn't hear, "You haven't given out any directions regarding survivors from fallout shelters, so I immediately reported this to you."

After he listened to Cheng Weiguo's explanation, Jiang Chen nodded.

"Good, you did a great job."

When he heard the leader's praise, Cheng Weiguo humbly smiled.

"Also, what was the Sixth Street's policy on survivors from fallout shelters?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Nothing too different... People that received nutrient supplies would be sent to the ghetto. People with a clearer head would find a job in mercenaries or hunting teams, usually live a nice life."

At the same time, Cheng Weiguo's expression was slightly awkward. It made him think of the time he was in a fallout shelter. He happened to be one of the slower ones and ended up dragging his wife into receiving nutrient supplies and hence lost their freedom forever.

Jiang Chen nodded, showing he understood. Then he turned around to look at the Shi Zhongtian he neglected.

Jiang Chen's neglect made Shi Zhongtian furious, but it only lasted for a moment before he remembered that he had favors to ask. Therefore, he waited patiently for the two peasants to finish talking.

"I am Jiang Chen, the leader of Fishbone base, the general of the Sixth Street military government, and the governor of the Shenxiang town colony."

When he heard Jiang Chen's words, Shi Yongtian raised his eyebrows.

"Excuse me for my straightforwardness, but there is and will only be one government on this land, and it is the great and glorious Pan-Asia Corporation."

"But they were sent into the sky already," Cheng Weiguo interrupted with a mocking voice, but Shi Yongtian ignored him as he just looked at Jiang Chen.

"Therefore?" Jiang Chen said emotionlessly.

"This kind of private enclosure similar to a king's practice is stupid and illegal," Shi Yongtian said with a righteous tone.

Jiang Chen's eyebrows raised, but before he said anything more, Cheng Weiguo had his gun pointed at the fool's head and spoke in a deadly tone.

"Apologize, or perhaps I should make a hole in your head first."

The sudden turn of events made Shi Yongtian unable to react.

His lips shivered. Perhaps due to anger or because of fear. Regardless, he couldn't say a word.

"I said apologize, blue skin."

A soldier standing on the side wearing the knight emblem sneered as he smashed the gun barrel and shot the guy in the back of his leg, causing him to drop to the ground.

Humiliating the leader in front of him, it was like asking for his own death.

Jiang Chen didn't stop this soldiers' action nor did he say anything, he only dubiously looked at Shi Yongtian's frightened eyes.

At the same time, a voice was heard through the speakers not too far away from the base.

"Mob, immediately stop your illegal activity, or we will shoot."

Wearing a blue uniform with PAC printed on the chest of a standard body armor, covered by a carbon nano-explosion-proof helmet, and carrying a PK2000 rifle. About twenty people were crouched in the bunker, their guns pointed at the gate of the base.

"Enemy attack!"

Follow by the siren ringing, all the soldiers on patrol returned to battle position.

The heavy machine guns on the concrete high wall turned simultaneously, followed by two remote sentient cannons.

Soldiers in kinetic skeletons with reaper rifles leaned against the wall with their guns ready. The power armors stepped out of cover as they directly faced their enemy. Their revolving machines gun was spinning.

What was more frightening was the swarm of hummingbird drones. Hundreds of machineguns hovered in the air, the sight alone sent shivers down people's spines.

Absolute power.

The twenty soldiers in light weapon was instantly overpowered by the intense firepower of the Fishbone base.

The PAC leading the charge had a drop of cold sweat roll across his forehead. Although he had considered the interference of "illegal personnel", he never thought they would have strong firepower.

Standing behind the power armor, Jiang Chen looked at the 20 PAC soldiers behind the bunch expressionlessly, he already guessed that people were waiting outside.

From looks alone, he knew Shi Yongtian was a useless pile of meat that only knew how to talk. Although winter was relatively safe, it was not safe to the point where a persuasive speaker can

safely walk through the wasteland. At least the zombies would not be frozen to death, when they see living creatures at night, they would still leap at them while howling.

Therefore, there was only one possibility. He was being protected.

He just didn't know what kind of arrogance he had to knock on the door alone.

"You are talking about legality to me?" Jiang Chen looked at the Shi Yongtian kneeling on the ground as he slowly opened his mouth.

Shi Yongtian shut his mouth, he was too afraid to speak.

He originally wanted to threaten Jiang Chen with "this place is surrounded by twenty fully equipped PAC security forces, so you better put down your weapons and receive a lighter punishment".

But when he saw the fearsome power armors with loaded machineguns step out of the door, he didn't have that attitude anymore.

"Here, I am the law." Jiang Chen signaled Cheng Weigou to let Zhi Yongtian go. He then took out his pistol from his pocket. "Unfortunately, your words don't really work here."

Jiang Chen pointed the gun against his forehead.

"Don't, don't kill me!... I, I apologize," With pupils contracted, Shi Yongtian shivered as he said listlessly.

Jiang Chen didn't look at him anymore, but rather at the soldiers in the far away bunker.

Silence ensued at the entrance of the base for a few seconds. The leading PAC soldier finally dropped his weapon and put his hands above his heads and walked to the base.

He knew they were no match for the "mob". To save the captured officer, the team captain had to compromise.

"We have no intention to start a conflict, please let Officier Shi go."

"We also have no intention to start a conflict, it is just your people were being disrespectful." Jiang Chen shrugged as he put away his pistol, and concurrently signaled Cheng Weiguo to put their weapons down.

Seeing Jiang Chen's action, the captain with his hands above his head let out a breath of relief. He signaled the soldiers behind him to put their weapons down as well.

The tense situation was resolved after each party took a step back.

After being searched, the captain walked in front of Jiang Chen.

Looking at the anxious Shi Yongtian on the ground, that captain let out a sigh and extended his hand.

"I am Tian Feng, a PAC army captain."

"Jiang Chen." He gave out his name again. Jiang Chen held that person's hand before letting go quickly.

"We are from Fallout Shelter 027. Officer Shi should have discussed the details with you. We don't mean harm, we just arrived on the surface... and are unfamiliar with the place," Tian Feng used a calm voice to speak with Jiang Chen.

"Now you should have seen, PAC no longer exists, neither does CCCP or NATO."

"Is that so?" Tian Feng let out a sigh as he accepted Jiang Chen's words.

But Shi Yongtian on the ground had a pale white, face. He seemed to be unable to accept the cruel reality.

The PAC no longer existing meant that his title of an officer had no meaning.

He couldn't accept the status difference.

"Although it is hard to believe... but your weapons are convincing." Tian Feng said in an undertone.

If PAC still existed, they would not like a force with such a strong military presence remain in their jurisdiction.

Before they returned to the surface, they have guessed countless possibilities. Such as NATO or CCCP have captured the entire PAC region, or PAC came out of the war as the eventual victor, or nuclear weapons had rendered the surface as a no man's land...

The current situation, it was not that they didn't consider it, they just didn't believe it was actually true.

"I am glad you recognize the reality." Jiang Chen shrugged. "You should feel lucky that you met us, and not a raider group, or the not so clean mercenaries. What's next? What do you plan to do?"

"We need your help," Tian Feng said sincerely.

Chapter 287: Nuclear Fusion Core

"Help? We are not a welfare society. If you're interested in a trade, that can be discussed." Looking at the sincere Tian Feng, Jiang Chen smiled.

To the survivors that just peeked their heads out of the fallout shelter, they had no clue about the rules of the wasteland, but they possessed a large number of pre-war supplies.

Needless to say help, it would be considered sympathetic if one could resist the urge to rob these "rookies".

Tian Feng was stunned for a moment, he didn' expect Jiang Chen to be so direct.

After a brief paused, the captain spoke.

"Our resources are also limited or else the fallout shelter wouldn't be unlocked. Although we can't give you anything in return right now, I promise, if you support our case, when we rebuild order on the shambles, we definitely won't forget the help you provided us."

"What cause?" Jiang Chen was lost.

"Of course rebuilding the great PAC, and shine the glorious light of the Pan-Asia Corporation again." As if he had regained his youth, Shi Yongtian on the ground climbed up and said passionately.

"That's exactly it." After glancing at officer Shi, Tian Feng nodded at Jiang Chen. "Before the fallout shelter door was locked shut, the last mission we received was once the fallout shelter opens, rebuild the civilization on the ruins. If PAC didn't exist anymore, then we'll reform its former glory!"

"These 'blue skins' would typically say such things when they climb out of the ground." Cheng Weiguo shrugged.

"Blue skins?" Tian Feng frowned.

"Nothing, only a name," another soldier mocked.

A nickname was given by the experienced to the rookies.

They didn't stay further on the topic as Tian Feng continued to look at Jiang Chen.

"What do you think? Our interest should be the same. Once we rebuild order, you can go back to the harmonious and stable life."

Jiang Chen had a dubious expression on his face.

"So your recommendation is?"

"We previous thought you could just support us with some extra nuclear fusion core, but seeing your excellent ability, I have

changed my mind. I sincerely welcome you to join our cause," Tian Feng said seriously.

Jiang Chen laughed.

"So you are saying, we should create a new owner who will sit on top of us?"

"How could you say it like that," Shi Yongtian worked up his courage and rebutted, " a hundred years ago, when we stood up from the suppression of NATO and CCCP, joined the forces, and walked to the great corporation. Do you remember the former prosperity? Do you long to stay in these shambles filled with chaos? Only we can lead the greater Asia to prosperity-"

Listening to the nonsense of this guy, the soldiers holding their rifles began to laugh. Cheng Weiguo touched his nose and didn't laugh since he came out from a fallout shelter. But from the curled up the tip of his mouth, he couldn't hold out for much longer.

Shi Zhongtian's face was bloated. The sights of untrust and mockery made him furious. If this were before the war, he promised he would use his power in hand to teach these peasants a lesson. But unfortunately, the pain from the bruise on his leg reminded him that he must restrain himself.

Tian Feng was silent, but he still remained hopeful as he stared at Jiang Chen. Although the majority are "ignorant", as the leader of this group of people, he trusted that Jiang Chen must have enough "foresight."

Jiang Chen slowly said, "House, weapon, wall... We laid every single brick here. With or without you, we can do great things."

"But under our leadership, you can do better-"

"Bullsh*t."

Looking at the stern-faced Tian Feng, Jiang Chen said bluntly.

"Once you adjust your attitude and bring enough sincerity, then talk about trading with us. Or, you can try your luck with other survival bases?"

Tian Feng took a deep breath as he scanned the pitch black power armors.

"I will bring back your response."

"Don't pretend you are a big deal, blue skin," Ma Zhongcheng who was patrolling mocked.

Tian Feng glanced at him, didn't say anything else, and dragged Shi Yongtian away.

...

Alarm deactivated. The fuss at the gate didn't stop the celebration inside the base from continuing.

Only during shift change did the soldiers with empty stomachs tell their comrades with a belly about to burst the funny things that happened at the front gate before rushing to the busy square.

"Boss, why do you need to waste your words on them. We can easily wipe them out and take over the good things in the fallout shelter."

Cheng Weiguo followed Jiang Chen to the office in the community center and while standing in front of the table, he asked Jiang Chen puzzledly.

"Oh? So you support me in occupying Fallout Shelter 027?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Even if it were a lawful mercenary, they wouldn't let this opportunity slip away," Cheng Weiguo answered.

Jiang Chen nodded as he didn't say anything and looked at the map on the table.

The paper map was taken from a survival guide from before the war. Although it didn't list out the 00x series as well as special fallout shelters not open to the public, all the normal fallout shelters were listed on the map.

"Fallout Shelter 027, located in the Songjiang area. It is not far from our base. With the capacity of 1000 people. The set lockdown period is 50 years, but it seemed to have been opened earlier than that," Jiang Chen found the symbol on the map as he muttered to himself.

"From their words, they seemed to be really lacking nuclear fusion core. What is that?" Jiang Chen asked.

Cheng Weiguo didn't know why Jiang Chen would ask that and looked at his boss, confused.

"it is a type of nuclear reaction battery. 100mm in diameter, it is stable and safe. A lot of industrial machines used it as the power source, including power armors. I remember the Sixth Street used it for a period of time, but like the food on the supermarket shelves, it quickly depleted, and not a lot was recycled. All in all, after consuming the nuclear fusion core batteries, the Sixth Street power armors were modified to use crystals as its power source."

Compared to the difficult to obtain nuclear fusion core, crystals were much easier to obtain.

"I see... Normally speaking, what goods are inside the fallout shelters?" Jiang Chen continued to ask.

"Good things manufactured before the war, obedient labor, technicians, and scientists." Cheng Weiguo knocked on the EP on his arm. "For example, these EPs were mostly distributed out from the fallout shelters. Also some limited medicine, or even

manufacturing equipment."

Jiang Chen nodded.

Last time, from Fallout Shelter 005, he obtained a batch of experiment apparatus, a quantum computer that can be used as the server for virtual reality games, as well as a production line for the Hummingbird drone.

Needless to say, for the survivors that wandered on the wasteland picking up garbage for survival, these fallout shelters unaffected by radiation were like treasures.

"Other than those, there is also food," after a brief pause, Cheng Weiguo added.

"Food?" Jiang Chen was slightly shocked.

"That's right." Cheng Weiguo nodded. "Other than those frozen fallout shelters, quite a lot of fallout shelter with living humans would be equipped with breeding and planting facilities. Since all food has an expiry date, even if it were stored in ultra-low temperature in a vacuum, it would still be difficult to preserve for over 50 years."

Without being affected by nuclear and biological weapons, the technology was also more advanced. The fallout shelters were the best place to grow food on this land.

The multiple plantation towers, soilless cultivation plants (both bankrupted) at the Sixth Streets could produce a small amount of produce, but the quantity, as well as survivability, were both limited. Since the filter equipment, the survivors who used recycled garbage as the base material could not be compared to the sophisticated equipment created before the war.

"Wait," Jiang Chen frowned, "Logically speaking, after so many years, there are quite a few of fallout shelters that opened in Wanghai. But until half a year ago, the Sixth Street market still hasn't seen a trace of food."

Cheng Weiguo had a bitter smile on his face.

"Mostly had to do with the raiders. Most fallout shelters would not escape the fate of being raided by raiders. But those bandits only know how to rob and kill, lacking the concept of foresight. While they completely raided the food, most of the people inside the fallout shelters were killed. Without knowing how to operate the equipment, it was usually sold as scrap. The lack of filtration device meant that the environment in the fallout shelter would be similar to the external world not long after.

"How many people would it take to attack the fallout shelter?" Jiang Chen asked in an undertone.

Cheng Weiguo thought for a moment and replied, "It will depend on the security force inside the fallout shelter. Normally speaking, only thirty-something soldiers would be enough to completely block the people in the fallout shelters."

"Block?"

"That's right, even nuclear weapons can't do anything to the fallout shelter. In theory, as long as the fallout shelter door is locked, the people on the outside have no way of going in." Cheng Weiguo said feeling rather helpless, "There is only one reason the fallout shelter would open before the locked date expired. That is, all the energy or resources have been depleted. As long as we block them in, they will be the first ones to give up."

Just like a turtle.

Jiang Chen nodded as he had a brief understanding of the fallout shelters on the wasteland.

"I see, now go do your own things."

"Yes !" Cheng Weiguo saluted before he left the office.

Seated in front of the table, Jiang Chen leaned against the chair and fell into deep thought with his eyes closed.

"Fallout Shelter 027?"

Food? Jiang Chen was not interested. The only thing he didn't lack was food.

The thing that interested him the most were the scientists and technicians inside the fallout shelter.

He faced two choices.

Raid? Or trade?

Chapter 288: Cannibals and Blue Skins

The New Year celebration continued till three in the morning. People who couldn't keep their eyes open finally returned to their beds and fell asleep with a joyful smile.

It was the first time, in many years, there was so much happiness on the wasteland.

The bonfire was extinguished and the smell of the barbeque lingered on the square.

With the help of the participants, the logistics department collected and put the utensils and cooking equipment back into the kitchen and transported any uneaten food back into the storage space and recorded the amount of food consumed that night.

As the proposer of the celebration, Jiang Chen, unfortunately, didn't get to join in on the celebration.

As when he finished talking to Cheng Weiguo, he returned straight to the mansion.

It was still three hours before the celebration ended.

When he went back the mansion, Yao Yao was still not asleep.

The adorable girl sat in front of the window, counting down on

New Year and thinking about her own things with her hands against her chin.

Counting down on New Year. Only a few people remembered this tradition.

Being with family was a luxury on the wasteland.

Everything was so sudden. From the light of the nuclear bomb to the airdrop soldiers from the sky. People were still working; students were still in class. But the "Holy Shield" only left ten minutes for people to prepare.

After rushing to the nearest fallout shelter, squeezing into temporary nuclear bunkers, or being wiped out by the shockwaves.

The hibernation chamber was like a wormhole.

For the people that hid inside, when the door closed to when it opened again, everything felt like it happened instantaneously. But outside of the chamber, twenty years have passed by.

A tear rolled down her face and as her tender fingers gently moved towards it, a warm hand wiped off the droplet at the corner of her eyes before she did.

"Do you miss home?"

"Mhmm."

"Yao Yao slammed her head into Jiang Chen's chest as her small head tightly pressed against his shoulder, she quietly sobbed.

"I, I am strong." Her voice was muffled by her repressed sobbing, but Jiang Chen could still hear the frail strength in her voice.

"Mhmm, Yao Yao is strong."

"I, I am not crying."

"Mhmm..."

Jiang Chen lightly patted her soft back as he scanned the clock on the wall.

The hands of the clock happened to pass 12 o'clock.

At at the same time, the breathing on his shoulder became more rhythmic.

The entire night, he stayed with Yao Yao.

Although he didn't do anything.

...

The transport elevator slowly descended into the fallout shelter below the earth's surface.

Around twenty-something soldiers in PAC security force uniform stood on top, everyone's expression was down and flustered.

A lot of people carried gun wounds; the bulletproof vests were covered with spiderweb-like cracks which signified the intensity of the battle.

Fortunately, they didn't lose anyone.

Shi Yongtian curled up in the corner of the elevator; his sight was unfocused as if something had provoked him, he seemed like he lost his spirit.

The captain of the team, Tian Feng, was blankly staring at the lead cylinder in his hand covered in blood - nuclear fusion core.

As to where this came from, the story began three hours ago.

After being rejected by Jiang Chen, Tian Feng didn't give up, but instead, he decided to try his luck elsewhere.

The snow on the surface was thick and cold; it froze the remaining liquid inside the withered bodies of the zombies. They were fortunate, if it were not for the snow, those furious zombies

would rip all of them into pieces.

Even the Death Claw would be scared of the zombies at night.

Factory, shop, hospital.

With the group of twenty as well as an officer responsible for "comforting the affected," Tian Feng almost searched every possible place the nuclear fusion core would exist.

But unfortunately, he didn't manage to find any.

Within the twenty years, the survivors have cleanly scavenged anything useful. This would obviously include the nuclear fusion cores used in generators. Before crystals were replaced as the energy alternative, nuclear fusion cores were the primary source of energy the survivors used.

But in the end, Tian Feng obtained one.

In a half-collapsed building, he found the light of a flame. Twenty-something survivors covered in winter suits and unknown fur circled around a bonfire. They had poorly made rifles on their backs as they were cutting meat for a strange creature.

In terms of firepower, this group was much weaker than the previous survivors.

Out of safe consideration, Tian Feng didn't hastily approach them, but rather he used the loudspeaker.

Because of their caution, they saved themselves.

The loudspeaker was used for less than a minute before the bullets began to rain down. A lot of PAC soldiers, who weren't sure of the situation, were left entirely dumbfounded. They had to take cover nearby.

They didn't know why these "refugees" would fire at them. They didn't know if they should fire back.

Currently, in their minds, they were still the soldiers of the "country," these were "refugees" that lost their rationality.

Fortunately, Tian Feng as the captain had a quick reaction. Recognizing the situation, he immediately ordered to fire back and fired the first shot.

Those survivors' pieces of equipment weren't as outdated as they looked. The moment they started firing, two light machineguns appeared out of the window.

Although they were part of the security force, none of them went onto the battlefield before. However, since they did receive professional training, whether it was shooting or knowledge, Tian Feng and the group were more superior that this "mob."

Shooters quickly eliminated the firing points, and the soldiers with rifles taking cover behind the concrete fired back alternatively. Although they lacked in firepower, their effective strategy easily took care of the mob.

The mob with weapons were consecutively killed. Tian Feng led his troops to push forward and force them to surrender.

But to their surprise, until they were down to the last person, the group had no intention of surrendering.

But when Tian Feng led his troops into the base of the mob, he saw a disgusting scene.

Blood, meat chunks.

It was not the carcass of an animal... No, precisely speaking, the human is also an animal.

They were not mobs, they were devils! The devils that chewed on human meat like there was nothing wrong.

"This is insane."

After seeing this scaring scene, Shi Yongtian's mouth twitched and he continuously repeated that same sentence.

Tian Feng didn't say anything, but his resolute eyes began to

shake. It was not hard to see the shock he felt in his heart.

No one threw up.

Because of the scarce resources in the fallout shelter, they drank nutrient supplies before they left. They had nothing in their stomach to throw up.

If it was a lone traveler that saw this scene or merchants that often traveled by, they would say without being bothered, "Oh, it's the cannibals" before they start collecting loots.

Watching the fellow with his limbs chopped off, but couldn't die because of the hemostatic agent, Tian Feng didn't say anything. He quietly raised his gun and ended his misery.

Under the body, he found a nuclear fusion core covered in blood.

The nuclear fusion core was adhered to an aluminum heat agent. It looked like this group of people made it into a simple nuclear grenade. But before they could use it, the person had to have his head blown off.

Regardless, they finally acquired the nuclear fusion core; their mission was complete. The shortage of power in the fallout shelter has been solved and was something worth celebrating.

But currently, no one had a hint of happiness.

Tian Feng gazed at the blood stains on the nuclear fusion core without saying a word.

Chapter 289: Burden of Survival

One thousand meters under the surface, a cave the size of two basketball courts was buried deep inside.

With the elevator descending, the light along the corner of the cave opened consecutively as it illuminated the underground space.

Around the area was soil packed tightly and rocky surfaces. Facing the elevator was the door to Fallout Shelter 027.

It is an inconquerable base.

The only entrance was blocked by a gear-shaped door 10 meters thick. The 8m thick compressive alloy steel and the 2m thick lead sandwich was enough to withstand a million tons TNT equivalent nuclear strike!

Tian Feng walked to the door of the fallout shelter, inputted his fingerprint, and opened the steel cover attached to the door. He then took a cable covered in soft lead material and attached it to his EP.

The door, even impenetrable by Gamma radiation, naturally would not let any electromagnetic waves pass through. The information exchanged between the fallout shelter and the outside world was purely done through this cable.

The EP screen flashed as a woman's face quickly surfaced.

Although she looked young, the three stars on her shoulder made it impossible to underestimate her ability.

Han Junhua, age 24, PAC colonel. Unfrozen three years ago and has taken over the leadership position as the previous head of Fallout Shelter 027 passed away.

"What's the situation?"

Tian Feng saluted as he responded in a firm tone.

"Mission completed."

"Mhmm, come inside." Han Junhua nodded and signaled the staff to open the fallout shelter door.

The gear shaped door gradually opened and exposed the narrow tunnel inside. A metal bridge suspended there, with the guidance of the mechanical arm, it formed a road inside the fallout shelter.

After they passed through the bridge, the twenty soldiers put their rifles and ammo on the weapon rack and walked into the sanitization room. The staff standing on the side pushed the weapon rack into the sanitation room to be sanitized.

Tian Feng didn't immediately go inside the sanitization room, he

walked in front of Han Junhua and handed her the nuclear fusion core.

"Blood?"

"It's blood."

Han Junhua had a serious expression when she saw the bullet marks on his bulletproof vest.

"The war is still not over?"

She subconsciously thought that he was attacked by NATO soldiers.

When he heard her words, the resolute face had a forced smile.

"It is over, but you will never believe what I saw outside."

Han Junhua scanned the blood on the nuclear fusion core as she seemed to have understood something.

"Half an hour later, come to the conference room."

"Yes."

Tian Feng saluted the girl twenty years younger than him as he

watched her leave.

...

The light in the conference room was on, but the mood felt repressive.

After pushing open the door, four pairs of eyes landed on him. Tian Feng gulped as he walked to the conference table and sat in a chair.

Fallout shelter leader Han Junhua, citizen representative Wu Yaguo, PAC Federal Research Institute Academician Qin Xuehai, Fallout Shelter Technology senior engineer Feng Hui, and the still trembling Shi Yongtian.

On top of the conference table was the nuclear fusion core stained with blood.

"Briefly explain what you saw outside, or we can't continue on the topic," Academician Qin with white hair gently smiled as he said to Tian Feng.

Tian Feng looked at Han Junhua and after seeing her nod, he began.

"This is what happened..."

At the request of Academician Qin, Tian Feng outlined everything that he had been seen since leaving the fallout shelter. Including the nuclear winter on the surface, the zombies, the Fishbone base's powerful firepower and apathy to the PAC regime, including the exchange of fire with those cannibals.

When Tian Feng finished explaining his encounters, the meeting table once again became silent.

After a long time, as the leader, Han Junhua broke the silence.

"Fen Hui, how long can this nuclear fusion core last?"

"To maintain the existing power usage, it is enough to support us for six months." Feng Hui gave a conservative estimate.

"The acquired power can last us for half a year? That is simply impossible!" Wu Yanguo immediately protested.

All the equipment of the fallout shelter relied on electricity, whether it was food production or the operation of the water purification device. To maintain their existing power usage, it means that each person can only be allocated 600ml of drinking water every day, 1 hour of ultraviolet radiation, and three meals of nutrient supply in reserve.

This means they couldn't take a bath, couldn't be full, lack energy, and survive a full six months in the sub-health state.

"During extreme times, there is nothing that is impossible," Han Junhua briefly said, and then look to Feng Hui, "Maintain existing power usage. You can go now."

"Yes."

Hesitating for a moment, Feng Hui got up. While holding the nuclear fusion core, he left the conference room.

"You can not ignore the public opinion." Wu Yaguo stared at Han Junhua. "I do not know what the damn procedure is, but the old leader had everything taken care everything until you woke up. Now everything has changed! "

For Wu Yaguo's accusations, Han Junhua was indifferent.

"You can not blame Xiaohua, she has done very well," Academician Qin with a gentle tone tried to persuade in an attempt to keep Wu Yaguo calm.

"Very well?" Wu Yaguo scorned, "It has only been three years, and since you have succeeded, everything has changed. First, the farming output has been reduced, the nutrient supply is mixed with organic food, then the cut in water supply, and finally the cut in existing power? All of this is pure nonsense! "

"I am just making the most realistic choice with the current supply status." Han Junhua's voice was cold, without the slightest feelings.

"The most realistic choice? I am only aware that this fallout shelter is designed for 50 years! It is 50 years calculated from the supercomputer! However, how many years have passed now? Less than 20 years, the fallout shelter is forced to open. I do not know what you have done in the past three years as the leader," Wu Yaguo said in anger.

Quietly waiting for Wu Yaguo to vent his anger, Han Junhua slowly opened her mouth.

"1000 people, for 50 years.You tell me how many people are in the shelter now?"

Wu Yaguo was speechless, his angry expression froze on his face.

"I'll tell you, a total of 1743 people."

Seeing Wu Yanguo's silence, Han Junhua continued.

"The first thing I did when I woke up from the hibernation chamber was look at the work log from the previous leader, but guess what I read?"

"What?"

"The first line, in 2171, I can't refuse a mother's request, I took her baby from her hands.

"What's wrong with that?" Wu Yaguo did not think it was a big deal.

"That baby was the 1001 resident of the shelter."

"Is it because of this baby, Fallout Shelter 027 will be opened nearly 30 years in advance?" Wu Yanguo laughed. "Or is it that you really can not find an excuse and have to use an innocent baby to hide your own incompetence?

"That's just the beginning," Han Junhua said expressionlessly. "I hosted a wedding for a couple in 2172. I knew it was not right, but I still blessed them with happiness.

"There is nothing wrong with that! Don't you think that in this environment filled with despair, a wedding is inspiring."

"So, in this 16 years, you held more than 400 weddings?" Han Junhua's sight swept across the four people at the meeting.

Tian Feng who couldn't interrupt stared at his EP in a daze. Shi Yongtian was still shaking while sitting at the table. Han Junhua's explanation didn't satisfy Wu Yanguo as he still remained indifferent. Academician Qin let out a sigh and lowered his head.

"There is no energy-saving plan, no family planning. The supercomputer can calculate the energy consumption as accurate as ten points after the decimal, it can calculate the near-perfect

population structure and growth curve, but it still can't calculate your IQ!

In the end, her calm voice finally was inflicted with a trace of anger. The volume was not high, but it stung the eardrums of all that was present.

Academician Qin opened his mouth. He wanted to say something to ease the tense atmosphere on the conference table, but ultimately he didn't say anything and just quietly watched Han Junhua. Wu Yaguo's face turned red from anger, but he couldn't find any reasons to refute.

"Including me waking up earlier, I was shocked," Han Junhua said. "With the plan, I was supposed to be dormant for 25 years before taking over the leadership position. But what did the old man do? He committed suicide in fear of the crime he committed!

"Old Zhang died of myocardial infarction." Wu Yaguo trying to retort, but his tone lacked decisiveness...

"Myocardial infarction? With the medical capability of the fallout shelter, do you think a myocardial infarction could kill someone? He concealed the condition and gave up on treatment, that is suicide!" Looking directly at Wu Yaguo's eyes, Han Junhua said firmly.

Wu Yaguo lips moved, but he couldn't say a word.

"If it is you, what would you do?" Academician Qin abruptly asked.

"In 2171, I would refuse to accept the baby. Before 2180, there will be no newborns. After 2180, following the supercomputer' analysis of the population growth curve, strictly control the number of newborns," Han Junhua said without hesitation.

"But do you know? Leader Zhang didn't just face a baby, but also human nature," Qin academician whispered, "I witnessed the day at the door when the tragedy happened. People outside the door begged, hoping that little Zhang would leave one side of the net open (to give the wrongdoer a way out). According to the discipline, the fallout shelter can only accommodate a thousand people, little Zhang also abided by that discipline."

"He did not." Han Junhua said.

Listening to the words of the little girl, Academician Qin just kindly smiled and recalled.

"People kneeled down, someone insulted him, and people even tried to force themselves back into the shelter. I remember little Zhang shot the gun. You can't imagine the scene. A husband attempted to take his son to the door to meet his wife... It was little Zhang that shot."

Wu Yaguo closed his eyes, he seemed to recall a distant event. Tian Feng was still staring at his shoelaces, but he clearly remembered that day it was him at the door on duty.

However, Han Junhua was still unmoved, she said emotionlessly,

"Why could he refuse a group, but not a child?"

"Perhaps, that is because of human nature." Academician Qin sighed.

"Therefore, foolish things were committed from the beginning." Han Junhua said.

"Without experiencing it, what happened that the day is just a passage to you. The ideas you have are indeed not wrong," for her indifference, Academician Qin just sighed and said compassionately.

"You, do you still have a hint of human nature left?" Wu Yaguo said in disbelief.

Han Junhua didn't look at Wu Yaguo as she said with an apathetic tone.

"Human nature? It is just a burden of survival."

Chapter 290: The Choice

The argument continued until morning.

But that didn’t matter as there was no concept of day and night in the fallout shelter.

The topic of discussion evolved from "the fault of the fallout shelter leader" to "what to do next". It was a great step forward.

Energy. Without energy, they can’t survive. The water purifier will stop working, the organic farm will be shut down, the UV lamp will go out, and even the air filter of the ventilators will stop functioning. From the complete power outage to the collapse of the fallout shelter, it would only take 10 minutes!

Perhaps irritated by the quarrels at the meeting today, Shi Yongtian who had curled up on in his seat shivering, suddenly stood up and smashed the table angrily.

"War, only war can solve all the problems! We should declare war on the natives on the surface! Don’t they have the nuclear fusion cores? We can just rob it from their hands. They not only illegally occupied territories but are also illegally armed. We should teach them a lesson and teach them the etiquette and reserve of a civilized man! The glory of PAC is immortal! "

The angry roar overshadowed all the voices on the conference table.

The interrupted Wu Yaguo looked over, shocked. The expressionless Han Junhua just glanced at him, and Tian Feng, who was staring at the ground, also raised his head and looked at him strangely.

Shi Yongtian's lips moved, and his hand on the table jittered like he had epilepsy.

After a moment, he sat back down stiffly.

"Ahem." Wu Yaguo gently coughed, "Shi Yongtian, why don’t you go back and rest."

Shi Yongtian looked at him gratefully, got up stiffly, and limped out of the conference room.

Seeing the door close, Wu Yaguo slowly opened his mouth, this time his tone was calmer without an intention to fight in his tone.

"This angry... inhabitant, though it was only an emotional expression, it provided an idea for our future development right? We can wager war against the external world to solve the energy crisis."

"There is no way we will win." Tian Feng suddenly raised his head. As he had personally witnessed the strength of that group of people, he felt the need to remind the decision-makers, "Heavy machine guns, drones, sentry guns, and even power armors. The

security force is made up of policemen, not the front force facing NATO. We are not equipped with heavy weaponry at all."

"Hell, you used the taxpayer's money to train, and you can’t even suppress a group of mobs?" Wu Yaguo could not help but curse.

"However, the group of mobs is not just simply mobs. Moreover, training cannot fill the gap of equipment," Tian Feng said helplessly.

"What about the group of beasts that ate a human? Didn’t you guys win?" Wu Yaguo questioned.

Tian Feng smiled, but that smile was somewhat bitter.

For a warrior, the most painful thing was to explain the war to those who have not participated in the war.

"The size of the surface armed force differs. Some are as strong as the Fishbone base while some are stragglers, they are fighting for themselves."

"Then pick the group that you can beat!" Wu Yaguo impatiently said.

"It is not legal to plunder from the victims... or the survivors."

"Legal? Ha! All those are guilty violators, they have committed

murder, robbery, insulting corpses! Are you not a security force? Do you think they should not die?"

Tian Feng did not speak. His mind was a complete mess.

He certainly thought those devils should be condemned; they should be punished with the most severe punishment. But they are only wartime policemen, not judges; they have no right to make decisions on the property owners of the offender. When he picked up the nuclear fusion core from the body and then used it for the fallout shelter, it was already a severe violation of discipline.

The robber robbing a robber. In jurisprudence, he was also a robber.

But he did not refute Wu Yaguo's point of view.

If the PAC has ceased to exist, what is the meaning of holding to PAC's law? Including the rank of his collar, what is the point?

"What do you think of it? As the leader of the fallout shelter, are you not going to do anything?" Wu Yanguo looked to Han Junhua

She glanced at Wu Yaguo as Han Junhua slowly opened his mouth.

"Foolish."

Wu Yaguo's face turned livid, with teeth clenched, he was so angry that he started to laugh "Foolish? Is not doing anything stupid to you, or as a resident representative, putting myself in the shoes of the entire fallout shelter foolish of me?"

"Of course it is you."

"You -!" Wu Yaguo pressed on the table as he stood up in rage.

However, Han Junhua was not done humiliating him.

"I don’t know what the old leader was thinking, making a foolish decision to elect a resident representative from the inhabitants. Listening to the public opinion? This is a fallout shelter, not a resort."

"That’s enough, Little Hua. Calm down. Since there are ideas, why not elaborate?" Academician Qin sighed.

"Because there is no need for that, the eyes of the masses are shortsighted."

Han Junhua heard the argument. Qin Academician smile and turn to see Wu Yaguo.

"Can I tell you a story?"

"Go ahead." Although anger filled his heart, to the old man, he

still very much respected him.

"A poor man lived with a wealthy man. Because there was a policeman that kept things in order, the two men live in peace. One day, the order that has always existed suddenly disappeared overnight.

What will happen next?

Wu Yaguo gulped. He began to realize the seriousness of the problem.

"Now we should consider who should we rob the nuclear fusion core from, but how to ensure that the survivors on the surface will not plunder us. There is not only one problem facing the fallout shelter." Academician Qin sighed.

"This information spreading among the ordinary residents would only add unnecessary panic." Han Junhua glanced at Academician Qin.

"But if you do not say anything, the residents will also panic." Academician Qin kindly smiled.

Han Junhua no longer said anything as she fell into silence.

Eyes shaking, Wu Yaguo said with difficulty, "Then take advantage of the fact that they haven’t made a move yet. Raid enough nuclear fusion cores and then close the door of the fallout

shelter. As long as we do not open the door -"

"We can’t hide here forever."

He paused, Academician Qin continued to speak.

"There is no fundamental difference between the closure of 20 years to the closure of 50 years. It will only make the gap between the survivors of the surface and us greater."

"What do you say we should do?" Wu Yaguo shouted as he was having a mental breakdown.

"Since the fallout shelter has opened in advance, the environment on the surface is not bad to the extent that we can’t survive. We should return to the surface, establish contact with the surface survivors, and rebuild our home-"

"Surface? What is there? There is only a group of primitive people who want to drink blood. Even if they know how to use gunpowder, possess advanced technology, they are still primitive people! Dirty environment, suffocating radiation dust, disgusting mutated creatures, I don’t agree we should leave the fallout shelter! There are warm beds, clean water, fresh food here, we don’t need to leave, "Wu Yaguo retorted.

Ignoring Wu Yaguo, Han Junhua looked at Academician Qin.

"The Fishbone base knows about our energy shortage. If there is

no surprise, they should be discussing how to plot against us. Any good ideas?"

It was the first time she used an asking tone, seeking advice.

"Then establish communication with them or trade."

"Trades are only possible if both sides are equal. They already knew our weakness, if they can easily force us to surrender, they have no reason to choose to trade," Han Junhua said in an undertone.

"Just let the weaknesses no longer exist." Academician Qin lowered his head.

"Is that so ..." Han Junhua also fell into the same thought.

"What are you talking about?" Looking at the two people guessing the same riddle, Wu Yaguo asked.

But no one responded.

Because some things spreading would only add unnecessary panic...

Silence ensued for a long time, then Han Junhua abruptly declared, "The conference is over."

Relieved, Tian Feng who couldn’t sit any longer was the first to leave the conference room. Wu Yaguo’s mouth twitched. He wanted to say something, but eventually, nothing came out, so he turned away.

Standing up shakenly, when Academician Qin passed by Han Junhua, he stopped. Sighing, he said.

"Have you made your decision?"

"Mhmm."

When he heard the affirmative answer, Academician Qin nodded his head and left the conference room.

In a glimpse, the original noisy conference room suddenly quieted down, leaving only Han Junhua there.

"Human nature?"

She slowly repeated those unknown words.

As she repeatedly chewed on the words, Han Junhua shook her head, got up, and walked out the door.

Chapter 291: The History of Fallout Shelter 071

The next morning.

The sun shining through the window, sprinkling light on her soft and smooth cheeks, made her look adorable.

Jiang Chen looked at the quietly sleeping Yao Yao for a while before he looked out the window.

The snow had stopped.

Speaking of this, there have been more sunny days.

After staying in bed for a bit longer, Jiang Chen slowly got up.

As if she felt Jiang Chen get up, Yao Yao tightened the hand around his neck, her whole body pressing against his.

Although the house temperature was warm, due to anemia, Yao Yao's morning body temperature was still very low. For the heat source next to her, her body naturally hugged it.

It took a while for Jiang Chen to finally move the arm that was wrapped around him without waking her up. Then he snuck out of bed.

He tucked the little girl in, leaned over her smooth forehead, and gave her a kiss. Then he turned away.

...

Last night, Sun Jiao pushed the wheelchair and took Sun Xiaorou around the square.

Perhaps moved by the lively and joyful atmosphere on the square, it made her remember her time in fallout shelter 071 when her sister and parents lived together.

A long-awaited word Sun Jiao was waiting to hear appeared in a light whisper - "Sister."

The memory of the past began to flashback.

Crying with Sun Xiaorou in her arms, tears burst out from Sun Jiao’s eyes.

That "sister" made the suffering of more than a decade all worth it.

The sisters hugged together as Sun Jiao finally slept in for once.

What woke her up in the morning was the sound of knocking.

Rubbing her sleepy eyes, she got up from her bed yawning and went to open the door.

"Good morning."

"Good ..." Seeing Sun Jiao's exposed pajamas, Jiang Chen felt his nose began to feel hot as he looked away, "I didn’t see you work out this morning."

"I am being lazy." Sun Jiao sluggishly stretched her waist, the thin as veil shirt was being pulled to its fullness.

Satisfied to hear his gulping, Sun Jiao proudly carved up the tip of her mouth.

Sun Jiao didn’t tease Jiang Chen longer, but she put on an emotional expression.

"Thank you for yesterday."

"I didn’t do anything, did she get better?"

"Yesterday, she called me 'sister'. At night, we talked about a lot of things that happened when we were young... Thank you, I really am grateful." Because of her excitement, Sun Jiao was becoming incoherent with her words.

Sisters that finally recognize each other, Jiang Chen sincerely felt happy for her.

The sequelae left behind by the memory blockage has been resolved. The next step was to solve her lower body paralysis.

Although the Fishbones base and the Sixth Street’s medical condition was yet enough to complete brain tissue repair surgery, Jiang Chen believed that within the buried ruins, the technology will gradually be uncovered. Sun Xiaorou one day will leave her wheelchair.

"Do not thank me, it is her that woke up the memory in her heart -"

Before he could finish, his lips were blocked by a soft redness.

Lips apart.

Crystals hung in her eyes and her pupils were covered by a fine mist. Sun Jiao smiled and jumped back into her bedroom with a hand on the doorframe.

"I'll go and get changed, let’s eat breakfast together."

...

In the end, Jiang Chen didn’t have breakfast with Sun Jiao.

On the table, he left a "go to the community center office to find me" before he hurriedly left the mansion and went to the cafeteria.

He ordered a bowl of millet rice porridge and two meat buns. Jiang Chen sat with the survivors as they chatted about yesterday evening's celebration while working on his breakfast.

While he was happy that Sun Xiaoruo finally found her real personality, he did not know how to face her yet, or what kind of expression should he use to meet her.

After all, in the basement, he did that kind of thing to her.

After putting the dishes away, Jiang Chen came straight to his office in the community center. Sun Jiao had been waiting.

"Why didn’t you eat with me? I wanted to formally introduce you to my sister." Sun Jiao combed her long hair behind her ear as he covered her mouth, laughing.

"... I, I don’t know how to face her," Jiang Chen said feeling embarrassed.

"Do you plan to hide from her all your life? She is my sister." One hand on her hip, Sun Jiao closed the distance between her and Jiang Chen as she said audaciously.

"Don’t be like this. I... let’s talk about the important task at hand." Jiang Chen coughed as he looked to the side.

With a perplexed look, Sun Jiao nibbled on her lower lips as she wanted to say something, but eventually sighed and did not say another word.

Seeing Sun Jiao didn’t continue to persist on the issue, Jiang Chen felt relieved. Sorting out his thoughts, he spoke about the incident that happened at the base gate yesterday.

After listening to Jiang Chen's words, Sun Jiao paused for a moment as she fell into silence.

"What do you plan to do?" After a long moment, Sun Jiao abruptly asked.

"If the fallout shelter fell into the hands of raiders or unlawful mercenaries, it would be a waste of a god-sent gift," at the same time he spoke, Jiang Chen looked to Sun Jiao.

Seeing Jiang Chen look at her, she knew that he was concerned about her own feeling. Sun Jiao put on a thoughtful smile as she said softly.

"You don’t have to explain it to me. Indeed, the reason why I separated from my family was that the fallout shelter suffered a culprit attack. But after being on the wasteland for so many years, I have long understood that raiding is normal behavior. "

It was based on this idea that in the first meeting with Jiang Chen, she made a move to tie him on the chair. Even in the Wanghai area, she has been considered one of the more decent lone travelers.

He paused, the audacious face surfaced a hint of gentleness.

"Moreover, I believe in you. If it is you, even if you occupied the fallout shelter, you would definitely make a different choice than those bandits."

Hearing Sun Jiao’s words of trust, Jiang Chen had a rare embarrassed look and he looked away.

"Yesterday, I talked with Cheng Weiguo. It was impossible to get into the fallout shelter by forcing our way inside. I would like to hear your opinion."

The time cost of the siege was too expensive. If it were only around ten days to a half months, it would be okay. But if it was over a year, needless to say, Jiang Chen wouldn’t have the patience to wait as the unclear situation west of Zhufeng Highway meant that the Fishbone base could not use the force in the Songjiang area to surround fallout shelter 027.

"Generally speaking, surrounding it would be the best choice. Since the fallout shelter opened ahead of schedule, it means that they are facing a problem due to lack of supplies. They would be the first ones to forfeit in such a situation," Sun Jiao said without

hesitation.

"But it is too time-consuming that way. Is there a possibility of opening the door from the outside?" Jiang Chen asked in an undertone.

Sun Jiao shook her head.

"I see ..." Jiang Chen raised his eyebrows, troubled.

Suddenly, he seemed to have thought of something as he looked towards Sun Jiao. He considered for a while before he said.

"The fallout shelter you lived in before is called Fallout Shelter 071 right?"

"Yes, what's the problem?" Sun Jiao asked.

"If you would excuse me, do you remember how the fallout shelter fell to the raiders?"

Sun Jiao paused.

"Sorry, if I made you remember bad things, just forget about it."

"No, it’s okay." Seeing Jiang Chen’s deep concern, Sun Jiao smiled and waved her hand. "Because at the time I was less than 10

years old, my memory is somewhat blurred. I'll try to remember."

"Please." Jiang Chen solemnly nodded.

Sun Jiao took a deep breath and looked out the window as if she was immersed in her memory.

"Fallout Shelter 071 ..."

Chapter 292: Determination

Steel feet crushed the snow. The steel surface of two T-3 power armors reflected the piercing sunlight.

Immediately following the power armors were twenty "knights" in kinetic skeletons, as well as one hundred "citizens" in carbon nano bulletproof vests. Everyone held a Reaper rifle and marched in a scattered square formation.

At the end of the line was a Tiger. The fearsome electromagnetic pulse cannon attached to the back of the pickup truck cast a menacing vibe under the cold winter light.

He gazed into the distance. The streets along the highway were dead silent. There were no signs of mutants at all.

The dumb zombies had their feet trapped in snow as they lingered in front of the destroyed stores. The drool coming out of their mouths were frozen into icicles. There would be occasional zombies walking into the middle of the road, but a gunshot from a soldier would easily put them down.

Winter was safe in Wanghai, although winter was about to pass.

Jiang Chen wore a power armor and led the march. As he walked, he recollected the conversation he had with Sun Jiao.

...

"It's deception."

"Deception?" Jiang Chen was puzzled.

"When the fallout shelter opened, the leader organized us to establish temporary tents on the surface and ordered the technicians to sample for air quality, soil quality, as well as sent out a scout team to examine the area surrounding the fallout shelter. If the surface were suitable for living, we would end the asylum plan ahead of schedule and start rebuilding on the ruins. If the situation were terrible, once we collected enough nuclear fusion cores, we would return to the fallout shelter and wait for the situation to become better."

"It was the third day since the fallout shelter opened. A hobo, poorly covered, came to the camp on the surface. I remembered everyone was happy because there were still survivors on the surface.

"From him, we learned a lot of useful information. For example, the World Alliance Organization was dissolved, the space colonization ships were sent into space... Although the news was depressing, it didn't make people despair."

"Gradually, he gained our trust. One day, he suddenly said to us, the nuclear fusion core we were collecting could be exchanged for food at the survival camps nearby."

"It was happy news for the fallout shelter. Since the fallout

shelter could easily produce food as long as there was enough energy."

"The leader gave him five bags of rice and ordered two PAC soldiers to follow him.

"But no one expected that when he returned, a group of bandits with rifles followed him. The two PAC soldiers were gone, but the blue security force uniforms were worn by two bandits."

"The entire camp was in dismay, and no one was prepared. The leader led the security force and hastily fire back, but whether it was the number of people or firepower, we were at a disadvantage. A fire began to spread in the camp. It seemed to be caused by the ignition bottles thrown by the bandits."

"At that time, my family and I lost each other. I ran far away, ran out of the camp, ran out of that street..."

Sun Jiao didn't continue.

She already told him the story before. She was afraid to go home as she mindlessly wandered among the shambles until she met a female warrior who said she was part of PLA, and then she wandered alone...

Deception?

But he thought the real reason why the fallout shelter collapsed

was due to the modesty of human nature by the people who never experienced hardship.

As Jiang Chen continued to recall, he could slowly make out the outline of the square.

The electric barriers had scattered across the street. Fallout shelter 027 was written on the concrete ground. The menacing human bones along with the concrete debris were piled on the road as it was barely visible under the snow.

In the middle of the square was a transport elevator connected to the underground space. On top of the elevator, a figure stood.

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes as he stopped moving. He lifted his hand to signal for the rest of the team to stop.

PAC uniform, ponytail swaying along with the wind. From afar, Jiang Chen could only see these things.

The person seemed to have noticed Jiang Chen and began to walk in his direction in firm strides.

Cheng Weiguo who stood beside Jiang Chen was also equipped with a power armor. Seeing the person walk over, he lifted the gun in his hand.

The person's footstep paused for a second, but didn't stop moving forward.

Jiang Chen put his hand on Cheng Weiguo's gun as he shook his head.

Cheng Weiguo understood as he put down his weapon.

It was a woman. But her bold face held a hint of masculinity. Her ponytail swayed in the wind. As she closed her apathetic looking eyes, she exuded a vibe similar to Xia Shiyu.

The only difference was, from her, Jiang Chen couldn't see any emotion of fear.

Jiang Chen dubiously grinned. He didn't know where she found the confidence to come alone.

Unless she was like officer Shi Yongtian and had no idea about the condition on the surface?

At about two meters away from Jiang Chen, the woman stopped.

"Colonel, Han Junhua."

"Jiang Chen, although you probably know already." His voice diffused from the metallic armor as a damped sounding echo lingered.

It was a basic friendly gesture to open the helmet of the power

armor when in conversation, but Jiang Chen didn't as he was not there to make friends.

"Yes."

"You are standing here waiting for me?"

"Yes."

"Then you must know my intention of coming here." Jiang Chen glanced at Han Junhua below him as he laughed.

"Yes."

"Do you only know how to say yes?" Jiang Chen couldn't help but comment.

"Is that the Type 50 electromagnetic pulse cannon?" Scanning the truck behind Jiang Chen, Han Junhua abruptly asked an irrelevant question.

Although Jiang Chen didn't know why she would ask that, it was nothing worth hiding, so he nodded his head honestly.

"That's right."

"A three-axle truck with a load of 40 tons to carry the 50 type

electromagnetic cannon, sacrificing armor to increase firepower."

"That's right, what do you think? Do you think you can win?" Jiang Chen asked nonchalantly.

Han Junhua shook her head.

Even if she knew her odds of winning, she still did not look fearful. Her calm expression made Jiang Chen unable to see through her.

"Your technological capability is all over the place. While you inherited some of the pre-war technology in some fields, you don't have a research system at all, am I right?" Han Junhua directly pointed out the weakness of the Fishbone base.

"Is that a problem?" Jiang Chen said lightly.

"We possess advanced technology and a comprehensive research system, the things you are currently lacking," Han Junhua said.

"So we are here," Jiang Chen didn't retort Han Junhua's words as he said harshly.

"We can do a trade," Han Junhua said.

"Trade is built on the two parties being equal in force." Jiang Chen laughed.

"No, precisely speaking, it is built in the case where both parties have concerns." Han Junhua shook her head.

"Do you think I have concerns?" Jiang Chen asked.

Han Junhua didn't say anything, she only reached into her pocket and took out a pistol.

The pistol alone would not pose any threat to Jiang Chen in the power armor, but the soldiers behind him still raised their weapons and pointed their rifles at her. If she dared to point the gun at their leader, they would press the trigger and shred her to pieces.

Jiang Chen didn't say anything, nor did he stop the soldiers' action. He only narrowed his eyes and gazed into her eyes.

In her eyes, he didn't see any wavering.

She raised the gun and pointed it at her own head.

Everyone was stunned, including Jiang Chen.

"Before I left the fallout shelter, as the leader of the fallout shelter, I used my authority to execute a final order to the fallout shelter terminal."

"After 24 hours, if the fallout shelter cannot detect my life signal, the doors will be locked shut and will be locked for another 50 years.

"At the same time, the door between the resident's area and the functional area will be temporarily locked. The main control system will use the ventilation system to inject excessive gas to execute 925 residents."

Jiang Chen's pupils contracted as he stared at the crazy woman in disbelief.

Han Junhua didn't react to Jiang Chen's disbelief as she continued speaking. As if she was just reading a passage from a prayer, her calm tone had no emotional fluctuations at all.

"The bodies of 925 residents will enter the organic converter to be converted into organics, water, and energy."

"With the most minimum requirement to maintain life activity, the fallout shelter will take the remaining 828 people to fifty years later. If you are willing to wait, see you in fifty years."

"You are mad."

Jiang Chen locked his sight on Han Junhua's eyes, and he attempted to see any fear of death from her pupils.

But other than the apathy to life, he didn't see anything else.

"This is the worst choice." Han Junhua opened the safety.

"Even if you surrender to me, I won't do anything to you. You will live a great life. You don't have to make this choice!"

He was telling the truth, he didn't torture anyone. Even the slaves in the Fishbone base lived with dignity.

"But no one can ensure this point. One minute later, I will press the trigger." Han Junuha closed her eyes.

The atmosphere between them was frozen.

The silence lasted for half a minute.

In the last few seconds, his helmet finally opened.

Jiang Chen let out a sigh and looked at Han Junhua.

"...Okay, let's talk about the trade."

Chapter 293: Safe Distance

On the spacious transport elevator stood ten figures.

"What is this?" Han Junhua squeezed the tiny green crystal as she asked.

"A crystal. Combined with the special energy extraction device, it can replace the nuclear fusion core." Jiang Chen stared at the wall rapidly descending outside the elevator and answered nonchalantly.

"It is hard to believe how much energy can store in this tiny piece," Han Junhua gazed at the reflection on the green crystal as she muttered to herself.

Jiang Chen glanced at her and didn't respond.

Behind him were eight soldiers in kinetic skeletons. They were all on alert for any possible dangers.

In contrast, Jiang Chen looked rather relaxed.

Ten minutes ago, he and Han Junhua reached an agreement.

He previous thought a girl that completely lacked human nature would demand a lot of benefits, but the after fact proved him wrong.

Although she had proposed this agreement, it was much more beneficial to the Fishbone base.

The agreement was as follows:

The door of the fallout shelter will remain permanently open. By name, they surrender to the Fishbone base. Fallout shelter 027 only maintains their existing security force and will no longer expand its military size. Fishbone base will stop invading and maintain a safe distance with fallout shelter 027.

The two parties will engage in trade. The Fishbone base will be responsible for providing energy as well as other supplies necessary for the fallout shelter to function while the fallout shelter will become a research facility, providing technical support to the Fishbone base.

At the same time, the Fishbone base will build a camp above the fallout shelter, used to accommodate the excess residents in the fallout shelter. The fallout shelter will maintain its high degree of autonomy to the camp. The Fishbone Bane will be responsible for the camp's security.

Also, Jiang Chen will send a representative and several workers to be stationed in fallout shelter 027. They will be responsible for communication and recording necessary supplies.

Fallout shelter 027 will also send a representative to Fishbone base and conduct a long-term assessment of the human rights rules

in Fishbone base. After enough trust is built, fallout shelter 027 will gradually become part of Fishbone base.

Although the formality of the situation was no longer important, since an agreement has been reached, fallout shelter 027 became a subsidiary of the Fishbone base.

A subsidary that maintained a safe distance away.

A slight feeling of falling came from under his feet as the elevator reached the ground.

"I don't understand. This agreement seems to be disadvantageous for you?" Jiang Chen looked at the light gradually appearing as he asked.

It practically meant they became part of the Fishbone base.

The only difference other than being occupied was, Fishbone base's soldiers were not permitted to enter the fallout shelter. But since they controlled everything, there was no difference between going inside or not.

"The purpose of establishing the fallout shelter is to maintain and preserve the flame of civilization. Once conditions turn back to normal, re-establish the colony on top of the ruins. The purpose was not to return to the surface and establish dominance on the victims."

If the Fishbone base could replace fallout shelter 027 and execute its mission, and they do have more ability to complete the mission, there is nothing wrong with fallout shelter 027 becoming part of the Fishbone base.

Of course, it is on the premises that they can maintain their promise and ensure the freedom and safety of all residents in the fallout shelter.

But this trust could only be established with time.

"Your explanation is rather unique. That's not what Shi Yongtian told me." Jiang Chen smiled.

"It was my mistake to send him to the surface," Han Junhua admitted honestly.

If the PAC image has already collapsed in the hearts of the survivors, it was comical to send a PAC officer to persuade the survivors. But she was not to be blamed. Who would have guessed this was how the war ended?

Once elevator became stationary, Jiang Chen signaled the soldiers to stay there as Han Junhua and him walked to the gear-shaped door.

Han Junhua pulled off a cable from the door and connected it to her EP.

"How was the negotiation?" Tian Feng asked anxiously.

"Successful, open the door."

When he heard Han Junhua's instruction, Tian Feng felt relieved as he signaled the worker in the control room to open the fallout shelter door.

Dust flew as the gear-shaped door gradually rolled open, exposing the tunnel behind it.

The suspended bridge with the guidance of the mechanical arm formed a road, connecting the entrance to its interior space.

"It is hard to believe that 1000 meters under the surface is a space like this."

"Do you want to come inside?" Han Junhua asked nonchalantly.

Although he was interested in a tour, Jiang Chen shook his head.

"That's okay, just here is fine."

Funny. If I went in, how would I know if you would take me hostage or not?

"Your concern is exactly our concern."

"Oh? Explain?" Jiang Chen looked at Han Junhua, quite interested in her thought.

"You are afraid of coming in, just like we are afraid of letting you in. Isn't that correct?" Han Junhua said emotionlessly.

Jiang Chen paused for a second before he started laughing.

The soldiers behind him were lost as they didn't know why their leader was suddenly laughing.

The PAC soldiers felt highly alerted in the fallout shelter and were also confused as they cautiously looked at Jiang Chen standing beside Han Junhua.

"You are an interesting person." Jiang Chen shrugged and grinned.

"That's surprising. Even I consider myself a boring person." She forced her the muscles around her mouth to move and left this one sentence before walking inside the fallout shelter.

Jiang Chen didn't wait long at the door.

Han Junhua took out the drafted agreement.

Jiang Chen only scanned it before signing on both agreements.

Both parties each hold a copy. The agreement was effective immediately.

Jiang Chen noticed when signing this "surrender agreement", a middle-aged man stood behind Han Junhua as he looked at him with suspicion and hatred.

But Jiang Chen didn't express anything as he smiled indifferently. Then he put away the agreement that belonged to him.

Before entering the elevator back to the surface, Jiang Chen turned around to look at the Han Junhua, who was sending him to the elevator.

"The Fishbone representative will arrive tomorrow. The first batch of supplies will be here by the day after tomorrow. I hope you won't close the door after taking the crystals, or I might be angry and blow the cave up." Jiang Chen used a joking tone.

"We will fulfill our promise. Please don't use threatening jokes to test our already weak trust," Han Junhua said.

"Haha, don't think about it too much, it is only a joke. Of course, I trust that you will fulfill your promise." While Jiang Chen laughed, he got on the elevator and pressed the start button.

"See you later."

"See you."

She watched the elevator ascend before going back into the fallout shelter.

On the way back to her office, she could feel eyes filled with suspicion and mistrust looking at her.

There was nothing wrong with there gazes. Since a few minutes ago, she "sold" the fallout shelter to someone called Jiang Chen.

She sat on the chair as she looked at the lonely room and suddenly let out a sigh.

From today on, all the residents in the fallout shelter could return to the surface and enjoy an unlimited amount of ultraviolet radiation and breath in the free air.

Except for her.

She chose to use herself as the deterrence, therefore giving up the opportunity to return to the surface.

At least before enough trust is established.

She suddenly felt really tired.

Han Junhua slowly put her head down on the table as she took a rare nap.

Chapter 294: Camp 027

The tag of Fallout Shelter 027 had been taken away and was replaced by a camp 27 road sign.

The people in blue fallout shelter uniforms returned to the surface through the elevator.

When they saw the thin rays of sunshine, they cheered, cried, ran on the street, and kissed the ground.

And the Fishbone soldiers stood in small circles as they chitchatted to kill time while comically examining those lunatics.

"Are these guys crazy?" Jiang Chen shockingly raised his eyebrows as he looked the blues skins cheering.

"They waited for too long." Cheng Weiguo had a cigarette in his mouth as he grinned.

After the initial excitement, the residents quickly calmed down.

Under the instructions of the manager sent by Fallout Shelter 027, the one hundred residents gathered in the middle of the square and began to unload their construction material.

It was a metallic board. That thing was magical as it seemed to be a memory metal.

A blue skin drove a small construction car with the fifty square meter board. He then dropped the metal board onto the ground and waited for the blue skin on the side to rip off the plastic on the outside. After being in contact with the air for a moment, Jiang Chen saw a few cracks appear in the middle of the fifty square meter metal board. It began to move like a transformer as it automatically assembled into a metal house with doors and windows.

It almost made Jiang Chen's eyes pop out.

It was magical!

Seeing the lack of shock on Cheng Weiguo's face, he thought it must not be a rarity before the war. But even if they were not shocked, they were definitely envious.

No wonder the raiders favored these blue skins, they have too many good things.

Although it was not at the point where they would rob them, Jiang Chen still dragged the manager in charge of camp construction and asked him how many of this things were left in the fallout shelter. The manager understood Jiang Chen's intention as he had a helpless expression on his face.

"There is not a lot of this in the fallout shelter, only one hundred set."

"Only one hundred set?" Jiang Chen was unwilling to give up, "What about production technique? You must have the blueprints?"

There was nothing to hide, the manager nodded. "We do have it, but it is troublesome to produce. Without exaggeration, to produce a mobile home like this before the war, the cost was enough to build four houses with far better conditions. The only advantage of this is the lack of space it occupies. If it was not for placing inside the fallout shelter, there was no need to manufacture these things."

Since the cost of building a fallout shelter was at a daunting one million per square meter, in the space-constrained fallout shelter, it would cost more to store construction materials.

When he heard about this, Jiang Chen didn't bother with it anymore.

But he still remembered it in the back of his mind.

Although it might not be useful now, who knows if it will be useful in the future? For example in aerospace, this thing should have a wide range of applications.

In less than half an hour of work, the two small construction vehicles made a few trips along the square before one hundred small mobile homes were neatly placed in the square. The fallout shelter residents carried their belongings and entered the metal

homes in order.

Eighty of them had fallout shelter residents living inside, while the other twenty were given to the Fishbone force stationed there for them to distribute.

Not long after, under the protection of a little over ten soldiers, three trucks rolled into the square.

The trucks were filled with construction materials and workers from the Fishbone base.

It was not enough to just have a place stay, to protect the safety of the camp, walls were also necessary.

The workers from the Fishbone base were mostly residents from Shenxiang town. After three months of work, they were promoted from "slaves" to "lower citizens" and some outstanding contributors were even promoted to "intermediate citizen".

After parking on the empty ground, the workers jumped off the truck. After offloading the supplies, they skillfully set up the necessary construction equipment. Then following the engineer's directions, they began to dig the foundation of the wall.

Based on the agreement, Fishbone base will build a wall on the outskirt of the square with a total distance of four thousand meters. The half-collapsed stores were bulldozed over, while the more complete buildings were circled inside the wall to be utilized.

The workers on the campsite were busily working as the clanking and hammering sound from their equipment persisted till midnight. A lot of frozen zombies were attracted by their scent as they dragged their limping bodies near the camp.

But the Fishbone soldiers were well prepared. The soldiers stationed on the street raised their rifles as a few shots took down the scattered zombies. Maybe it was because this area was not concentrated with zombies, or because the low temperature suppressed the reproduction of the zombies in the city center until summer, but it was hard to see a sizeable group of zombies in the Wanghai rural area.

The construction of the camp was well underway, but compared to the liveliness on the surface, it was a lot more deserted in the fallout shelter.

Han Junhua sat in front of the table as she looked apathetically at the enraged Wu Yaguo.

"What did you do. Asking him to help us build our camp, I don't disagree with, but what's the point of stationing their forces here? Do you want us to become their slaves?"

"From my perspective, this is the best ending." Han Junhua said emotionlessly.

Both take what they need as they feared the same unbearable consequence. Both parties remain restrained.

"Are you dumb or what? Since they are need of us, we can use the technology in our hand to demand more benefits!"

When she heard Wu Yaguo's accusation, Han Junhua just found it funny.

But for some reason, she couldn't laugh out loud.

"Do you know what they brought when they came?"

"What?" Wu Yaguo said uncaringly, "A huge army? So what? Even if we can't win, as long as we close the door, they can't come in. Unless they don't want our technology, or he wouldn't have sat down with us and talked it out."

Han Junhua shook her head.

"They already know the news of our energy shortage. Or rather, it is not a secret at all. Threatening wouldn't work."

"Then we will threaten them with our death." Wu Yaguo said fiercely. "If the door never opens, they will get nothing."

"Have you ever heard of gambling?" Han Juahua asked.

Wu Yaguo's eyebrows raised as he didn't understand.

Seeing as he didn't speak, Han Junhua continued.

"Two gamblers sat in front of the gambling table, both are eyeing the chips in the other person's hand. The rule of the game is simple. Each person holds a gun, but they are pointed at the same person. A uses the gun to force B to give up their chips, B uses the gun to point at himself to threaten A. The game revolves around the life of B. If B dies, A would get nothing."

"This rule is not fair to begin with." Wu Yaguo laughed.

"Rules are always unfair to the weak," Han Junhua said emotionlessly. "A few hours ago, Jiang Chen and I both held a gun. Except before the game started, I pointed the gun at my own head."

That kind of apathy made Wu Yaguo hold his breath.

Chapter 295: The not Addictive Jet

As to who the representative stationed at fallout shelter 027 should be, Jiang Chen gave the task to the person in charge of the logistics department - Wang Qin.

The representative's primary task was to the record the needs of the fallout shelter, and communicate the research direction to Jiang Chen. It was mostly a supporting job. Other than this basic task, Jiang Chen also gave the representative another mission, which was to verify their energy usage to prevent the fallout shelter from hoarding energy.

The next morning, the representative followed the truck transporting construction material to camp 27.

A 25 years old female name Xu Lu took on the role of the representative as she was part of the knight class. She acted as a salesperson in an insurance company before the war. Then she entered the hibernation chamber during the war and ended up at the Sixth Street ghetto after waking up. She was part of the first group of survivors the Fishbone base bought. Because she looked adorable, articulated well, was attention oriented, and possessed the right amount of experience, she was perfect for the representative role.

The other five staff members were upper citizens of the base. They will be on a rotating shift to enter the fallout shelter to support Xu Lu's work.

"Pay attention when you stay in the fallout shelter. Walk around, and be on good terms with the residents in the fallout shelter. You are representing the image of the Fishbone base." Jiang Chen patted her shoulder.

"Don't worry boss, you can count on me." Xu Lu playfully saluted as she giggled.

Jiang Chen nodded as he watched her go down the elevator.

Followed by the flashing signal light, the six people disappeared from the surface down to the cave a thousand meter below.

At the same time, a young looking woman in the blue fallout shelter uniform walked up to Jiang Chen.

"Hello, Mr. Jiang, my name is Zhang Yuzhu, I will be the ambassador representing fallout shelter 027 to be stationed in the Fishbone base." A young looking girl's voice was pleasing to the ears. She was also very fluent. The only blemish was the slight nervousness in her tone.

Coincidentally, the representative sent by both parties were female.

Based on the consideration of alleviating the tension in diplomacy? Since the wasteland had no professional diplomats.

An interesting coincidence.

Jiang Chen shook his head as he got rid of the weird thought in his mind.

Jiang Chen examined the ambassador from head to toe as he smiled. "How old are you?"

"Eh?... Twenty years old." Zhang Yuzhu paused as she didn't know why Jiang Chen would ask that question, but she still answered honestly.

"Twenty?" How long did the fallout shelter close for?" Jiang Chen asked.

"It will be twenty years by July of this year," Zhang Yuzhu said.

"Twenty years, twenty years old. Were you born in the first year of the fallout shelter?" Jiang Chen smiled.

"No, my father told me, I was born outside of the fallout shelter, but only a few months old when I entered the place." Zhang Yuzhu timidly smiled.

"I see... Speaking of this, working somewhere so far away from home, is your father not worried?"

Zhang Yuzhu shook her head.

"He has passed away already."

"I am sorry."

"It's okay, he left peacefully. Everyone the fallout shelter said he was a great guy. But... he always said he was sorry about everything. Although I don't understand why my father would say that, but if I can replace him to help other people, then it would make him watching over me from above feel better."

When she finished speaking, a timid but bright smile surfaced on Zhang Yuzhu's face.

"Mhmm, you will." Watching the smiling face, Jiang Chen also smiled as he encouraged this little girl.

It was a heartwarming story, even in the fallout shelter, without seeing any daylight, it could breed such a beautiful soul?

After sending the little girl to the truck returning to the base, Jiang Chen was about the return to where the Fishbone soldiers were stationed, but he happened to see a group of people forming a circle at the other gate of the camp.

Seeing the commotion, Jiang Chen walked over.

"... Listen, everyone. With only a small piece, everyone can become a sharpshooter! This is the good stuff I transported from Liuding, 100% pure! Don't you want to try? I promise, the feeling is

remarkable!"

A suspiciously dressed merchant was passionately speaking as he was selling suspicious substance to the Fishbone soldiers guarding the door.

He had a double-headed cow behind him and on its back was bags full of odd products.

"What's the purpose of this?" He walked behind the crowd as Jiang Chen looked at the crowd quite curiously.

When they heard Jiang Chen's voice, the soldiers slacking off were almost scared to death.

No one listened to the merchant's bullsh*t as the soldiers scattered and returned to their post.

Seeing all of his customers run away, the merchant blamingly looked at Jiang Chen as he stuffed the small vials into the bag on the double-headed cow's back and dragged its leash as he prepared to leave.

Instincts told him that for this person to be able to scare the people carrying guns, this person's status must not be low. Although Jiang Chen ruined his business, he didn't dare to complain. Since a merchant like him was putting his life on the line, if he accidentally offended someone and got shot, it would be a tragedy.

"What is this thing? You haven't answered me yet." Seeing as he wanted to leave, Jiang Chen asked again.

"Jet, a magical thing that will increase the human sense. The exact effect is that after eating it, the world will appear to slow down." Seeing Jiang Chen's interest in wanting to buy it, the merchant stopped and began to give his pitch.

Just like bullet time effect? Then it must be a good thing.

Jiang Chen touched his chin quite interested.

"What do you think? A piece is only 10 crystals." The merchant rushed to him as he saw Jiang Chen's expression.

"That thing only sells for 4 crystals a piece at the Sixth Street, I've seen it before." A soldier not too far away from Jiang Chen alerted, afraid the boss would be tricked.

The merchant's eyes opened wide.

"Could the thing from the Sixth Street be comparable to mine? My Jet is not addictive. Do you dare to eat the things they sell?"

"You must be lying. Is there non-addictive Jet?" Another soldier mocked.

When he heard this thing would be addictive, Jiang Chen instantly lost his interest.

But seeing the merchant argue with the soldier, Jiang Chen had another idea.

"Ahem, you are saying that your Jet is an improved version, stronger than the ones sold at the Sixth Street pharmacy? Non-addictive?" Jiang Chen cleared his throat as he interrupted the two's bantering.

"That's right," the merchant proudly fixed his collar as he looked at Jiang Chen. "I can promise with my life that regardless how my Jet is used, it is non-addictive."

"Okay, good." Jiang Chen nodded, "How many do you have on you?"

"I only made... I mean I only brought 53 pieces," the merchant said.

"What is your name?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Meng Qian."

"Okay Meng Qian, this is 530 crystals." Jiang Chen put his hand in his pocket and took out a few sizable crystals from the storage dimension and threw it to him.

"Thanks, boss." Meng Qian nodded and bowed as he joyfully handed the small vials of drug.

But Jiang Chen's next sentence made Meng Qian's heart freeze.

"You are welcome." Jiang Chen casually threw the drug into the hands of the soldier beside him and pointed at the merchant packing up the crystals.

"Capture him and feed him the drug. Report back to me if there are no problems."

No matter how that person begged, Jiang Chen turned around and went back to camp.

Chapter 296: Like Mall

And seeing the result, that guy was a liar.

That drug was not Jet at all, but something odd...

After taking two pills, the person fell to the ground, unconscious.

It was apparent it wasn't Jet, Jet wouldn't make a person unconscious after two pills. When he remembered this evil merchant was selling this to them, the soldiers were furious. They confiscated all the crystals from the guy's body before throwing him outside of the camp's gate.

The small crystals were distributed among the soldiers. However, with the 530 crystals Jiang Chen paid, they were too scared to take it. Thus as the captain, after deliberating for a while, he personally sent the crystals to Jiang Chen and reported the incident to him.

From the moment he saw him, Jiang Chen knew that guy was up to no good, so he was not surprised at all by the report. Jiang Chen paid for that drug purely because he wanted to waste some time and tease the liar.

As for the 530 crystals, Jiang Chen didn't take it back as he asked the captain to distribute it amongst the soldiers. The wall has yet to be built. Therefore it was tiring to stand outside in the harsh winter. With 530 crystals, everyone would at least be given five. To the soldiers without money, and prioritized being fed well and kept warm, this was a sizable amount of wealth.

Seeing the grateful captain run out of the door in excitement, Jiang Chen smiled, locked the camp door, and prepared to go to bed.

He thought the incident would be over, but it was not...

The next morning.

At the bus stop outside of the square, a shivering figure stood in the icy wind. The person would constantly look at the end of the street, and classically roll up his sleeves to look at the time. His two eyebrows were tightly locked together as if he was anxiously waiting for something.

It was like this for a while.

On the desolated street, his action was peculiar.

The soldiers patrolling at the gate watched the weird guy afar as they judged him.

Not long after, Jiang Chen, along with two soldiers in kinetic skeletons, slowly strolled over.

When he approached, he found out it was Meng Qian, the one who sold the drugs to him. Jiang Chen surprisingly raised his eyebrows as he walked towards him.

"What are you doing?"

"Do you even need to ask? I'm waiting for the bus," Meng Qian glanced at Jiang Chen who stood beside him as he said nonchalantly.

"Bus?" Jiang Chen examined him quite curiously.

"That's right, it seems to be late." Qian Meng frustratedly cursed a few times, but the man let out a sigh, tightened his collar, and prepared to leave.

"Wait, where is your cow?" Seeing he was about to leave, Jiang Chen stopped him.

"Cow? What are you even talking about?" Qian Meng turned around and looked at Jiang Chen as if he was crazy. Then he frowned as he asked back.

His eyes looked as if he was looking at a psycho.

Pretending to be dumb or really dumb? Jiang Chen's expression turned peculiar.

Instinct told him, the reaction of this guy must have something to do the with the drug from yesterday.

"Where are you planning to go?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Going to work," the person said, irritated.

"Going to work?" Jiang Chen was confused as he looked at him as a psycho as well.

"That's right, is there a problem? Fu*k, it's so late already..." After glancing at his rolled up sleeve, Qian Meng cursed as he ignored Jiang Chen and walked to the other end of the street in quick steps.

Just as the soldiers behind Jiang Chen raised their guns and prepared to stop him, Jiang Chen stopped them.

Jiang Chen thoughtfully looked at Meng Qian moving in the distance as he ordered the two soldiers.

"You two follow him first, I will be right there."

"Yes." The two soldiers saluted as they began to jog after him.

After he returned the base, Jiang Chen notified Cheng Weiguo before he equipped himself with the T-3 power armor and chased after Meng Qian.

The two soldiers following Meng Qian were both knights of the Fishbone base; they were injected with the "honorary chip" it just

had a different name. Therefore, their two-dimensional coordinates will appear on the EP map as green dots.

After inputting the map's information into the full sensory screen in the power armor helmet, Jiang Chen moved at full speed to catch up with the two green dots.

The snow was thick on the highway. Jiang Chen was planning to initiate gliding mode to chase them, but because the wheels were losing grip on the ground, he had to run.

After wasting some time on the road, Jiang Chen finally arrived at the destination. However, the two soldiers were already waiting there for him.

"Where did he go?" Jiang Chen slowed his speed in front of the two as he asked.

"He went in. We were worried that we may alert them, so we didn't follow." The soldier pointed across the street.

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes and looked over.

It was a small mall three floors high. There was a sign that read "Like Store" dangling from the roof. From the car wreckages in front of the entrance, this place was popular before the war. A lot of the mall's windows were sealed shut with wooden boards or other materials. The rest of them were covered by curtains.

Only the glass door of the mall was wide open.

It blocked all possibility of peeking in from the outside. At the same time, there was to blockade at the front door.

The building looking suspicious!

Jiang Chen stared at the dark entrance as he frowned. He opened the life detection device on the power armor. The waves scanned the hologram map, but when it passed through the building, there was not a single signal on the device.

From this point, there seemed to be no human activity in the mall.

Jiang Chen didn't feel too surprised by the result, he was more confident that there was something strange inside.

Although this device is effective in the modern world, which has a lower technology level, it is not so useful in the apocalypse. A lot of survivor groups, mercenaries, or raiders with a clever mind would install life detection device shields in their home to prevent their coordinates from being detected by people with ill-intention.

The guy called Meng Qian just went inside, how could there be no one inside?

"How long did he go in for?" Jiang Chen said in an undertone.

The older soldier looked at his EP. "10 minutes."

Jiang Chen thought for a moment.

[The strange hallucination drug. The merchant appeared at the camp gate out of nowhere. Is this a coincidence? But it is too much of a coincidence.]

Camp 27 has been built for only two days; the wall was not even half constructed yet. And there just happened to be a merchant that was passing by. One who was not even sure about the kind of people the group consisted of and walked over to the gate to sell products to the patrols who were holding guns? It didn't make sense.

If the soldiers had bought his drug, they would also experience hallucinations and walk into here?

When Jiang Chen thought about this, his expression turned stern but then loosened.

If they were targeting the Fishbone base, no reason not to recognize him as the general. But from the actions of the merchant, he didn't seem to recognize him. From this point alone, he shouldn't be targeting the base.

Then they must be coming for Fallout Shelter 027!

Jiang Chen's eyes began to light up as the clues in his head became more evident.

The opponent seems to have acquired the knowledge that fallout shelter 027 has opened. Then for some reason, they tried to lure the residents here. But the merchant didn't know the specifics of the plan as he was just ordered to sell the drug. So, he didn't care if they were "blue skins" or not.

It would make sense this way.

As to their intention, he would only know if he enters the building.

Jiang Chen stared at the pitch black door, as well as the window only covered in cloth and instantly had an idea.

Chapter 297: How could it be this guy?

It was unwise to enter through the front door, but Jiang Chen didn't plan to do that in the first place.

The drone can take care of the reconnaissance.

He ordered the older soldier to notify Cheng Weiguo and ask him to bring some soldiers for backup. At the same time, he ordered the younger soldier to stay by the back door of the mall to prevent people from escaping.

After doing all this, Jiang Chen took out a hummingbird drone from the storage dimension. This type of hummingbird drone was not attached to a machine gun, but rather a set of light multifunctionality reconnaissance device. It would complete any reconnaissance mission and was a convenient tool.

But Jiang Chen was not completely satisfied. After deliberating for a moment, he also attached two fist-sized sticky explosives on top of the drone as he utilized the remaining load.

After connecting the drone to the computer in his power armor, he slowly approached the mall. Then in front of the KFC, close to the front door, he threw out the disc in his hand as he controlled the drone and flew it to the third-floor window.

Without making a sound, the disc sized drone approached the cloth-sealed window as the pin camera pierced into the cloth.

Other than an office table and a row of filing cabinets, there was nothing else suspicious in the room.

After slicing a small opening in the cloth, the drone flew into the room. Underneath the window, Jiang Chen saw a round shaped landmine.

Jiang Chen felt his scalp tingling.

Good thing he didn't just flip inside, it was filled with traps.

Not only at the window but below the open door, an infrared trip mine was also hidden.

But those things were useless against a drone.

Jiang Chen skillfully controlled the drone as it flew into the deserted tunnel as he searched room by room.

Most of the rooms were empty or rather stuffed with pre-war office supplies.

But in a room at the end of the hallway, Jiang Chen saw something that looked different.

Four fridge-sized metal equipment were lined up and placed at the entrance of the door. Along with the equipment, a faint fan

noise could be heard. There were computer towers? But it didn't look like that was possible.

In the middle of the room was a surgery table filled with blood. The light squeezing through the cracks of the wooden boards happened to scatter on the blood stains. A few surgical knifes were placed a rusty tray nearby. From the yet to turn black bloodstains, a surgery seemed to have occurred not too long ago.

What was more daunting was the paint in the paint can.

The content of the can was obviously not painted, but blood mixed with meat chunks and broken limbs.

"Fu*k." Jiang Chen outside of the mall cursed as his stomach turned.

These were obviously not things that belonged to a mall.

...

Just as Jiang Chen was controlling the drone to hover around the room, looking for other evidence, a sound came from the floor below.

Jiang Chen immediately controlled the drone to hover out of the room and fly down along the stairs.

After directly flying through a row of offices, the disc stopped at the door of an office.

The door was closed, but it couldn't stop the genius Yao Yao.

This girl was not only talented in programming, but she was also experienced in electronic device modification. Jiang Chen carefully controlled the hummingbird drone towards the doorknob, aimed it at the mechanical lock, and pierced the pin camera inside.

The needle followed the lock pattern inside. After making a few turns, it successfully came out on the other side.

It was dark inside the room, but there was enough light to see clearly.

There were four people inside the room, three stood up, one was on the ground.

Qian Meng was the one who was lying on the ground. The person closest to him was a bearded man. He couldn't see the face of a tall but thin man, but instinct told Jiang Chen that he was dangerous. As to the man with his back against the door, he didn't look important and must be a pawn only.

...

"Hell, why did this dumb*ss eat the drug himself, didn't I tell him

not to eat it himself! What is this dumb*ss' brain made out of." The bearded man cursed as he kicked the unconscious Qian Meng.

The kick seemed to hurt Meng Qian as he woke up from unconsciousness.

When he realized that he was tied up, his eyes began to quiver in fear.

"What do we do next?" The tall and thin man carrying a fluid-shaped rifle coldly looked at the twitching Qian Meng as he said without any emotion.

"Hmm... Should we observe him for a bit longer?" The man at the door suggested.

"That seems to be the only option, at least wait till he becomes conscious again." The bearded man sighed, sat on the chair, and lit up a cigarette.

"Who are you? Why did you tie me up! God, are you crazy? Hongbo, little Du, come help me! These psychos..." Qian Meng screamed at the empty office table as he listlessly yellowed out random names.

From the reactions on their faces, the names didn't belong to anyone there.

"Who can keep this guy quiet?" The bearded man blew out a

smoke ring as he said in annoyance.

Bang-!

A faint smoke rose from the rifle the slim man was holding.

Qian Meng completely quieted down. In the widens eyes, his pupils began to dilate.

Blood began to flow from the back of his head as it matched the daunting blood hole on his forehead.

The room was gravely silent.

Smoke slowly rose from the cigarette between his fingers. It froze there without moving. Then moments later a length of soot fell down.

"You... killed him?"

"That's right." The slim man said casually.

Mouth twitched, the bearded man was clearly unsatisfied with what the guy did, but for some reason, he was afraid to be angry at the slim man.

"Okay, that's good. Now we have to start over again." The

bearded man slapped his thigh, threw away the cigarette in his hand, and complained while looking at his knee.

"There was no value in that garbage," The slim man said nonchalantly.

"At least we could have learned about the circumstances of that camp. Now, we won't even know if he had contact with those blue skins or not," The man standing at the door said feeling rather helpless.

Perhaps he realized the lack of consideration or extreme arrogance, but the slim man didn't resolve his companion's complaints.

After deliberating for a moment, he used an authoritative tone.

"Use mutated fly. Inject that drug into their poison bags, and then put them around the fallout shelter... I will take care of the surgery. You go find two mutated flies."

Those flies were the size of human skulls. By using barbed maggots as their attacking mechanism, they were one of the most disgusting creatures on the wasteland. Although it didn't attack that often, it carried all kinds of bacteria, which made it problematic once one was infected.

"You want it alive?" The bearded man raised his eyebrows.

"Mhmm." The person nodded.

"Are you kidding me? Capturing two mutated flies alive? Do you think they are rabbits?" Perhaps his ordering tone made the bearded man unable to withstand it any longer but he roared at the slim man.

"If you are infected with mutated bacteria, I can take care of it for you," still the same apathetic tone, the slim man responded.

The bearded man scorned, "I won't let you touch my organs. Let me tell you, our Dark Red Chamber of Commerce is only a partnership with you, not your servant."

"Is this your boss's intention?"

"We help you get into the fallout shelter, and you give us the ingredients to that drug-"

"Shh." The slim man suddenly raised his finger and put it beside his lips.

The room instantly quieted down.

Jiang Chen gulped as he began to maneuver the drone to move back.

But then, an unfortunate thing happened.

Because the lock has not been oiled for a long time, when the pin camera was retracting from the lock, it made a faint sound.

"Who is there!" A loud shout came from behind the door as the man closest to the door quickly turned the doorknob and opened the door.

Knowing that he has been discovered, Jiang Chen pushed the drone's engine power to its max. Following the buzzing sound, the drone dashed into the room.

The slim man raised his gun. However, the instant Jiang Chen saw his face, he was shocked.

Lin Chaoen? How could it be this guy?

Lin Chaoen pressed the trigger. At the same time, Jiang Chen pressed the detonation for the sticky explosive.

The signal to the drone was lost. Jiang Chen raised his head to look at the second floor.

After half a second.

Boom!

Following the homing explosion, red flames scattered as it blew

the wooden boards sealing the windows tens of meters away.

Jiang Chen looked at the thick snow coming out of the window and was dumbfounded.

He was lost. What show was this?

Chapter 298: Atomic Grenade

The vibration from the explosion could be clearly felt ten meters away from the Like Mall. The two sticky explosives' TNT equivalency was two kilograms. Although it didn't have any metal shards inside, the shock of the explosion could easily have shattered the organs of the three people in the room.

Since the construction of the building used technology from one and a half-century after his time, the mall that survived through the nuclear explosion didn't collapse because of the explosives.

Watching the thick smoke, Jiang Chen estimated that the people inside all died, so he took out his tactical rifle and was about to enter the mall.

But suddenly, a noisy shouting voice came from the mall.

There were more than three people inside. The explosion alerted the other people inside the building. The pawns in rifles quickly rushed to the first floor as they bumped into Jiang Chen who was about to enter the mall.

Jiang Chen was a step faster.

The tactical rifle in his hands spit out flames as he swept down three or four people during the first encounter.

However, those mercenaries dressed soldiers were not to be

underestimated. When they saw they were facing a power armor, they buried their heads along the rows of hangers and passed through the flame before hiding under the nearest cover.

The rifles in their hands were not the "toys" the CIB had in their factories. To the power armor produced from the same era, it certainly posed a threat. Although the bullets were deflected off of Jiang Chen's armor and didn't penetrate through it, the high kinetic energy from the shots brought Jiang Chen agony and he was forced to retreat behind cover.

The T-3 type, after all, is an airdrop type power armor. If it was the land warfare type, with over one ton in weight, the bullets would feel more like a tickle.

"Fu*k, when I have the opportunity I'll get a land type to try." The debris that fell from the edge of the building made a loud sound when it scratched the surface of his power armor.

With his back against the wall, Jiang Chen cursed, and then took a deep breath to calm himself down. He took out five heat sensor grenades from the storage dimension and threw them towards the door.

The heat sensor grenades followed a parabola curve and landed by the cover of the mercenaries.

The grenade sudden stopped mid-air as the booster from its side adjusted its direction and flew to the heat source - a few luring bombs hidden in the corner.

Boom-!

The explosion made Jiang Chen feel relieved. He stuck his head out of the bunker, but the small explosion forced him back.

"Fu*k."

Jiang Chen cursed as he scanned the damage assessment of the power armor.

Fortunately, the bullets left only a few dents on his helmet without causing more significant damage.

Obviously, the five heat sensor grenades didn't play their role.

After all, on the wasteland, high-tech products were not rarities.

Laughter came out of the mall as a few mercenaries, at the top of their lungs, began to shout profanity at Jiang Chen.

"You only can do this? Your mom definitely pushed hard enough when you were born!"

"Hahaha! You are wearing a fu*king power armor, a chicken would be more resistant than you.

"Longtao, I didn't know you were this humourous before, haha -"

Suppressing the anger in his heart, Jiang Chen took a deep breath, as a grimacing smile appeared on his face.

The storage dimension opened, and this time, he took out a metal tube the size of a pen.

"Hide this time!"

After running out of cover, Jiang Chen threw the "pen" on the ground before quickly running in the opposite direction.

Seeing Jiang Chen escape, those mercenaries was suddenly anxious as they chased with their anti-armor weapons.

"Fu*k you, don't run-"

However, this insult didn't have time to come out before they were engulfed in an arc of explosions.

The blinding lightning flashed; the high-energy particles flowed, instantly blurring the full sensory screen in Jiang Chen's helmet. The shockwave without suspense pushed down the wall by the door, the cement blocks were blown tens of meters away from to the corner of the street.

It was not a pen, but an atomic grenade!

This stuff was made out of the 500 kilograms of uranium Jiang Chen left to Lin Lin. Outside was a layer of lead shell, while the inside was a layer of explosives used to initiate the explosion. The ink was also 1g of uranium oxide pulled into filamentous.

Just 1g of uranium oxide! With only 60% involved in the chain reaction. But even so, it had a terrifying 12 tons TNT equivalent of explosive power! Two sides of the wall on the first floor were gone, leaving two structural walls and some steel frames.

"Talk sh*t again." Jiang Chen opened the helmet as he angrily spat out on the ground. Then he put the helmet on again and started the air filtration system inside the power armor.

Even the radiation dust caused by 1g of uranium explosion still could not be underestimated. Especially in this airtight space, he must be careful the radiation doesn't surpass the threshold value.

Jiang Chen walked up and looked at the horrors of the mall. Jiang Chen couldn't help but feel speechless.

Because the actual effect was uncertain, and the uranium oxide treatment was not easy, Lin Lin only made one grenade. Surprised at its power, Jiang Chen made up his mind to convince Lin Lin to manufacture some more.

When he stepped inside the mall, he couldn't find a complete body of the clamoring mercenaries. It was hard to say from their body instantly reached boiling point or was shattered by the

shockwave.

After walking over a pile of black clothes, Jiang Chen didn't even pull out his gun as he walked to the stairs.

No one can survive after this level of explosion.

However, at this time, he suddenly felt alerted. He instinctively jumped back and ignited the two pairs of turbine engines behind his back.

A faint blue light flickered, as he rapidly retreated to the door. Almost at the same time, a figure quickly jumped down from the hole in the ceiling as it mercilessly hit where he was standing.

Boom-!

Among the debris, he saw a dark blue laser sword. Along with it, was a face with half of his head shaved. Under the burned skin, mechanical parts filled his insides.

What is this thing? A digitized human?!

Jiang Chen was shocked. While he retreated rapidly he pulled out the tactical rifle from his side. That person didn't hesitate either as he dashed towards him.

"What the fu*k are you!" Jiang Chen roared as he pressed the

trigger.

This person was obviously not human!

The bullets fired instantly weaved a net of fire.

The person didn't answer, the light sword in hand changed.

Like a stretched umbrella, light particles from the blade stripped forward, melting the bullets.

Looking at this scene, Jiang Chen was so scared his hair stood up.

Being able to melt steel core ammunition, the C-type steel armor would be hard to resist! Although the power armor surface was coated with a scattering coating, which would offer some resistance to laser bullets, he could not bet on the laser sword that had "continuous damage".

"Ka -"

The clip was empty!

The man did not give Jiang Chen the time to change clip, the light particles formed into a sword, as it stabbed straight at Jiang Chen.

In the moment of the clash, Jiang Chen clenched his teeth and his pupil contracted.

"Peerless!"

The ability above fury, he didn't use it since his last fight with the lead mutated human.

It felt like his entire body was submerged in cold water, all of his emotions were thrown out from his body.

Jiang Chen felt his brain was never so clear!

"Nitrogen shield."

He muttered to himself as he developed the circle on his left arm.

The violent air burst out instantly, the high-pressure nitrogen circulated, blowing away the high temperature of the light particles, and cut off the light sword touching his front chest.

Pupil reflected the parameters, Jiang Chen suddenly stepped on the broken face of the man, while extinguishing the turbine engine and used the reactionary force to stand on the ground.

The man saw the light sword lose its purpose and simply threw it aside. He then took out a dagger and dashed again.

Seeing that there was no time to change the clip, Jiang Chen threw the rifle aside and also took out his dagger by the power armor.

However, when the two daggers met, that person's blade in hand cut through Jiang Chen's like butter

Although surprised by the sharpness of the dagger, Jiang Chen did not panic as he stepped sideways to dodge the blow.

"Particle vibrating dagger?"

While murmuring to himself, Jiang Chen backed up to avoid the man's second hit.

The sound of the buzz didn't escape his ear. He heard Sun Jiao mention this thing before, but it was the first time seeing it.

It was said that this stuff could cut C-type steel like tofu.

His back was against the wall.

See Jiang Chen had no way to escape, the man with only half of his mouth smiled and swung the dagger down at him.

At the same time, Jiang Chen, seemingly out of moves, raised his left arm.

Chapter 299: A Digitalized Human? A Robot?

Screech!

The cringing screeching sound went out of tune as the broken mechanical face looked shocked.

But before he could use his electronic parts to demonstrate his surprise, Jiang Chen’s right hand already slapped onto his face as he grabbed his neck to spin him around before pressing him against the wall.

Followed by the mechanical shattering sound, the digitalized human’s jaw moved. He attempted to break loose but seeing he couldn’t, he soon gave up as his eyes glanced at the dagger pierced into his left arm.

"Wh...Why?" He pierced through the armor with that dagger but couldn’t move it out a single inch.

Jiang Chen deactivated peerless and stared at the digitalized human with a grimace on his face.

"Obviously, it is stuck."

The instant the dagger cut through Jiang Chen's left arm armor, Jiang Chen went into overdrive and burned the entire electronic

circuit on his left arm. The high temperature caused the armor to expand which resulted in the point of penetration to contrast, therefore clamping down the vibrating blade.

The particle dagger that has stopped vibrating was worse than a standard blade.

"With a normal human's reaction speed, this seems impossible," the digitalized human said.

"The power armor read the data of the dagger’s movement and calculated the distance between the blade and the armor. Then you just have to count and burn the circuit." Jiang Chen sneered.

To maximize his existing combat ability was the incredibleness of this peerless ability.

"Abandoning the entire left arm armor? That’s brave." The digitalized human laughed as he scanned the dagger beginning to smoke.

The dagger forcefully clamped down was sent into overcapacity which meant this vibrating particle blade was also destroyed.

"Now can you be truthful? What are you?" The hand around his neck tightened as Jiang Chen threatened.

"Lin Chaoen, we met at the Sixth Street." With sparks coming from his neck, he stuttered.

Lin Chaoen paused for a moment as he narrowed his eyes.

"You are a digitalized human?"

"That’s right," Lin Chaoen said honestly as he gave Jiang Chen a hollow smile, "The fusion of technology."

"I don’t have time to listen to your bullsh*t, you have two choices now. Tell me what you know, such as the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce, the Defenders honestly. Or, be disassembled by me," Jiang Chen threatened coldly.

Jiang Chen already considered Fallout Shelter 027 as part of his territory, he would not sit around when someone is plotting against his jurisdiction. On the other side, the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce was his old rival, Cao Jinsong died in his hands.

But what was unsettling to Jiang Chen was the Defender, Lin Chaoen said that they were the survivors of Jia City and had the goal of an uprising against the mutated human’s reign. But as of now, the Fishbone base’s information was still blank about them.

Not knowing what the opponent thought was more fearsome than knowing what the enemy was plotting.

"I chose the latter."

"What?" Jiang Chen’s eyes contracted as he locked his sight on the mechanical pupils.

"I choose to be dissembled into parts-"

With a "bang," Jiang Chen crashed his right leg with one kick as the bent titanium skeleton came out.

"I am not joking," Jiang Chen said grimly as he increased the strength on his right hand.

"I am also not joking," Lin Chaoen said nonchalantly, he even emotionlessly shrugged. "Do you think there's any purpose in threatening a digitalized human? The cost is one hundred ten thousand crystals, if you break it I’ll just make another one-"

As he said this, smoke suddenly came out of the back of his head and he stopped moving.

Jiang Chen was stunned as he immediately ripped apart his neck, took out another tactical dagger, and cut open his metal skull.

The internal circuit had been burnt already, he chose to self-destruct.

"Dammit." Jiang Chen removed the black control chip, cursed, and then threw the chip into the storage dimension.

A digitalized human made by 100% mechanical parts?

Jiang Chen suddenly remembered Lin Lin. She is also a digitalized human, but only partially modified by electronics.

But this guy had not a single living cell, he would be more of a robot.

"The Defender? Why would they be connected with the Dark Red Chamber of Commerce?"

He couldn’t find a reason. Jiang Chen shook his head as he threw the mechanical body inside the storage dimension. He’ll get the people in the fallout shelter to research it to see if they could reverse engineer the technology behind it.

But he could not fathom the thought that the mercenary he drank with was a robot.

As he thought about it, a weird chill crept into his body; he shivered.

He walked to the side and picked up the laser sword that was flung to the ground.

It looked like a flashlight with three modes to select. The handle had three words engraved on it, sword, shield, and lance. Jiang Chen didn’t get to see the third mod yet as the robot probably didn’t have the opportunity to do so.

After pressing the switch, Jiang Chen pointed the laser sword forward and changed it to lance mode.

The faint blue light flashed, but then there were no other differences.

He gently shook the sword's body as the faint blue spectrum followed his movement.

Seeing the "soft" sword body, Jiang Chen was inspired. He looked at the wall not far away as he swung the sword,

The sword broke from the middle. The broken part formed a light blade and flew to the wall.

Without making a sound, the light blade disappeared through the concrete wall.

"The far range mode of the laser sword?"

Jiang Chen muttered to himself and walked to the wall.

The light blade burnt a mark on the wall. He poked with his finger as he easily pierced the wall. Although he couldn’t feel the temperature with the power armor, from how soft the concrete was, it was not hard to imagine the intensity of the sword.

Jiang Chen looked at the energy status on the side of the sword.

"Damn, with only one swing, twenty percent of the energy was gone. No wonder that guy didn’t use this mode."

After playing with it for a bit longer, Jiang Chen threw it into the storage dimension.

Laser swords were not too useful to Jiang Chen who favored firearms. But perhaps it was a better choice to give it to other people to use, although he couldn’t think of the ideal candidate yet.

The vibrating dagger was destroyed. Jiang Chen didn’t bother with it as he walked upstairs.

When he came to the second floor, Jiang Chen walked into the half-destroyed room.

He scanned the horrific scene in the room as he couldn’t even help but feel shocked.

The wall was burnt to a crisp black color. The table and drawer were all blown to the wall by the shockwave. The three bodies were disfigured, it was impossible to tell who was who just from their appearance. Jiang Chen didn’t question that if he opened his helmet, he definitely would smell burnt meat.

From the location where their bodies were, Jiang Chen made out

the "bearded man."

Jiang Chen squatted beside him as he suppressed his nauseous stomach and removed the burned EP.

Although the EP was broken, the chip inside was preserved.

"Encrypted?"

Jiang Chen looked at the password dialogue on the screen. Jiang Chen was not frustrated but somewhat happy.

Since there was a password, that must mean some dark secrets were stored inside! He was afraid that the clue would be broken at this point, as to password, Yao Yao should be able to take care of that.

After he had searched the area for a bit longer to ensure he didn’t miss anything, he walked down.

But just as he went down one flight of stairs, he heard a monstrous roar from the back of the mall as well as a terrified scream.

Jiang Chen’s face immediately changed.

That sound-

Chapter 300: The Mother of Death Claw

It was a Death Claw!

He will never forget the deadly fight above Fallout Shelter 005.

Immediately, scattered gunshots followed. Then the shooting stopped and the scream also ceased.

The scream was the knight he sent to guard the back door.

Jiang Chen's face was white, he opened the map, and the green dot at the back of the mall disappeared!

"Fu*k!"

Jiang Chen cursed as he had no time to go through the front door. Stepping on the shattered-glass window, he jumped out of the ten something meter high floor.

The turbine engine's turbulence blew away the snow as the power armor's feet smashed into the ground, leaving two spiderweb-like crack craters.

"Roar-!"

The beastly roar collapsed the snow on top of the roof. Even the steel armor on his power armor was vibrating because of the

boom.

Following the trembling of the ground, something was running in his direction.

"Fu*k, this is definitely not a normal Death Claw."

But then suddenly, a name that even Sun Jiao feared appeared in his head.

Mother of Death Claw.

Jiang Chen's expression grew paler. Not even thinking about his entire left arm that has malfunctioned, even if it didn't malfunction, going head to head against a Death Claw in this terrain would be unwise. Especially if it was the Mother of Death Claw.

Without hesitation, Jiang Chen gritted his teeth and immediately opened the wheels under his feet.

The best strategy was always to leave! If I can't beat it, I can run faster than you.

But before he could move two meters, the empty spin sound came from the bottom of his feet.

"Fu*k!"

Boom!

Followed by his curse, a black shadow pierced the window beside him as it smashed half the wall down.

Jiang Chen used the corner of his eye to catch a glimpse of the shadow, it was the kinetic skeleton of the Fishbone base! But the flesh inside had been eaten clean by the Death Claw.

At the same time, the nearly two-story tall Death Claw fiercely entered the street. Being woken up from its hibernation, the desire for flesh filled every single cell in its body.

The bell-shaped eyes locked onto the pile of metal while it was still roaring - it spotted Jiang Chen in his power armor.

"This thing..." A cold sweat broke out and rolled down from Jiang Chen's forehead.

He thought he was like a one-armed fighter in the Roman Coliseum, and on the other side was a grizzly bear that's been starving for an entire winter.

He didn't choose to run. Without the wheels, he could not outrun the strong Death Claw with only two legs. With his back against this type of monster, he would only die faster.

<The Death Claw's weaknesses are only its spine and its eyes...>

Jiang Chen repeated recollected those words as he locked his eyes on the giant Death Claw and search for an opportunity.

The Mother of Death Claw also locked its sight on Jiang Chen, in the amber colored pupils flashed a bloodthirsty light.

To be honest, it didn't like the prey covered in metal, the sharp edges of the metal may cut its mouth. But it was too hungry, hungry enough to eat an entire Roshan. The previous human was not even enough to be an appetizer!

Jiang Chen's left foot moved back half a step.

The amber pupils immediately contracted, the fear of the prey stimulated the beast.

"Roar-!"

With giant strides, the Mother of Death Claw dashed at Jiang Chen. It was hard to believe its enormous body could be so agile.

But the monsters don't know, if a human wanted to run, they would step back with their right foot first.

Jiang Chen put his strength in his right knee, under both mechanical and muscle strength, his feet cracked the concrete

ground! He leaped at the monster!

With the turbine engine on maximum, Jiang Chen locked its actions as he adjusted the direction of the power armor.

The five sharp claws left a shadow in the air as it flipped off two pieces of armor on the left arm.

Jiang Chen's body shook as he stabilized the balance of the power armor.

The opportunity exchanged by the malfunctioned left arm armor, was used to go behind the Death Claw.

In this intense moment, he took out his remaining sticky explosives from the storage dimension and threw it on the back of the Mother of Death Claw.

Because it was so massive, the Mother of Death Claw could not stop as it smashed forward.

"Go die!' Jiang Chen grimacingly pressed the activation button.

The scorching flame immediately blew the back of the Mother of Death Claw. The giant shockwave blew its massive body to the ground as it rolled a few times before smashing into the shop window.

Looking at the thick smoke, Jiang Chen didn't let his guard down as he raised his right arm without stopping, the revolving trident machineguns focused in on the center of the smoke.

"Roar-!"

The thunderous roar blew open the smoke. The scattered dust created a shockwave.

It smashed its chest but in the amber pupils, the tyrannical violence was only increasing.

It was enraged.

"Fu*k! Still not fu*king died," Jiang Chen pressed the trigger cursing.

Tatata-!

The bullets shredded the smoke, but it didn't manage to destroy the chest of the Death Claw.

That solid horn armor could withstand the revolving machinegun

The Mother of Death Claw covered its eyes with one claw while the other one swung in his direction.

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth to the point they were about to shatter. He maintained fire suppression while opening the turbine engine to move back.

"Spine can't be broken, bullets can't penetrate it, is this even a creature!" Jiang Chen cursed with his eyes flashing.

In the open area, he was afraid to use his interdimensional travel. It was hard to ensure that an atomic grenade wouldn't draw the attention of the nearby survivors. If he were seen, it would be a problem...

But now, was there time to care that much?

Just as Jiang Chen made up his mind to do it and avoid this thing, a deep communication voice entered his channel.

"Tiger 02 has arrived at the battlefield. General, please maintain current movement speed.."

Jiang Chen didn't have time to react when an orange light flew by his arm and penetrated the chest of the Mother of Death Claw.

It was backup sent by Cheng Weiguo.

Jiang Chen was ecstatic.

That guy brought the Tiger parked in the camp!

The four meter high Mother of Death Claw got blown away like a piece of paper as it smashed on the ground. At the same time, the sound of breaking the sound barrier slowly diffused from Jiang Chen's back.

5 kg bomb. It smashed a wheel sized blood hole on its chest. At the same time, it removed all the flesh and exposed its jagged spine.

"Is it over?"

Looking at the thick smoke, Jiang Chen mustered to himself as he felt relieved and stopped the revolving machinegun.

But suddenly, his pupils contracted.

The Mother of Death Claw twitched its limbs. Jiang Chen thought it was its last effort before death, but he shockingly found the body parts were healing.

"Tiger 02, shoot the head of the Death Claw!" Jiang Chen shouted.

"Okay General... Reloading complete... Fire."

Boom-!

Debris mixed with snow blew ten meters up into the air.

He let the concrete debris scratch his armor as Jiang Chen stared at the Mother of Death Claw.

It lost its head. The Mother of Death Claw stopped moving and made no more noise.

Jiang Chen let out a breath of relief. If it was not for the steel armor holding Jiang Chen up, he would likely be sitting on the ground by now.

"Kill confirmed, Mr. General. But please don't do something so dangerous next time. Fighting on the frontline is the duty of the knights." Although the driver was joking, the respect in his tone was not hard to identify.

With just a power armor to be able to go head to head against the Mother of Death Claw. Although Jiang Chen didn't realize it, in the bystander's eyes, he was inhumanly powerful.

"Okay, you will have plenty of chances... Before that, get Cheng Weiguo here to help me, I feel like this power armor is completely busted..."

Table of Contents

- Peerless Martial God
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 201: Requesting Help
  - Chapter 202: The Choice
  - Chapter 203: War Never Changes
  - Chapter 204: The Chaotic War
  - Chapter 205: Becoming the Owner
  - Chapter 206: Military Government Regime
  - Chapter 207: Liuding's Ambassador
  - Chapter 208: A Friendly Signal
  - Chapter 209: Fact
  - Chapter 210: Zhao Chenwu's Choice
  - Chapter 211: The End for now
  - Chapter 212: That Smile
  - Chapter 213: The Ballistic Tingting
  - Chapter 214: The Fourth Dimensional Messenger
  - Chapter 215: The Friendship Across Dimensions
  - Chapter 216: Recent News
  - Chapter 217: Artificial Intelligence + Cars?
  - Chapter 218: The Importance of Brand
  - Chapter 219: The Conspriacy killed in its Cradle
  - Chapter 220: It's all Weibo's fault
  - Chapter 221: The Acheron on the Car
  - Chapter 222: A Dog
  - Chapter 223: Three Slaps
  - Chapter 224: I don't like men
  - Chapter 225: Confusion
  - Chapter 226: I only need two hours
  - Chapter 227: The Mist
  - Chapter 228: The Dinner of the Elites
  - Chapter 229: Peep
  - Chapter 230: Greed
  - Chapter 231: Vote with my feet
  - Chapter 232: The Necessary Deterrence

Chapter 233: The Skin of a Military Tech Company
Chapter 234: Each Parties' Response
Chapter 235: Sunbathe in the Apocalypse
Chapter 236: Meeting Wang Dehai Again
Chapter 237: Will you kindly step into the jar?
Chapter 238: The Bodyguard from the General Staff Department
Chapter 239: The Glorious Return
Chapter 240: Mother
Chapter 241: Jiang Jianguo Eager For Grand Children
Chapter 242: Just tens of millions
Chapter 243: Detectaphone
Chapter 244: If people don't showoff, what's difference compared to a salted fish?
Chapter 245: The Perfect Coincedence
Chapter 246: What's your consideration?
Chapter 247: Undercurrent
Chapter 248: The Greeting from Afar
Chapter 249: Sorry, I'm not your subordinate
Chapter 250: Betrayal
Chapter 251: A Glean Hope
Chapter 252: Who said I will go with you?
Chapter 253: The Slaughter Armor
Chapter 254: Sniping
Chapter 255: That Bullet
Chapter 256: Coldblooded
Chapter 257: CPR
Chapter 258: Eternal Loyalty
Chapter 259: The Reaction across the Pacific
Chapter 260: Escaping the Cage
Chapter 261: The Interference from an Unknown Channel
Chapter 262: A Temporary Return
Chapter 263: Sixth Street Nuclear Nonproliferation
Chapter 264: Communication with the Past
Chapter 265: Mr. Chen
Chapter 266: Future International
Chapter 267: The Angry Wang Dehai
Chapter 268: New Zealand Trip
Chapter 269: Meeting the Oppositions
Chapter 270: Military Resistance
Chapter 271: The Millionaire in the Slum

Chapter 272: The Prepartion to the Ocean Venture
Chapter 273: The Renting Fiascal
Chapter 274: The Signal from under the Ocean
Chapter 275: K1 Kinetic Skeleton Amphibious
Chapter 276: Below the Ocean
Chapter 277: U-235
Chapter 278: The Secret of World War Two
Chapter 279: The Golden Apple
Chapter 280: Whoever begs is a puppy
Chapter 281: Fuse
Chapter 282: We are an Army
Chapter 283: Celestial Trade
Chapter 284: New Year
Chapter 285: An Unexpected Guest
Chapter 286: We need your help
Chapter 287: Nuclear Fusion Core
Chapter 288: Cannibals and Blue Skins
Chapter 289: Burden of Survival
Chapter 290: The Choice
Chapter 291: The History of Fallout Shelter 071
Chapter 292: Determination
Chapter 293: Safe Distance
Chapter 294: Camp 027
Chapter 295: The not Addictive Jet
Chapter 296: Like Mall
Chapter 297: How could it be this guy?
Chapter 298: Atomic Grenade
Chapter 299: A Digitalized Human? A Robot?
Chapter 300: The Mother of Death Claw